





# GOD OF SLAUGHTER

BOOK 08

*Ni Cang Tian*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# God Of Slaughter

(杀神)

by

Ni Cang Tian

(逆苍天)

# Synopsis

---

Growing up parentless, Shi Yan, who was left with a large amount of inheritance money, bore a general disinterest in life.

The only times he felt alive was when adrenaline coursed thorough his veins. He quickly found that extreme sports, bungyjumping, cave diving & skydiving, gave him the biggest kicks. The bigger the adrenaline kick, the closer he was to death, the more alive he felt.

Waking up in a pile of dead bodies in an unknown land, after a diving adventure had ended disastrously, he quickly realizes the body he now possessed was not his own.

Follow Shi Yan as he explores this new world where danger lurks around every corner, and death is only a breath away; a world in which Shi Yan could not feel any more alive.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Sigma @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 701: Heaven flames' fierce battle

---

In the cold darkness where Shi Yan couldn't see his own fingers, he floated lonely while his nerves were tense. He didn't dare to relax for even a fraction of a second.

Flows of his Soul Consciousness were like the pure cotton threads releasing from his Sea of Consciousness. They were like invisible beams, scattering around to perceive the situation just like his senses. This place was cold and quiet. He found no energy waves of living beings.

Even though he hadn't approached the energy storm ahead of him, he was still cautious. Energy surged through his entire body, creating layers of thick energy armor, enveloping him completely.

The energy waves transmitted in front of him were extremely furious. They were like countless exploding, twisted energy halo. Dangers were everywhere, without a specific rule. There was no way to leave this place safely.

The meteorolite he had arrived on first was out of his sight at this moment. Using naked eyes, he couldn't find any of its traces.

Without gravity, his speed wasn't held back. It was much faster than when he was in the Grace Mainland. His body moved agilely like the willow catkin. He felt like some powers were supporting him at this moment.

A wisp of eerie green light appeared behind him, and energy fluctuations of living beings became clearer.

It was the creature of the Dark Clan, the one that had absorbed the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame. He finally came.

The other didn't hurry to approach Shi Yan, as he was bobbing and swaying one thousand meters behind Shi Yan. It seemed the dim halo wanted to wait and see Shi Yan storming into the energy storm first, and then decide what he should do next.

Shi Yan sneered in his head. He didn't care about the other, releasing a flow of Soul Consciousness to watch for any activities of Yin Spirit, as if it were his eyes. If the other acted strangely, he would attack immediately.

As the situation of this place was unclear, protecting himself from being ambushed was the top priority.

Shi Yan understood this rule well.

Although he didn't accelerate to the fastest speed, he soon approached an energy storm. Right at this moment, he halted.

As if he had a tacit understanding, Yin Spirit still didn't catch up with him, maintaining a distance of one thousand meters away from him, as if he had a precise ruler with him.

While Shi Yan was discreetly observing his back, he was condensing his Soul Consciousness. Ten flows of Soul Consciousness twisted with each other to form a big bunch, maintaining the deep connection with his God Soul. It then slowly entered the energy storm area.

BANG!

Fierce tremors were transmitted to him through his Soul Consciousness. The beam of Soul Consciousness he had released was pulled and torn, making his God Soul tremble for a while, as his Sea of Consciousness surged abruptly.

Shi Yan urged more Soul Consciousness from his Sea of Consciousness, pouring into the biggest beam to save it from being pulled into the energy storm.

His God Soul felt a pain as if he had many needles pricking him at the same time. His energy became a little bit disordered.

From one thousand meters behind him, the Yin Spirit emitted a deep green halo. He trembled, which showed that he had its soul energy fluctuating.

Shi Yan was sensitive enough to detect that. He shuddered inside, and didn't think much as he hastened to pull his flow of Soul Consciousness back. He wanted to change the power to deal with the attack from behind.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Dark green shadows were standing out in the dark. They were the Yin spirits from the bottom of the sea in the Seven-layered Underworld, which were fostered by the Dark Sea and the Dark Qi. They were evil and bloodthirsty, storming towards him with their blade-like sharp fighting will.

Shi Yan turned his body abruptly. A flow of Soul Consciousness he hadn't retreated yet started to deal with the attack of the Yin spirits.

A faint halo sparkled on the Storage Ring as the Soul Gathering Pearl appeared quietly in the dark. This bead was dark green, which helped it mingle well with the darkness, and it was hard to detect its location.

As those Yin spirits had just been released, they hadn't reached the fastest speed yet. The Soul Gathering Pearl could catch them, dragging them towards it with some invisible forces.

The Yin spirits cried and roared. However, their sounds didn't echo in this space. An immense blue flame emerged from the dim halo, releasing magical soul fluctuations that flew towards the Yin spirits.

The immense blue flame had the ability to control Yin spirits and wandering ghosts. It was the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, one of the heaven flames.

His power poured into the Yin spirits, giving them the tremendous energy to get rid of the Soul Gathering Pearl's entanglement. They could cut off the bind immediately.

The stagnant speed of the Yin spirits suddenly accelerated. They



cried and screamed furiously, attacking Shi Yan. Their blade-like sharp will had intruded Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness first.

His seething Sea of Consciousness seemed to be fragmented by this kind of will. For the time being, Shi Yan's power Upanishads seemed to be broken apart, and it was hard to gather them again.

The energy fluctuation of the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame on the heaven flames' altar section became clearer. The white jade flame suddenly engulfed the entire Sea of Consciousness, sweeping away the Yin spirit's will.

Shi Yan was struck. As the soul bind was lifted up, he got the control of his Sea of Consciousness again.

Too bad, it was too late!

Flows of Yin spirits dashed toward Shi Yan like big columns at fast speed, furiously banging into his chest. This heavy attack had blown him backward.

Shi Yan discolored as he suddenly realized that he was wrong.

That dim halo didn't want to bombard him, but to push him into the energy storm behind.

It was obvious that the dim halo could sense the dangers inside that area. He also knew that Shi Yan had some support as he dared to volunteer. He didn't want to fight with Shi Yan out there, but actually use the perilous conditions inside the energy storm to wear out Shi Yan.

Although Shi Yan knew his intention, he couldn't control his body during the fight, flinging backward and falling directly into one of the energy storms.

Countless strange and distorted energies that he couldn't see enveloped him like a meat grinder. Under such fierce energies, layers of energy armors on Shi Yan's body sparked, as if someone was using many knives to slash him.

Pain engulfed him, while he could only defend with his best under such furious attacks.

His strong flow of Soul Consciousness that hadn't retreated yet from this energy storm returned to Shi Yan's body under the control of his God Soul, disappearing into his Sea of Consciousness.

He didn't dare to urge his Soul Consciousness one more time, so he had to mobilize the other powers in his body to protect his body and keep his mind safe and sound, to not make any mistakes.

If his divine abilities were confined, his body's movement would be struggling. At that moment, even lifting his arms or legs would consume a lot more energy than usual.

It was lucky that he had the tremendous powers in his body. Swaying in the powerful energy storm, he adjusted his body, giving up the idea of moving forward. He checked his powers and found that the amount of energy consumed was still acceptable.

He couldn't see the dim halo or sense its exact location. He didn't know whether the other wanted to attack him or not.

Shi Yan didn't hasten. He pulled himself together and then sensed things inside the energy storm. Eventually, he found that even though the chaotic, twisted energy in this area was harsh, it wasn't as hazardous as he had thought.

He still could stand it.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The fire sparked in front of him, while a dim halo appeared in the energy storm.

The twisted, disordered energy here seemed to not affect him. Countless Yin spirits and ghosts constituting his dim halo didn't get agitated, as if they weren't affected a bit.

"Muahaha... I'm immune! Kid, getting into this storm, let's see

what countermeasures you have," The dim halo sent its soul fluctuation. This guy seemed to be very confident. "Well, I'm not affected, but you are enduring the attacks from the energy storm every second. In this place, you will be drained. Be obedient and hand out the heaven flames for me to eat, and I'll let you go. How does it sound?"

"Alright," Shi Yan grinned in his mind, sending his soul fluctuation.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame appeared from the altar in his Sea of Consciousness. The white jade flame was like the Death which was summoning souls, releasing an energy that could burn all kinds of souls.

Dozens of Yin spirits were moving towards Shi Yan quietly. However, when they saw the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, they desperately wanted to avoid it, as if they had seen a ferocious ghost.

A fire circle expanded from the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame at the speed that was faster than the retreat speed of the Yin spirits.

When the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame touched them, the Yin spirits 'cracked,' turning into light spots of pure energy, scattering in the energy storm and disappearing shortly.

"It's the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame!" The dim halo was excited, and its soul fluctuation shot out everywhere. "It's the best for me!"

The immense blue flame gradually emerged from the dim halo. A faint soul stayed in the center of the flame, which had a beam of the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame's feeble soul on its forehead. This was the mark representing that he had absorbed the heaven flame.

The flame that stormed out from the dim halo was urged by the faint soul inside the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame. It was a member of the

Dark Clan, who could fuse completely with heaven flame to promote the flame power to the acme. Compared to the co-existing situation of Shi Yan and his heaven flames, this guy was more dangerous!

The God Soul of that Dark Clan's member also had three tiers, including the Sea of Consciousness, the particular Dark River of the Dark Clan, and the God Soul topping them all.

This Dark Clan's member was apparently a high-realm warrior. As he had the soul sacrificial altar, he had reached the True God Realm, or even higher.

The God Soul sat neatly above the sacrificial altar, releasing a strong surging soul energy. Blue flames meandered like spiritual snakes, covering many Yin spirits and wandering ghosts.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame transmitted a soul-destructive soul energy, while the white-jade flames enveloped Shi Yan. However, there were so many Yin Spirits and ghosts on the blue flames that the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame couldn't burn them all shortly.

Shi Yan was in danger!

# Chapter 702: God Body?

---

Many Yin spirits and ghosts were constituting the spiritual snakes which carried the pure heaven flame power of the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame. Those snakes flew swiftly and reached to Shi Yan in just a blink.

In just a short amount of time, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame's white jade flame had burned down many Yin spirits and wandering ghosts. However, there were too many of them, so the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame couldn't burn them all instantly.

The creature of the Dark Clan with its Yin Spirit Ghost Flame was also hurried, flying behind the spiritual snakes and dashing towards Shi Yan.

At this critical moment, Shi Yan was held deep in the energy storm, where a significant consumption of energy was required to protect his body. He was struggling hard, revealing weaknesses here and there.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The spiritual snakes had crossed the defense of the white jade flames. Shortly, they covered him with many layers.

Flows of Yin Spirit Ghost Flame with the Yin spirits attached to his body. The Immense blue flame tried to control his soul, which would prevent him from using his defending techniques.

BOOM!

Fierce tremor transmitted from Shi Yan's God Soul, which swayed on the altar, as if some invisible forces were trying to drag it out of the altar and his body.

The creature of the Dark Clan was strangely happy. It continually sent him its soul fluctuations. "Kid, you're seeking death yourself. Don't blame me for making both your soul and body perish."

"Get out!"

Shi Yan tried to press down the powerful vibration of his God Soul. His thought flickered to connect to the heaven flame's soul sacrificial altar.

The Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Corpse Vanishing Flame flew out from the altar after they had received his order. The three heaven flames created a fire sea, covering Shi Yan entirely.

An icy cold aura froze the blue flame on his body instantly. Right after that, the Earth Flame and the Corpse Vanishing Flame started to attack the spiritual snakes furiously. These two flames were using their intimidating energy to hit the snakes, making sparks scatter everywhere.

In the beginning, the Corpse Vanishing Flame hadn't wanted to cooperate with Shi Yan. After it had been relocated to the sacrificial altar and received good benefits from him, the flame then became milder and accepted him.

At this moment, just like the Ice Cold Flame and the Earth Flame, it had considered the heaven flame altar in Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness its home, where it could cultivate and thrive.

At this moment, as someone wanted to destroy his root, the flame, of course, wouldn't tolerate it. It used all of its powers to counter the enemy, without concealing anything.

Among the heaven flames, the Corpse Vanishing Flame was a peculiar one, as it had an enormous Death aura. Anyway, it had the same function as the power of Death and Life that Shi Yan had comprehended.

The lethality of the flame's aura was formidable for the snakes created by the Yin spirits and wandering ghosts.

Under the Corpse Vanishing Flame's energy attack, the Yin spirits and ghosts became hazy, as if their minds were occupied by

some unknown, evil forces. They all were controlled, and made to halt in the void dully, as if they had been attacked by the Body Fixing Technique. They no longer released the soul energy attacks.

The Earth Flame burned all the frozen souls. Under its scorching temperature, those Yin spirits and ghosts didn't resist. They were melted while screaming, but no sounds were heard.

All Yin spirits and ghosts were afraid of the burning heat like the Earth Flame's power, which was their nemesis. Shortly, the Yin spirits force was damaged badly, and their soul energy weakened drastically.

Although all of them were heaven flames, the blue Yin Spirit Ghost Flame was afraid of high temperature. It was struggling under the burning power of the Earth Flame, thus couldn't increase the power to control those souls.

Shortly, Shi Yan's pressure was lifted, and his trembling God Soul was calmed down for a moment.

"You have more than one heaven flames!" The Dark Clan's creature shouted. It was both excited and nervous. "Good! Excellent! I'm gonna strike jackpot this time. After taking in those heaven flames, I can condense a body to swagger even in the foreign land!"

The three-tiered sacrificial altar of the Dark Clan's suddenly shook. Energy leaves fell from the altar, creating a leaf sea that snatched over Shi Yan. Each leaf had the power seal of the Dark Clan.

Shi Yan could see the lines on the surface of those leaves. The powers that the sage of the Dark Clan had comprehended were urged, making his three-tiered sacrificial altar supernaturally dangerous.

When the leaf sea covered Shi Yan, the power Upanishads in his altar became so chaotic that he couldn't mobilize the power to

even defend. All forces in his body started to disorder.

Inside the energy storm, Shi Yan had to gather his energy in every second to create the defense to keep himself safe from the attack of the energy storm.

At this moment, as the powers of his body were all chaotic, he didn't have any effective method to resist the invasion of the energy storm. The energy armors around his body scattered.

His body was exposed in the center of the energy storm. The tremendous devouring force surged furiously, entering his body and destroying his blood and flesh.

Shi Yan's Petrification Martial Spirit had been activated for a long time. At that moment, his flesh and blood turned golden. Bones of his entire body echoed cracking sounds while energy seethed furiously in every muscle fiber of his.

Under the skin-tearing power of the energy storm, Shi Yan felt pain as if countless worms were nibbling his body. Pain engulfed both his body and mind.

However, even if he didn't have the energy protection, the bursting energy in his body could be considered supernatural. So, even though he felt an intense pain, his body stayed unharmed, maintaining a stone-rigid fleshy defense.

People always tended to underestimate his soul and robust body!

This body had experienced thousands of times of quenching with the Petrification Martial Spirit and the Immortal Martial Spirit. After taking in the Golden Marrow, he was much more durable than the other warriors in the same realm. He was much beyond people's imagination.

Although he didn't have the energy armors anymore, he was still safe. And, his body seemed to be enduring another time of forging and polishing in the terrifying cutting power of the energy storm, as numerous light spots sparked from him.



It was like his body was under the process of being forged by so many hammers, which made it stronger and more vigorous.

Shi Yan had a large amount of energy stored in his bones, internal organs, and tendons. After this struggling battle, many containers were broken, making energy overflow into his blood and flesh. His body became almost unbreakable.

Gradually, Shi Yan's body seemed to adapt to the energy storm, as he didn't need to increase the energy to protect his body. He suspended in the storm while many beams of broken light were moving around him. He now looked like an illuminating object emitting a dazzling light.

"God Body! How could it be?" The creature of the Dark Clan had its soul tremble, as if someone had punched it. He felt a little bit distressed.

To warriors who reached the King God Realm, at the moment they broke through, they would take in a formidable amount of heaven and earth energy to refine their bodies one more time. After that process, they would have a God Body that could move freely in the outer space, and be immune to most of the chaotic powers of the place.

The reason why Zenith of the Ghost Mark Clan and this creature of the Dark Clan didn't dare to escape the Grace Mainland was that they hadn't obtained the God Body, so they had to be afraid of the energy in outer space.

Only condensing the body successfully would help them escape the Grace Mainland safely. Yin Spirit wanted to take the heaven flame to use its power to quench his body. After that, he could enter the galaxy easily.

Seeing Shi Yan expose his body without any energy to protect it, yet not being afraid of the energy storm, the Dark Clan's creature gawked, screaming instinctively.

Normally, even the True God Realm warriors would have their bodies worn out in the energy storm of outer space, being scattered in this foreign land.

He thought that if he could smash the protection around Shi Yan's body, Shi Yan would be crushed shortly. At that moment, his God Soul and sacrificial altar would be exposed, which would make it easy to kill him.

He clearly had a wrong assumption about Shi Yan's tenacious body.

In the energy storm, Shi Yan adapted quickly. Without using any bit of his energy, his body sparked in the area, as he was safe and sound in the energy storm.

As he didn't need to pay attention to protecting his body, Shi Yan was freed all of a sudden. He grinned, sending his soul fluctuation. "Thank you. Without you, I would never know my body had been that tenacious. I'm free now, so we can play well buddy."

Shi Yan touched his chest. Starlight bloomed like a shower of meteorites from the sky. It condensed into many beams, darting towards the three-tiered altar of the Dark Clan's creature.

At the same time, Shi Yan released the Death Intent Domain, condensing the Death and Life Seal and the intent domain that could destroy all creatures, covering the three-tiered altar.

The creature on the altar felt annoyed, as if he had swallowed many flies. He got the feeling of spending too much for gaining nothing.

Under Shi Yan's wave of attacks, he had to use the power Upanishads that he hadn't comprehended thoroughly yet. He used the soul energy to condense many Dark God Spears, Underworld Hand Seals, the surging Dark Sea, etc.

His soul energy was drained quickly, making his three-tiered altar shrink.

This was the sign of significant loss of his soul energy.

Different from Shi Yan, this creature didn't have a body, so it didn't have any energy from the body to use. While countering its opponent, it had to use the soul energy which had been accumulated over so many years.

He initially wanted to use the flame to refine his body, but he couldn't use it today. Also, it revealed his biggest weakness – not having a body!

"Come here! Come here! Come here please!"

Shi Yan let out a crazy laughter as he was urging all powers in his body. He hovered firmly in the energy storm, releasing the power of Stars, Death and Life to neutralize the energy that the other had condensed using his soul.

"Well, you want my heaven flames, right? I'm here, waiting for you!" Shi Yan's soul energy became stronger. "You want my heaven flames? I also want yours! Well, I want to see who will absorb whom!"

# Chapter 703: Devouring Original Essence

---

The creature of the Dark Clan was struggling hard under Shi Yan's counterattack. It wanted to dodge, but the other power Upanishads had distracted it. As a result, it couldn't react timely.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Corpse Vanishing Flame had burned up so many flames of the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, along with the Yin spirits and the ghosts it had released. This prevented Yin Spirit from using the power of the heaven flame. He could only consume his soul energy to face Shi Yan's fierce wave of attacks.

"Space Cutting Blades!"

Shi Yan shouted, urging space power. He touched his forehead, and the power of space in the altar was shot out, combining with the power of his body.

Space Upanishad seemed to control his Essence Qi, giving it a marvelous resonance with the Space Upanishad. A giant blade appeared above the soul altar of that Dark Clan's creature.

Crack!

The Space Cutting Blade slashed down, dividing the altar into two parts. It also halved the soul of the Dark Clan's creature.

He tried his best to gather his soul and recover the sacrificial altar with all his efforts. But the Soul Gathering Pearl seized the chance and dashed forward, trying to snatch its soul.

Unfortunately, it was unknown why the Soul Gathering Pearl couldn't affect the God Soul of that creature. It just couldn't devour the God Soul.

Shi Yan didn't know that the Soul Gathering Pearl was the beast crystal of the Soul Devouring Beast, which was just a level 9 beast. At most, it could only swallow the souls of creatures at the same level. In other words, the bead could only take the souls of

creatures at True God Realm.

If it were beyond this level, the Soul Gathering Pearl couldn't do anything.

That creature's soul seemed to have reached the King God Realm. Thus, only the Soul Gathering Pearl of a level 10 Soul Devouring beast could capture it.

Shi Yan wasn't hurried even though he saw that the bead was ineffective. He increased space power to create a bigger Space Cutting Blade. Then, he slashed the creature's soul many times to prevent him from gathering his soul again.

Shortly, a surging, furious wave overflowed from his glabella.

A special mark glowed on his forehead, releasing a strange energy fluctuation.

That fluctuation released waves of a lively mark, which disappeared from his forehead and reappeared on the altar of the Inner World Five Devils and his Immortal Demon Blood.

BOOM!

Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness was shaken rumblingly. At that moment, his consciousness was blurry. His soul sacrificial altar flew out from his Sea of Consciousness, halting in front of him.

He was startled. This terrifying event frightened him as he noticed a mark inside the altar, which was releasing strong vibrations, as if it were trying to create something.

It seemed to be an extremely intimidating power Upanishad.

The mark on his forehead had disappeared and reappeared on the altar, changing it continually. The foundation of this altar, which had been generated from his Soul Consciousness and the energy the Inner World Five Devils had absorbed from the ruins of the seven Demogorgon statues, was being reconstructed magically.

In just a blink, the connection between Shi Yan and the Five

Devils was cut off. The Five Devils seemed to be smashed down and congregated into the mark. This mark was having a terrific transformation. It twisted, creating a black hole that was diffusing a destructive, extremely evil aura.

Swoosh!

The Soul Gathering Pearl flew out, falling into that black hole.

Inside the black hole, Shi Yan could see the eccentric energy moving, which terrified him, making him uneasy while watching this transformation.

Vaguely, he found that he had some connection with the black hole, as he could use the God Soul to control it. However, when he tried to do that, he figured out that he couldn't.

Shortly, the Soul Gathering Pearl was smashed. The beast crystal of the bizarre Soul Devouring Beast turned into numerous light spots, disappearing into the black hole.

The black hole twisted, releasing an evil and strange, massive suction force.

At that moment, all energies in the center of the energy storm were affected. Countless Yin spirits and wandering ghosts were drawn from the dim halo, disappearing into the black hole.

Even the altar that the Dark Clan's creature had spent so many years to build was affected. No matter how hard it tried, it couldn't get rid of the suction force, being drawn into the black hole.

After several breaths, the Dark Clan's creature and the soul sacrificial were sucked up, including numerous Yin spirits and ghosts. Nothing remained.

As the intense blue flame was bound tightly by the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the Earth Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, it couldn't move, floating in front of Shi Yan.

The Dark Clan's creature had tried everything it could use to take

Shi Yan's heaven flames. However, it ended up being dragged into the black hole, which had melted the Inner World Five Devils and the Soul Gathering Pearl. This black hole was created by the power from the mark.

Shi Yan was petrified.

He didn't know what was happening. He only knew that his enemy had disappeared completely.

Shi Yan was dumbstruck, looking at the black hole there. He vaguely sensed that the black hole also had many massive revolving vortexes, just like in his acupuncture points, to refine some energy.

Shi Yan knew that the energy the black hole was refining came from the creature of the Dark Clan.

The black hole hovered in front of him and then disappeared, reappearing in his Sea of Consciousness, staying where the soul sacrificial altar used to be.

A magical power Upanishad was slowly generated from that black hole. Shi Yan used his God Soul to sense, then changed his visage.

That power Upanishad was called 'Devouring Original Essence.' It could devour all kinds of energies. It was also the vilest, cruelest Seal of Upanishad, whose nature was to destroy, demolish, and break any balance.

This power Upanishad was the nature of the black hole, the core of the black hole which was generated by the combination of the Inner World Five Devils, the Soul Gathering Pearl, and the mark on his forehead. It was linked to Shi Yan's soul directly.

Shi Yan was struck hard. He tried to calm down to perceive the essence of that power Upanishad. He sent his soul to the black hole, watching countless revolving vortexes as he was witnessing the derivative of the most eccentric, vilest power in the universe.

Shi Yan's mind and God Soul were clear as he was taking in the knowledge and comprehensions of this new power. He wanted to get a good grasp of its essence, and how energy was mobilized while using this power.

Losing its master, the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame calmed down, and didn't have any reaction.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame, and the Corpse Vanishing Flame became the most talented and persuasive speakers, as they were releasing their soul fluctuation to communicate with the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame.

The immense blue flame didn't send out any energy fluctuation, as if it were listening to the other flames.

After a while, the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame seemed to be convinced. It turned into the original form, getting into Shi Yan's head through his eyes, together with the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, the Earth Flame and the Corpse Vanishing Flame.

The Yin Spirit Ghost Flame then stayed together with the other four heaven flames on the heaven flame altar. It shone calmly, slowly fusing with the heaven flame altar. It then rooted, considering the heaven flame its new base to thrive.

The Yin Spirit Ghost Flame really liked its new situation.

When it was forced to fuse with that creature of the Dark Clan, its liberty was snatched. The flame had to stay in the other's soul under the other's control.

This wasn't fair at all. The flame's will, power, and soul were taken, so it had no means to resist or rebel.

Whenever that creature of the Dark Clan fought with the others, he always used the flame's power first. The flame was enslaved, letting its master take in all it had.

Of course, the flame didn't like it. It used to plan for an escape.



However, once it was fused, the flame's soul and consciousness were confined. After several attempts, it got hurt badly and hadn't restored fully yet.

The offer it had at this moment was totally different. Staying in Shi Yan's soul sacrificial altar meant it was equal to Shi Yan. Also, it could take Shi Yan's blood, soul energy, and Soul Consciousness to nurture itself. And, it could thrive to evolve later on.

Only when Shi Yan was in danger would he use the flame's power. Anyway, Shi Yan wouldn't use all of its power to resist the enemies. It would only happen in some particular cases. Only when Shi Yan needed it the most would he use the flame's power.

This was a win-win solution, which benefited both sides. It wasn't like the previous time when it was in a passive situation, constantly consuming energy alone.

Of course, the current situation was what the flame wanted.

Thus, under the enticement of the other four heaven flames, the unowned Yin Spirit Ghost Flame had proactively fused with Shi Yan's heaven flame altar, which would be its new home. The flame felt contented and secure.

Shi Yan was surprised that the four heaven flames had tried to draw more support for him. He didn't need to persuade the new flame, and everything went smoothly. The Yin Spirit Ghost Flame had become a new power in his heaven flame altar.

Shi Yan was delighted with this result, thinking that it was worth his good treats for the four heaven flames. It was easier if the four heaven flames helped him to convince their kind.

The heaven flames calmed down, but their altar had expanded. Energy moving inside it was obviously more vigorous, which benefited him a lot. His God Soul seemed to sublimate, becoming denser and cleaner, with a new power.

However, the black hole was still refining energy next to the

heaven flame altar. Countless vortexes were still revolving crazily with the mysteries of the Devouring Original Essence. This made him both scared and happy.

Gradually, a magical wave of energy started to diffuse from the center of the vortexes in the black hole. Those waves had accelerated the devouring speed of the black hole, then overflowed to Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, the altar of heaven flames, and the altar of Seals of Upanishad.

His Sea of Consciousness expanded continually. Flows of Soul Consciousness under that energy's urge had generated more pure flows, which increased the area of the Sea of Consciousness. Shi Yan now had more Soul Consciousness to use.

The five heaven flames were dancing with the support of that energy, as if they were boosted. Each of them looked delighted and excited.

The altar of the Seal of Upanishad created when Shi Yan had broken through the True God Realm also gained benefits. The three powers were purified, making Shi Yan understand them to a whole new level.

# Chapter 704: The road of the vanguard

---

Shi Yan had a marvelous change in his head. Seeing the new subtle power Upanishad, Shi Yan became more excited.

Shi Yan found that newly formed black hole was similar to his mysterious martial spirit, as it could devour energy, filter it, and provide him many benefits. This eccentric and evil ability could make him unlimitedly strong, and increase his cultivation speed tremendously

Shi Yan suddenly felt that the fundamental power Upanishad, as well as the core of the Blood Vein Ring and the mark on his forehead were a mystery.

The Sea of Consciousness, the Seals of Upanishad altar, and the heaven altar had been benefited from the energy of the black hole, which helped them thrive and change.

Shi Yan had concentrated on the black hole to perceive the essence of the Devouring Original Essence to comprehend the vilest power in this entire universe.

He could vaguely feel that it was the biggest opportunity that perhaps could change his entire life.

...

On the meteorolite...

Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Kante, Corpse Chief, and Zenith were waiting in silence.

Those people were the peak existences in the Grace Mainland. However, after they got to this foreign land, they found dangers hiding everywhere. Even if they didn't move, it would still cost their energy.

They all had a feeling of having a big failure, as they thought that they had made a wrong move getting here this time. They

shouldn't have been that reckless.

"How long it has been?" Jie Ji was bored as he thundered, "Stupid Shi Yan, why did he need to be that stimulated? That Dark Clan's guy isn't a good guy. He wanted to aim at him. Harrumph... Shi Yan shouldn't brag about himself. That Dark Clan's guy is about to kill him!"

Bao Ao had a headache. "It's been so long. If that guy were quick enough, he would have succeeded already. Anyway, I always feel that Shi Yan must have some support if he's that confident. Perhaps he could win, who knows."

Both of them understood that Shi Yan and that Dark Clan's creature should have had a battle already.

They both had heaven flames, the magical flames of the Grace Mainland. Due to the special feature of those heaven flames, it was destiny for Shi Yan and that Dark Clan's guy to combat to gain greater power.

However, Shi Yan was on the disadvantaged side. At least, from what they could observe, Shi Yan wasn't as strong as the other. He would be knocked down soon.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji could see that before the Dark Clan's creature had his body destroyed, he should have had a really high realm. Otherwise, with only the Yin spirits and the wandering ghosts, he would never have such confidence.

Kante, Corpse Chief, and Zenith in the Yin Written Charm Scripture didn't make any strange moves, as if they had predicted Shi Yan's pathetic results.

In their thoughts, the one who could return from the energy storm must be the Yin Spirit.

As he only had the soul form, he could be immune to most of the energy attacks in this space. Moreover, his realm was higher. In the energy storm, killing Shi Yan was as easy as flipping his hand.

They didn't say anything because they were afraid that Bao Ao and Jie Ji could get crazy and attack them. That was why they didn't want to provoke the others and cause a dispute at this moment.

This group of people was waiting in silence for an obvious result with different thoughts.

Time continued to fly. The energy they had was draining fast. After each second, their energy was drained a little bit.

There was no sun, moon, or stars in this place, which made it hard to tell the time. They could only be waiting begrudgingly.

Long, long afterward...

A beam of light flashed in the icy cold darkness in front of them, which carried a faint streak of Yin spirit's energy.

Kante cracked an eccentric smile as he said indifferently. "Yin Spirit's back. I hope he found something and could give us good news."

Corpse Chief and Zenith felt comfortable as they had seen the result eventually.

In their eyes, if Shi Yan hadn't started it first, they wouldn't have come here. Such a big mistake! In this harsh situation, these people didn't have any good impression of Shi Yan. They were so hostile that they wanted to see Shi Yan die as soon as possible.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji changed their countenance.

They also sensed the Yin spirit's energy from that beam of light.

Gradually, that light became clearer. After a flash, they saw a muscular body.

Kante and Corpse Chief gawked, not believing in their own eyes, their faces astounded. Zenith in the Yin Written Charm Scripture was terrified, sending his cold voice. "F\*ck it! This is f\*cking bad!"

Bao Ao and Jie Ji were struck. They couldn't press down their

cheerily crazy laughter. Even Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si of the Demon Clan had put on an arrogant visage as they suddenly felt a cheerful feeling.

That person had a body, so he must be Shi Yan! Not only that, he had the Yin spirit's aura on his body – he did it on purpose.

Shi Yan descended on the meteorolite, standing next to Bao Ao and Jie Ji. He threw a glance at Kanta and Corpse Chief, then shifted his eyes to the Yin Written Charm Scripture. Suddenly, he said. "You guys seem to be quite surprised?"

Kante and Corpse Chief grimaced. The Yin Written Charm Scripture shuddered as they heard Zenith's voice again. "Where's Yin Spirit?"

Shrugging his shoulder, Shi Yan put on a dull countenance, shaking his head. "Ghost knows. I didn't see him in the energy storm. Maybe... the energy of outer space has crushed him into ashes? Haha, the energy storm has a special energy. Different kinds of energy often explode chaotically. Well, since he doesn't have a body, he could be harmed."

Kante, Corpse Chief, and Zenith kept silent.

They understood that Shi Yan was babbling to deceive them. He had the Yin spirit's aura on his body, so it was impossible that he hadn't met the other.

What Shi Yan meant was obviously the announcement of his triumph! He won! The Yin spirit's aura on his body was the explicit evidence!

The fact that he could come back alive had proven it. He released the Yin spirit's aura just to make it clear to Kante, Corpse Chief, and Zenith. They could see clearly that he had taken something from the other.

"Kid, you're awesome!" Jie Ji patted his shoulder excitedly, laughing out loud. "So excellent! Haha, with our Demon Clan

having a genius like you, I can already see the prosperous future of our clan already!"

Shi Yan smiled brightly, then nodded and replied seriously. "I think so." Well, he wasn't humble at all.

Kante, Corpse Chief, and Zenith were so indignant they wanted to vomit blood. They felt annoyed, as they knew they were tricked.

However, at this moment, they didn't say anything bad or shout to ask for a battle with Shi Yan.

The fact that Shi Yan could kill Yin Spirit and take his heaven flame was enough to prove the powers he had. They shouldn't underestimate him.

Kante, Corpse Chief, and Zenith weren't sure that they could defeat that mysterious creature of the Dark Clan in the energy storm, let alone kill him.

Shi Yan's had proven that his competence was no less than theirs.

As Yin Spirit was gone, they only had three on their side, while the Demon Clan had Shi Yan, Bao Ao, Jie Ji, and two warriors at the Second Sky of True God Realm. This force was apparently enough to fight face to face with them.

The situation was changing in silence, making the three anxious. They felt it was getting worse after every second.

"How is the situation over there?" Kante stayed quiet for a while and then asked Shi Yan.

"The energy storm's really strong and perilous. Once you get in there, it will bind and twist your body. I think you guys can cross it, but you have to consume more energy anyway." Shi Yan smiled, but he didn't continue to tease them. "I think we have no choice. We have to get there. Waiting here isn't different from waiting for death."

Pausing for a while, he looked at Bao Ao and Jie Ji. "Shall we go now?"

Bao Ao and Jie Ji, of course, trusted him. They nodded immediately after he asked.

"Alright, then we go first. About them... just let them choose," Shi Yan smiled, jumping off the meteorolite where he had just landed not long ago.

Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Bo Ruo, and Gu Da Si didn't hesitate a bit, following him and heading towards the center of an energy storm.

"What do you think?" Zenith asked Kante and Corpse Chief.

The other two hesitated for a while. They all knew that they had no solution as they gazed at the energy storm not far from them.

"Be careful. We shouldn't provoke that kid. I can see he... isn't afraid at all. When we get into the energy storm, don't quarrel with him. Don't give him an opportunity to ambush us," Zenith pondered for a while before giving a reluctant suggestion. Actually, he felt fear fill up his heart.

He couldn't deny that he had underestimated Shi Yan's competence. As he finally got it now, he had to adjust his direction one more time.

Kante and Corpse Chief weren't stupid, and they both agreed. The three of them then prepared for a while and followed Bao Ao's group, jumping into the icy cold darkness.

When the three of them crossed the safe area to reach the energy storm, they could see Shi Yan with so many light spots twirling around him. He was safe, and hadn't slowed down his speed at all.

Quite the contrary, Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Bo Ruo, and Gu Da Si, the four top experts of the Demon Clan, were struggling in the energy storm.

At first glance, the other three felt their soul struck miserably, as



they felt that they had made wrong assumptions about the young man. If he could be safe and sound in the space energy storm, how strong was his body's durability? What level had he reached?

How come the Grace Mainland had such a freak like him? It was obvious that he had just reached the First Sky of True God Realm. How could he refine a body that was immune to the energy of outer space, which equaled the toughness of the God Body?

The three of them were anxious all of a sudden, as they could see the way ahead was filled with dangers, especially as they were accompanied by a freak like Shi Yan. Their original plan was over. They had to hasten to think about new solutions as fast as possible.

# Chapter 705: Mining area in the foreign land

---

This group of people slowly advanced in the energy storm. Different from Shi Yan, who was moving at ease, Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Kante, and Corpse Chief were struggling in the center of the energy storm. They had to use more energy to deal with its tremendous attacks.

Shi Yan was calm, staying behind Bao Ao's team. He often checked out Kante, Corpse Chief, and Zenith in the Yin Written Charm Scripture.

Under his scrutinizing gaze, Kante and Zenith were a little bit tense.

In the energy storm, they all needed to consume a huge amount of energy to protect their bodies. However, Shi Yan wasn't affected at all. If they had to battle here, they would receive a significant loss. They were afraid that Shi Yan had born a grudge against them, and could ambush them at any minute.

They were uneasy the whole way, maintaining a safe distance from Shi Yan. After a while, as they could see that Shi Yan didn't care about them, they finally could relax their tense nerves.

Inside the energy storm, everybody had to spend a significant amount of energy. Eventually, they had crossed the area, landing on another meteorolite.

This meteorolite was almost identical to the one they had stayed earlier. It was cold and dark. They saw no living energy, and they had to consume their energy to resist this harsh ambiance every second.

After Shi Yan steadied his body, he frowned while sensing. Then he said, "Nothing's here. We should continue."

Then, he took the lead and jumped into the cold darkness again.

Bao Ao's team didn't say anything, following him into the dark.

Kante, Corpse Chief, and Zenith knew this trip wouldn't turn out into a good one. They would have no way back, so they could only move forward. They needed to see if they could find anything in the next meteorolite.

They followed Shi Yan, consuming their energy to advance further in the dark.

After crossing more than ten meteorolites, even their cultivation base at their high realm couldn't endure anymore. All of them had spent at least half of their energy.

Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si appeared unable to endure anymore, their faces paling. Although they didn't say anything, it looked like they couldn't endure for much longer.

Bao Ao and Jie Ji were grim. Looking at the endless meteorolite sea in front of them, they only felt bitter.

Kante, Corpse Chief, and Zenith didn't say anything either, while they checked their bodies begrudgingly.

At this moment, despair gradually expanded in their hearts, as they thought that they would never cross this meteorolite sea to find a way out.

"Keep moving. Staying here also consumes our energy. Although we don't know what's waiting for us ahead, we have no choice." Shi Yan mused for a while and then sighed, storming forward.

They knew they had no other way around. They could only continue that way. They all jumped into the energy storm, heading towards the biggest meteorolite they saw.

Crossing the energy storm, as soon as Shi Yan landed on the meteorolite, his eyes brightened. He shouted, "I can sense someone had been here before!"

Bao Ao and Jie Ji were behind him. They were struck on hearing

his words.

Not long after that, Bo Ruo, Gu Da Si, Kante, Zenith, and Corpse Chief appeared. They were stirred up, looking at the meteorolite with a flame of hope in their hearts.

The meteorolite they were standing on was a little bit bigger than the Immortal Island in the Endless Sea. There were so many burrows digging into the core of the meteorolite. Big rocks were scattered at the entrance of those big burrows. It was obvious that someone had exploited this area.

Everybody got cheered up, releasing their Soul Consciousness towards those caves to see if they could find anything alive.

However, they were disappointed on seeing no energy fluctuation of living things. Although someone was here before, they had left already. As Shi Yan's team didn't know their exact location, it was harder to find a better solution.

"I'm going to the cave and check it out," Shi Yan pondered then decided to pioneer. He flew to a cave in front of them.

He entered deeper into the meteorolite, seeing so many complicated turns and channels. At the end of the road, he found many concave spots on the wall of the tunnel. It seemed someone had taken the crystals or something from those concave spots away.

It should be some kind of mineral!

He observed for a while and came up with that conclusion, then returned. He entered another cave and found the same traces of exhausted exploitation.

Shi Yan didn't linger there. He returned from the caves, standing next to Bao Ao as he said, "This meteorolite should have some strange mineral. It was a mineral mine. However, they had exploited it all. That's why we found no one here."

As Bao Ao heard his conclusion, he felt better. He smiled and

consoled himself. "If we find streaks of living things here, it means we're going in the right way. If they can visit here and leave safely, we can, too. As long as we can find the traces of people operating in the area, we can confirm that this place isn't a dead place that has no hope."

Everybody agreed with him. They felt better, as they felt like they could see hope here.

"Move. We need to continue. Perhaps, we will find the mines that aren't emptied out yet. Perhaps we can find someone there," Shi Yan suggested.

Kante, Zenith, and Corpse Chief didn't reject his opinion. They nodded silently, honestly approving of his suggestion for the first time ever.

Everybody continued to move forward.

They then crossed other seven meteorolites, of which, three had the traces of exploitation.

Everybody was cheered up, even though their energy was about to drain completely. They continued moving forward.

Later on, they reached a giant meteorolite. As soon as they landed, everybody got happy.

They immediately sensed the streak of living beings.

They hurried to move to the area where they detected the living aura. Then, they saw many massive caves connected to the core of the meteorolite. The living fluctuation they had sensed came out from those caves.

They could detect the others, and the others seemed to find them too. Not long after that, an ear-splitting explosion arose. Beasts that looked like they were made of piles of rock appeared from the caves.

This kind of a beast was around ten meters long, with a lozenge

shape and a sharp, pointy head. They also had terrifying knife-like teeth.

They had never seen these kinds of beasts in the Grace Mainland. A dim light flickered in the beasts' eyes, while they diffusing a massive aura and glaring at Shi Yan's group.

A shout arose from the caves. Not long afterward, seven people emerged from the cave. They were the members of the Dark Spirit Clan, Human Clan, and Ghost Mark Clan. Those people had an outstanding diamond-shaped mark on their forehead. They seemed to belong to the same force.

The leader was a member of the Dark Spirit Clan, whose energy movement was formidable. The energy intensity of his body was much more intimidating than any experts Shi Yan had met.

That man wore a dark gold robe, hiding his hands in the loose sleeves. He was an old man with white hair draped over his shoulder. His cold eyes gazed at Shi Yan's team right when they got out of the cave.

Under his gaze, everybody was extremely uneasy, as if a giant, ferocious beast of the Antiquity was looking at them. This feeling was so annoying.

"King God Realm!" Bao Ao muttered, his face changing dramatically.

Shi Yan shuddered. Divine light sparkled in his eyes as he immediately gathered energy, quietly staying alarmed.

"Where are you from?" The Dark Spirit Clan's leader coldly looked at the other and said in a low tone. However, he was imposing like a God watching his creatures, nonchalant but harsh.

"We are from the Grace Mainland. We've just arrived at the Meteorolite Sea. But now we're lost," Bao Ao took one step forward and replied to the old man carefully. "Where is this place? I wonder if you could show us the way to survive here?"

"The way to survive?" That man chuckled. He contemplated for a while and then nodded, his eyes musing. "There's a way to survive. However, you have to be obedient. Otherwise, it's your dead way. Understand?"

Shi Yan's team discolored. They discreetly observed the other six people. They were all scared.

The other six included members of the Dark Spirit Clan, Human Clan, and Ghost Mark Clan. They were the warriors at the Peak of True God Realm, and all of them had a dangerous aura.

Only the leader had the King God Realm. Anyway, that old man alone could kill all the members of Shi Yan's team, let alone the other six. In this battle, they had no hope to win.

"Master Anmou, that scripture isn't bad, haha." A young man of the Ghost Mark Clan chuckled. Magical tattoo appeared on his face as he admired the Yin Written Charm Scripture. He muttered, "Master, you've agreed to give me something."

The Dark Spirit Clan's leader was called Anmou. He just grinned, raising his hand and snatching at the void.

A tremendous flow of energy that could make a mountain collapse gushed out furiously from his palm. The Yin Written Charm Scripture was grabbed, falling into Anmou's hand.

"Get out. Don't make me do that," Anmou held the Yin Written Charm Scripture, talking faintly as if he had no emotions.

A thin, pale figure emerged from the Yin Written Charm Scripture. He was as feeble as a willow catkin in the wind. The old man shivered, his eyes frightened.

That was Zenith's body, being exposed for the first time. It seemed he couldn't adapt to the outer world, as he was moving his limbs oddly.

"King God Realm, not bad. You're a hotshot. Unfortunately, your energy has been drained too much, and you haven't attained the

God Body yet. Not much of a threat." Anmou contemplated for a while as if he were considering whether to kill Zenith or not. Anyway, he didn't do anything. After Zenith got out of the scripture, he threw it to the young man of the Dark Spirit Clan. "Take it. This toy isn't good enough, but it's still good for you."

The young man was cheered up on taking the scripture. He sensed it for a while and then joy filled his eyes. "Ah, it has a low-level inheritance, which I've never seen before. Not bad indeed. Haha, I finally got something in this trip."

Zenith turned ashen. His lips convulsed, but he didn't resist.

He understood that once he resisted, he would be killed directly.

Both the realm and powers of the others were stronger than his. Even if he could restore his power, he would have never had a chance to win, let alone his current status.

He could only accept his fate.



# Chapter 706: Forced to exploit the ores

---

Shi Yan's team grimaced, but they didn't dare to act rashly. They were discreetly careful, and their hearts seemed to be hung loose. They had to take notice of the seven people in front of them.

Even Jie Ji, who was always crazy and bold, was calm at this moment. He didn't dare to talk anything offensive.

Everybody could see the gap between their powers. Only their King God Realm leader was enough to kill Shi Yan's team. They had no way to resist in this case.

Shi Yan mused. He felt a big pressure as he suddenly recognized that it wasn't easy to live in the outer space. Moving back and forth in outer space without being affected by the energy storm proved that the others weren't weak at all.

Zenith had the highest realm among them, but he didn't dare to resist when the other snatched his Yin Written Charm Scripture. Apparently, he understood their current situation well.

While they kept silent, the seven people on the other side were also quiet, as though they were considering what to do with them.

Anmou, the leader, frowned. His gloomy eyes raked through Shi Yan's team. After a long time, he said, "Decca, give each of them a piece of low-quality Divine Crystal. Let them restore their state, then make them exploit the ores for us."

The Dark Spirit Clan's young man, who took the Yin Written Charm Scripture, grinned and answered, "Master Anmou, don't worry. I'll keep an eye on them."

Anmou nodded, talking to Bao Ao and Shi Yan. "Help us exploit this mine; I will consider giving you a way to survive. Yeah, we will see your performance. You guys should seize the chance to live for yourself."

Then, Anmou turned around and walked to the cave. The five

peculiar beasts roared and then followed him like sharp drills.

Right after that, cracking and grinding noises came from the caves. It seemed they were breaking and grinding big stones.

The five experts of the Dark Spirit Clan, Human Clan, and the Ghost Mark Clan scanned Shi Yan's team with a cold face. Then, they followed Anmou and got back deep inside the meteorolite.

The Dark Spirit Clan's young man called Decca grinned after the others had left. Eight thumb-sized black crystals emerged from the ring on his finger. They looked like black glass, with enormous energy moving inside. From his hand, the eight crystals flew out, falling towards each member of Shi Yan's group respectively.

Shi Yan frowned, snatching the black crystal. He released his Soul Consciousness to sense for a while, and got stunned immediately.

A marvelous kind of energy was moving in the core of this thumb-sized crystal. This energy wasn't similar to the Essence Crystal in the Grace Mainland, as it could be converted to any energy that was suitable for the users. This feature was strange indeed.

He observed discreetly and found that Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Corpse Chief, and Zenith were both happy and scared at the same time, their eyes complicated.

They had crossed a long way, passing many meteorolites. The energy in their bodies was about to drain, especially Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si. At this moment, they were like the dying oil lamp without any supply. As they were given a crystal containing such massive and marvelous energy, they were overjoyed.

Besides feeling happy, they were also getting more anxious and afraid of this group of strangers.

It was just a low-quality Divine Crystal that was as big as a thumb, but the energy it stored was so intimidating. This showed

that not only the others were strong, but they were also filthy rich. It wasn't easy to shake them.

"You guys should use the Divine Crystals to restore your energy first. Then, you will follow me to take the ores. Don't resist or annoy us. Or else... Muahaha!" Decca's threat was obvious. Then, he squinted and sat down cross-legged, took out a fist-sized Divine Crystal, and started to absorb the energy from the stone.

Shi Yan, Bao Ao, and Jie Ji exchanged looks. As they found that they had no choice, they sat down and started to absorb the energy from their small crystals.

It was just a thumb-sized Divine Crystal, but the energy it stored was massive. Shi Yan slightly urged it, and a torrential flow of energy rolled towards him, flooding his Essence Qi ancient tree in his tummy.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness checked the tree and saw the branches, which had been withered, become jade white again, shining with abundant energy.

After around one hour, Shi Yan had restored all the energy he had consumed. His mind, soul, and Qi peaked again.

Among this group, Shi Yan's realm was the lowest, so the energy he had in the Essence Qi ancient tree was the least. That's why he was the first one who finished recovering.

Looking at the low-quality Divine Crystal with some remaining energy in his palm, Shi Yan felt odd. He recognized that there were endless mysteries in outer space.

Different from him, Bao Ao and Gu Da Si couldn't recover that quickly.

Especially Zenith of the Ghost Mark Clan. To him, this low-quality thumb-sized Divine Crystal was just like a grain of salt in the sea. The energy of his Divine Crystal had turned into the Mysterious Yin qi in his body, but it could only make him feel

better. He still needed a lot to condense the God Body.

This low-quality Divine Crystal was enough to restore the consumed energy of Gu Da Si and Bo Ruo. To Shi Yan, a warrior at a lower realm, it was a little bit abundant, but to Bao Ao and Kante, whose realms were higher, it wasn't enough, and it couldn't restore them to the peak.

Shi Yan quietly observed for a while; he understood what the others had planned.

As Gu Da Si, Bo Ruo, and Shi Yan were at lower realms than the Third Sky of True God Realm, even if they could restore their full energy, they couldn't cause any threat to Anmou's team. But Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Kante, and Corpse Chief were at the Peak of True God Realm. If they could recover fully, it would be a problem.

Zenith used to have the cultivation base of King God Realm. If they let him recover to his peak, he would give a big headache to Anmou.

That was why they had given them the low-quality Divine Crystals to hold Zenith and Bao Ao down. They didn't want to see this group restore to the peak, which would bring them unnecessary problems.

Shi Yan waited for a while. Gu Da Si and Bo Ruo had restored their energy, so their faces looked better. The crystals on their palms had no energy remaining.

Not long after that, Bao Ao and the others had used up their Divine Crystals. They stood up, but they seemed not fully satisfied.

Zenith was the last one who finished. His visage was still grim. He stood up, looking at the young man of his kind with a mournful face. "We are from the same Ghost Mark Clan. Why do you need to make it hard for me?"

Decca laughed evilly, his eyes musing. "At first glance, I knew you're from the low-level continent. You're so boring, talking

about racism. We don't talk about races here. Every race is the same. We only consider the realm and powers. We don't care about races."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. From Decca, he knew the way he had done in the Grace Mainland for every clan to live together in harmony was correct.

"Don't try to befriend me. Don't babble either. Work more. You should seize the chance to survive for yourself." Decca waved his hand, not giving Zenith time to talk more. He continued tenderly. "Master Anmou isn't an easy person to talk with. He let you live, so don't mess things up. If you enrage him, muahaha, I think... you will suffer something more grating than death. We, the Troop 17, are kind enough. If you meet the other troops, perhaps you will be killed shortly."

Then, Decca pointed at a cave under his feet and talked faintly. "Come with me. I will teach you how." He took the lead and jumped into the cave.

Shi Yan's team exchanged looks. They shook their heads begrudgingly and followed the young man.

Shortly, they arrived at the core of the meteorolite. They saw one of the beasts of that bizarre kind, which was crushing the rigid stone crazily, digging deeper into the meteorolite.

That beast had a sharp, pointy head, that seemed to be able to break everything, as it had an innate power to crush stones. The way the beast bumped into the stone wall was like someone hitting a block of tofu. It pierced through the wall easily.

Shi Yan's team became grim.

When they had just arrived at the previous meteorolite, they had tried to dig the stone there. They were surprised to see that Bao Ao and Jie Ji couldn't even break the stone that easily.

It was only a beast, but it could swagger here and there. The force

behind those beasts should be really tremendous.

According to Decca, the seven of them were Troop 17. So, they had at least seventeen troops that came here to exploit ores.

Each troop had many members. If the leaders were all at Anmou's realm, everyone could imagine how intimidating a force that was.

Everybody felt their hearts getting heavier.

Those beasts continually broke the stone, digging deeper into the thick stone. It stopped from time to time to gather energy, then continued the work.

This stone wall seemed to never end. It had many five-colored spots on the wall, which looked really beautiful. Under the beast's crazy activity, those five-colored spots cracked. Fingernail-sized pieces of this five-colored material scattered everywhere.

"Look carefully. Use your energy to cover them. Don't let those small pieces be exposed for too long. Only using power could save them from disappearing." Decca suddenly shouted. His ten fingers folded and then unfolded. Wisps of light flew out, covering each five-colored stone.

Shi Yan observed and found that those five-colored stones would have light oozing like running sand from its surface. After those light spots fell on the ground, they disappeared instantly.

It seemed like those small pieces couldn't be exposed for a long time. Otherwise, some special effects in the stones would be drained bit by bit.

"Follow me and use the energy to cover the five-colored Perish Essence, then slowly put them into your Storage Ring," Decca shouted, his eyes as swift as electricity. He turned, glaring at them coldly. "If you can collect enough five-colored Perish Essence, Master Anmou can let you live. He perhaps will give you more Divine Crystals to recover. Otherwise, you know what would

happen."

As Kante and Zenith heard him, they changed their countenance, quickly following his operation to collect the five-colored stones first.

# Chapter 707: The three major God Realms

---

Shi Yan's team stayed inside the meteorolite, exploiting ores and consuming energy every day. They didn't notice how much time had passed.

Whenever the energy in their bodies was drained, Decca would give them a piece of low-quality Divine Crystal so they could restore their powers. Then, they had to go back to work.

Decca only gave them the thumb-sized Divine Crystals. He had never given them anything bigger, which kept Bao Ao and the other high-realm warriors from restoring their full powers.

Shi Yan, Bo Ruo, and Gu Da Si had a relatively low realm, so they could use these low-quality Divine Crystals to restore their full energy. However, these three didn't dare to act rashly. Otherwise, they would have killed Decca instantly.

What if they could kill Decca?

Their Troop still had Anmou, the King God Realm expert. Besides, they had another five experts at the Peak of True God Realm. This meteorolite sea was also the others' territory. If they dared to kill him, would they have a way to live any longer?

Everybody understood and accepted their fate. They had to collect the five-colored ores in the mine and hand them to receive the Divine Crystals. Decca controlled all the harvest.

During this period, they didn't see Anmou and the other five. They didn't know how many days had passed by, or whether it was night or day. Every day, they recovered their energy and then got back to collect the ores.

Among them, Bao Ao, Kante, and Zenith didn't gain any benefits from this day-and-night labor work. In fact, they even received a minor harm.

Quite the contrary, Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si at the Second Sky of



True God Realm, could refill their consumed energy with only one piece of low-quality Divine Crystal. Gradually, their power seemed to increase.

After each time of recovering their energy, they had a little bit of increase. During this strenuous labor, Bo Ruo and Gu Da Si were always calm and even secretly happy.

There was another person that had such progress: Shi Yan.

He was at the First Sky of True God Realm, the lowest realm here, and the time for which he had reached this realm wasn't too long. At this time, his realm wasn't stable yet. If he took risks to increase the realm, it would be hazardous.

They had been working in the dark mine for a long time. His Essence Qi had been drained and then refilled for so many times. Shi Yan didn't think about it much, since it helped him steady his realm. The altar in his head seemed to be trained too. It became more secure.

The power in his body had gained something good during this running out and recovering process, as his power was increasing daily.

Gradually, Shi Yan found that he had secured his realm already. While his energy had been increasing every day, he found the altar in his head had marvelous changes accordingly.

This kind of change was hard to describe. He vaguely thought that his realm was also enhanced, as if the subtle mysteries of the Devouring Original Essence had benefited his altar.

Every time he exploited the ores, he needed to gather his energy, using the power Upanishad to cover the five-colored stones.

This tedious labor work seemed like a new quenching activity to him. As he had just reached the True God Realm, he wasn't too familiar with using his power Upanishads. Usually, he needed a period of time to adapt to the new realm and become fluent in

using his energy.

This day-and-night of exploiting ores had given him a cool-down time. Every time he needed to condense energy, he used the power Upanishad he had comprehended. This process gave him a chance to review and strengthen his understanding of powers and the martial techniques.

He understood that even though mining ores was a begrudgingly tedious task, and he was forced to do that, it was also a rare chance to steady his new realm, making him more fluent in using his power Upanishads.

That was why he could stay calm the most in this group.

After that, he didn't hate this mining work. Gradually, he had taken it as one of his leisure activities, turning it into a good foundation for his new breakthrough.

The change in his mindset had given him greater benefits. With a positive mind, while he didn't notice, his realm and powers had increased strongly. Day by day, his visage got bright and glowing, totally different from Bao Ao and Zenith.

He was enjoying this process.

After an unknown period, Anmou brought the other five and appeared in this cave.

Decca laughed, handing a ring to Anmou. The old man checked it. He seemed to have a smile in his eyes as he nodded contentedly. "Not bad, you guys work better than the others."

Decca squinted, his face happy.

"Can't let you take all the good things," said Anmou. "These eight should be separated. We need to push up the progress of the other areas." He looked at the other five. "You shall choose your men."

Soon, those five people had picked one of Bao Ao's group. The warrior of the Dark Spirit Clan chose Zenith, while the warrior of

the Ghost Mark Clan picked Bao Ao and Bo Ruo. An old human took Kante and Corpse Chief; another Dark Spirit Clan's warrior picked Jie Ji and Gu Da Si, and Shi Yan was assigned to a beautiful human woman.

That pretty woman had a messy, chestnut-brown hair and a pair of bright eyes. She was wearing a tight, green colored robe, which had many delicate patterns on the hem. This woman had a healthy wheat skin tone. Her body looked amazingly flexible.

It seemed the woman wasn't satisfied with this arrangement. She stared at Shi Yan for a while and then frowned. "Why give me a First Sky of True God Realm kid? How effective is he?"

This woman seemed to have a high position; even Anmou the leader had to be polite to her. "Fergie, you will be more tired if you work more. You're almost done. If you slow down, I will have another arrangement. Of course, I won't let you suffer."

"Forget it," Fergie snorted and then waved her hand. She threw a glance at Shi Yan, then talked to him faintly. "This kid looks good, better than the others. I'll take him."

Anmou nodded, talking to them. "Alright, you guys follow them. After we're done, I will check your contributions and give you something."

"Follow me," the woman called Fergie nodded to Shi Yan with an indifferent countenance. She walked out of the cave first.

As Shi Yan knew he couldn't resist, he pondered and then said to Bao Ao and Jie Ji, "Take care."

"Take care," Bao Ao and Jie Ji replied with a reluctant face.

They were the heroes, the overlords of a vast area in the Grace Mainland, where they could swagger without being afraid of anyone. However, after reaching outer space, they had fallen in such a situation. Of course, they couldn't feel comfortable.

Shi Yan didn't feel pleasant either. After bidding farewell to the

other two, he followed the human woman named Fergie to another cave and continued his mining career.

Fergie, his new boss, was more generous than Decca. Although she also gave him the bad-quality Divine Crystals, she gave him three pieces each time. Then, she busied herself with exploiting ores, and didn't care about him much.

This woman was at the Peak of True God Realm. The energy moving inside her body was special. It could be as soft as cotton or as rigid as stone with just one flicker of her thought. And, she had many rare techniques.

While her energy was changing, it generated a strange magnetic field. Just like two poles, it had a powerful suction force. It was like a pure, subtle power of heaven and earth.

She was collecting the five-colored Perish Essence faster than Decca of the Ghost Mark Clan. While the energy of two-pole magnetic field of her body was changing, it drew pieces of five-colored stones into her ring.

She alone was faster than the combination of Decca, Zenith, Bao Ao, and Jie Ji. It was no wonder why she had progressed faster than them. Shi Yan found that he could only help her a bit here, and his help was trivial to this woman.

Every time the woman collected ores, all pieces of five-colored Perish Essence would fly to her after the beast had broken the hard rock.

Sometimes, one or two pieces got out of her magnetic field, which was Shi Yan's chance to release his energy to cover them, putting them into his ring.

He was just doing some odd jobs, which were much easier than when he was with Decca. He could be safe and free in this cave while working with that woman. No one had said a word

Today, it seemed the woman had consumed much of her energy.

She suddenly stopped and took out a big Divine Crystal, stroking it with her jade-like hand to take the energy from the stone.

She seemed bored to death too. Eventually, she remembered she still had a company here. The woman threw a glance to Shi Yan and asked with a faint voice. "I heard that you guys came from a low-level continent, eh?"

Shi Yan was surprised. He contemplated for a while and then said, "I don't know what you mean by 'low-level continent'?"

"A continent that doesn't have warriors at Original God Realm is a low-level one. Do you have experts at Original God Realm in your continent?" The woman answered herself mockingly. "I think no. Otherwise, you must have known the classification of continents."

"Original God Realm?" Shi Yan was stunned and then smiled miserably. "What realm is that?"

"What is the strongest realm in your continent?" The woman seemed to get bored stiff, asking casually.

"King God Realm," Shi Yan answered honestly.

"I knew it," Fergie nodded and answered slowly. "The Spirit Realm, True God Realm, and King God Realm are the three minor God Realms. After the King God Realm is the Original God Realm. Above that is the Ethereal God Realm, and finally, the Incipient God Realm. Each realm's also divided into three Skies. The Original God Realm, Ethereal God Realm, and Incipient God Realm are the three major God Realms."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened as his heart was struck.

It turned out that the God Realm was classified into three minor God Realms and three major God Realms. The Spirit Realm, True God Realm, and King God Realm were just three minor realms in the eyes of the outer space's experts. The Original God Realm, Ethereal God Realm, and Incipient God Realm were the bigger realms to them.

At this moment, Shi Yan finally had a precise knowledge of the realms above the King God Realm. He knew the names of those new realms.

# Chapter 708: Separate

---

Shi Yan listened attentively to Fergie's explanation of the new realms. He frowned and thought, as excitement appeared obviously on his face.

The God Realms had three minor realms and three major realms. As he was at the True God Realm, in the Grace Mainland, he was already the best of the best experts. Listening to Fergie's explanation, he got to know about a whole new world, a world that was way beyond his imagination. Shi Yan felt as if he was a frog sitting under his coconut shell.

"The foreign land's much complicated than what you've thought. Experts here are like trees in a thick forest. Surviving in a high-level continent is much more strenuous than living in your low-level continent." Fergie seemed to turn her boasting channel on, but she wasn't hurried, looking at him with a cold face. "If you want to survive in the foreign land, you always have to think about advancing. You can't be relaxed."

Fergie paused for a while and then asked him. "How old are you?"

Shi Yan was bewildered for a while and then answered her honestly. "I think I'm around thirty years old."

Even himself couldn't certify his age. He had been running back and forth through the Grace Mainland, and he hadn't stopped for a long time in any land. He had been fighting continuously, trying his best to have a better realm. He did forget how fast time passed.

Fergie's eyes became strange. She scrutinized him, as her eyes shot out a flow of dim light. "Around thirty? Are you sure?"

Shi Yan nodded.

Fergie was startled. After a while, she furrowed her brows and then said, "Good innate endowment." She then contemplated for a while.

Shi Yan waited in silence unhurriedly.

Fergie didn't continue. She seemed to muse on something. After a long time, energy waves rippled from her, and it seemed to get stronger from time to time. The big Divine Crystal in her hand wasn't shiny anymore, as the energy inside had been absorbed completely.

Shi Yan stood up, but she didn't dust her clothes. "Get back to work."

Shi Yan hurried to get up, gathering his energy and waiting attentively.

That beast continued to dig the meteorolite, scattering the five-colored Perish Essence pieces. Fergie took most of them, and Shi Yan just needed to collect the ones she missed. It was much easier than when he worked with Decca.

It was another unfathomable period of ore exploitation.

During this process, he had used the low-quality Divine Crystals to restore his energy. Shi Yan could feel his Essence Qi ancient tree getting more vibrant, while his realm became steadier, and he could use his powers more fluently day by day.

Today, while Fergie was using her strange power to collect the five-colored Perish Essence, a diamond-shaped mark on her forehead glowed all of a sudden.

Fergie's countenance changed a little bit, and her moving fingers trembled. Dozens of five-colored Perish Essence pieces shot out, but she missed them.

Shi Yan always paid attention, and he didn't dare to relax just a second. He immediately urged his energy and covered all the five-colored crystals, putting them into his Storage Ring.

Fergie stopped, pointing at the beast.

The beast stopped digging, standing still in the piles of rocks.



Fergie looked grim. She squinted in front of Shi Yan as if she was talking with someone using the mark on her head. Gradually, her face became more grimaced. A gleam of anxiety and worry appeared in her eyes.

Shi Yan didn't talk. He stopped his work, watching the woman as he knew something unexpected had happened.

"Another force has come to this meteorolite. They are much stronger than us." Fergie stayed quiet for a while and then opened her eyes wider. The mark on her forehead didn't glow anymore, indicating that her conversation had ended. "Anmou went to negotiate with him. If he fails, perhaps... we will have a fight,"

Shi Yan was surprised. He felt anxious immediately. "Stronger than you guys?"

Fergie beamed a forced smile. "Two King God Realm warriors and six Peak of True God Realm warriors. Seems like they're prepared to devour us. I hope he could negotiate with them. Otherwise, we will be in big trouble."

Shi Yan quieted down, discreetly putting up his guard, as he was calculating the worst situation. "Should we... get up there? If we stay underground, once they block us, we... can't run away."

As those people were standing on the meteorolite, once the war started, it would happen above their heads. According to Fergie, they would be subdued for sure. If they stayed inside the meteorolite, they would have no way to run.

That was why Shi Yan felt so anxious.

Fergie shook her head. "We can't get up there now. If negotiation doesn't work, we shouldn't show up. If we get up there, the danger will be bigger. We'd better run from here."

She ordered the beast directly.

That beast grunted, then started to dig towards another direction hurriedly. Just like a pangolin, it dug another cave deeper into the

rock wall.

"The rock will be really tough if that section has Perish Essence crystals. Otherwise, it's soft enough to dig it fast," Fergie frowned while explaining. "Anmou's a simple-minded person. His temper isn't good either. If he fails to negotiate, and we have to fight, he will risk his life for sure. Anmou is at the King God Realm. Even if we get defeated, he can protect himself and run away. And we will be... So, we should stay here and watch."

Shi Yan was surprised.

It seemed Fergie wanted to disband. She didn't want to fight, and she wanted to run away to save her life before the fight happened.

Under Shi Yan's look, Fergie still acted naturally. "I don't want to die. If you don't want to live, you can go there." She paused for a while and then continued. "When the battle happens, you guys, the low strangers, will die first. Those who go with you will be killed shortly if they show themselves. If you get there, you will be killed like them. Anmou won't care about your life or death."

Shi Yan discolored. He ceased his thoughts and quieted down.

He wanted to get there and watch. However, Fergie's words had made him think about it again. The other team had two King God Realm warriors. So, it was no use if Shi Yan got there. He would be killed shortly.

BOOM BOOM!

Explosions reverberated rumblingly. Shortly, a tremendous tremor transmitted from above their heads. That tremor carried a furious energy shockwave and mysterious power, intruding into the ground.

Shi Yan felt his hair rise, and he shivered under that strange energy effect. His flesh seemed to be bursting too. Amidst the rumbling noises, the mark on Fergie's forehead glowed again. It seemed Anmou was talking to her.

Fergie stopped the conversation. She shouted with a grim face. "We should move now!"

Then, she didn't care if Shi Yan had any other idea. She ran into the passage the beast had dug as fast as if she were flying.

Shi Yan was astounded for three seconds, then immediately followed Fergie by jumping into the passage. While running after her, he set up many barriers and restrictions in an attempt to hinder the opponents.

Fergie's eyes were mocking. "It's no use. At your realm, your barriers can't stand even one of their strikes."

Shi Yan didn't answer. He was still trying to set up more barriers. Crystals he brought from the Grace Mainland flew out and were inlaid in the wall, creating faint energy defending barriers.

"The battle has begun. Anmou can hold the others for a while. If we leave here, we won't get ambushed." Fergie didn't care about him, just talking. "Of course, Anmou will hate me. He will report me for sure when he gets back. Anyway, it's okay. Being reported is better than being dead."

The beast in front of them was like a fast pangolin digging the rock.

Shi Yan followed close behind Fergie amidst the shower of rock chips. They didn't care about the battle above their heads, just advancing deeper into the ground.

After a while, the beast roared and pushed further. It then jumped into the immense darkness.

Shi Yan and Fergie followed the beast, falling into the icy-cold darkness.

Fergie jumped on the beast and knitted her brows, turning and looking at him. Shi Yan got her look, so he immediately flew over and landed on the beast, sitting behind her.

Fergie patted the beast. It then sped up like a black thunderbolt, dashing towards a meteorolite in front of them. Shortly, they fell into an energy storm.

Fergie's body glowed gloriously in the furious gust of the energy storm. This halo came from her garments, creating a thick layer that covered her entirely. This protection kept her safe from the impact of the energy storms.

As Shi Yan was exposed, his massive Blood Qi in was triggered, which activated his Petrification Martial Spirit. His body became rigid in just a blink. Each muscle of his became strangely firm with a mysterious energy that could neutralize the energy of the storm.

Fergie could sense something. She turned her head, looking at him. Her eyes got brightened.

As they were in the middle of an energy storm, she had to use her magical clothes to resist. But Shi Yan, who was baring his body, could withstand the storm easily. His intimidatingly tenacious body was much stronger than most of the True God Realm warrior she had met.

She was astounded, looking at Shi Yan. At this moment, he had gained a higher value in her eyes.

In her eyes, this kid, who came from a low-level continent had something strange. As he was too young to reach the True God Realm, his innate endowment was excellent. And, his tenacious body showed that he had been trained arduously for a significantly long time.

Everybody knew that physical training was more strenuous than increasing the realm and power. Each warrior who had a significantly strong body all had a tough will, as they were the most persistent and terrifying persons.

Fergie's eyes brightened. She considered for a while and then nodded discreetly as she had a good calculation.

# Chapter 709: The Sixth Herbal Star

---

The beast moved forward in the dark space quickly, gliding over massive meteorolites and heading towards the edge of the meteorolite sea.

Fergie didn't say anything, staying silent all the way. Sometimes, she took out the Divine Crystals to restore her energy. She wasn't worried about Anmou's team fighting with the others at all.

Shi Yan was worried about Bao Ao and Jie Ji. He didn't know whether these two could survive this disaster or not. Before he left, he had thought about fighting alongside them. However, Fergie's words had awakened him, making him give up this thought.

Even Anmou and Fergie couldn't withstand the others. Shi Yan understood that even if he stayed, he couldn't help much. Perhaps, he would have died instead.

Although he had a good impression of Bao Ao and Jie Ji, it wasn't enough for him to risk his life. Shi Yan decided to save himself. If they could meet later and if they needed his help, he wouldn't hesitate to give them a hand.

At this moment, Shi Yan didn't have that ability; he couldn't save the other two.

In this cold and dark space, Shi Yan didn't know how much time had passed. He only knew that they had crossed several hundred meteorolites, advancing through a long distance.

Eventually, the beast crossed the bizarre meteorolite sea, entering an endless starry sky.

This mysterious starry sky was stunning. Countless stars were twinkling charmingly. Flows of Star energy crossed a far distance to gather on Shi Yan's body, as his Star Martial Spirit was refilled.

This was the marvelous feature of his Star Martial Spirit. Even if he didn't have any other energy sources to use, as long as there

were stars in the sky, he could still use the Star Martial Spirit to supplement the consumed energy.

The beast continued to fly in this vast starry sky. Meteors shot, passing by the beast they were riding. Those meteors were illuminating gloriously, much better than the most beautiful firework that enthralled people's souls.

In this endless starry sky, they could often be impacted by the perilous energy storms. Some were much dangerous than the meteorolite sea.

Shi Yan urged his Soul Consciousness to sense. His mind was struck, his face full of fear.

The energy that rippled from those energy storms was earth-destroying. Shi Yan was sure that if he got rolled into such furious storms, his body would be ground and his soul altar would be shattered.

Fortunately, Fergie seemed to be familiar with this starry area. On this journey, they had tried their best to avoid the tremendous energy storms. They had taken the long way around the storms and never dared to intrude.

Shi Yan followed her and gained benefits from it. He relaxed, as he wasn't torn apart to death by the heaven and earth energy like some rash intruder.

The beast followed Fergie's order, changing its direction constantly. After spending a long time in this starry area, it flew directly toward a beautiful five-colored star. After getting through a thick layer of cotton clouds, they landed on that colorful star.

Sitting neatly on the beast, Shi Yan gawked with bright eyes.

Five element power on this star was extremely dense. The energy it carried was too massive. It was more than ten times thicker than the spiritual Qi in the Grace Mainland.

This star had so many herbal fields divided into blocks. Those

herbs planted there dizzied Shi Yan. He didn't know them, but he could see that each plant had an obvious energy rippling around it.

In the center of this star, the herbal fields were situated in a piece of land in the middle of a sea. Shi Yan could see many people working in those colorful, thick fields. They were taking care of the plants, fertilizing them with strange substances to supplement the Five Elements power of the soil.

This land had a relatively large conical construction floating in the air, which was a kind of architecture he had never seen before.

The beast headed towards that structure. One hour later, Fergie and her beast stopped in the highest area of that building. It was a triangular stone platform that was around ten mu large, made of green stone with an exquisite, natural stone texture.

After Fergie stopped there, she didn't explain anything, just faintly talking to Shi Yan. "Follow me."

Shi Yan frowned, releasing his Soul Consciousness to survey the surroundings. He found more than one thousand warriors at various levels staying around. Some of them were at the Disaster Realm or the Sky Realm. However, Shi Yan could spot some intimidating auras, which were even more tremendous than Fergie's energy fluctuations.

"Where are we?" He walked behind Fergie, pretending to ask naturally. "There're so many herbal fields here. Also, the spiritual Qi's so abundant. It's a wonderful place."

"This place is the Herbal Star of our force. It's the Sixth Herbal Star, specialized in planting spiritual herbs and grass. Spiritual Qi in this planet's abundant, which is the best for growing herbs." Fergie explained casually. "The Master of the Sixth Herbal Star is my precursor, a Level two Divine Grade alchemist. This place belongs to her. To our force, this Sixth Herbal Star's very important. King God Realm warriors stay here year-round to guard and maintain the order in this place."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He was moved.

Fergie's force should be tremendously strong as they possessed some herbal stars in the foreign land. A herbal star was a planet which was many times bigger than the Grace Mainland, with more spiritual Qi. Also, they had Divine Grade alchemists.

This was unimaginable in the Grace Mainland.

Pausing for a while, Shi Yan felt something strange. Fergie's attitude was too friendly, which made him feel strange. Shi Yan thought that this woman had some scheme against him.

"Why did you bring me here?" Shi Yan contemplated and then asked.

"You'll know later," Fergie put on an indifferent face. She didn't explain further, and just kept walking.

A warrior with the same diamond-shaped mark on the head appeared on their way as if he had received Fergie's message beforehand. His energy fluctuations weren't weaker than Anmou, a King God Realm warrior.

That man had flaming red hair, and was wearing armor with flame drawings. He gave people a feeling of a brutal character. He threw a glance at Fergie and then nodded. "I heard that you left alone, right? If Anmou comes back alive and reports your runaway stuff, it will be big trouble, you know?"

It seemed Fergie and this man were on one side.

"Then trouble it is. At least I could survive. You know Anmou's characteristics. If he isn't near death, he won't give up. I don't want to be buried with him." Fergie harrumphed and then said with a serious countenance. "Is Granny refining medicines?"

"No. She's worried about you too. She was just now saying that you were a little bit late this time." That man knitted his brows, taking a quick look at Shi Yan. "Because of him?"



Fergie nodded. "It's good that she isn't refining medicines. I brought this kid to help her little baby."

That man laughed evilly, eyeing Shi Yan as he grinned, "If so, Granny will be happy. Your little trouble won't be a trouble anymore."

Fergie also smiled.

Shi Yan's visage changed dramatically as he immediately got that Fergie had set him up for something, and it was definitely not a good thing.

"Kid, follow me. It's your good fortune that you can get to the Sixth Herbal Star. It's not bad, haha." That man cracked a smile which nauseated people. "Granny's little baby has killed seven True God Realm slaves. If this kid has exuberant Blood Qi, perhaps he could endure longer. Haha."

Fergie walked first; she didn't even take a glance over her shoulder.

Shi Yan darkened his face while his icy cold eyes were scanning her ample rear end. He didn't say anything, just following the woman.

Soon, he saw Fergie talking in a low tone to an old woman, who had a snake-headed cane. That hag had a wrinkled face outlining a pair of eyes like a venomous snake. Brutal gleam sparkled from her eyes as she was studying Shi Yan, as if she were looking at a sacrificial sheep.

Under her look, Shi Yan felt irritated, his face getting more grimaced.

"This kid is only at the First Sky of True God Realm. Does he really have abundant Blood Qi like you've said?" That grandma's voice was hoarse and low. She spoke skeptically. "Well, if it isn't, you are going to have big trouble."

"Granny, give it a shot," Fergie knelt down and smiled. "How

could I dare to deceive you?"

The old woman nodded, raising her voice. "Bring that kid to me."

The King God Realm that had accompanied them laughed and then disappeared shortly.

Not long after that, he returned, bringing a middle-aged man, who was stinky and bony. His eyes were dim and desperate, which made him look no different from a crying ghost.

That middle-aged man couldn't stand firm. As soon as he saw the old woman and Fergie, he became hostile, pitching his voice and screaming. "Fergie! Even if I turn into a ghost, I won't forgive you! You b\*tch! You will never have a decent death!"

Fergie didn't change her visage or even arch her brows.

The old woman appeared as if she hated that man a lot. She talked mournfully, "You don't have a chance to become a ghost."

The King God Realm expert standing next to him grinned fiendishly. His five fingers were like five sharp knives that thrust into that man's head. Instantly, he squeezed the soul altar of the poor man. That man's God Soul was ripped off under a ruthless, twisting force, and his soul scattered.

A small amount of remaining Essence Qi on his body turned into an invisible current, pouring into Shi Yan's body.

"My baby, I'll give you another place." The hag squinted, putting on a mild countenance, waving at the body of that middle-aged man. A beam of light shot out from there, winding around her wrinkled arm.

It was a small snake that was around half a meter long. Five-colored halo expanded from it beautifully. The little snake then flickered its tongue happily in the air, as if it was trying to get the favor from that hag.

Shi Yan paled.

# Chapter 710: Human body medicinal cauldron

---

Fergie took out the ring on her finger, then smiled and handed it to the old woman. "Here're five-colored Perish Essence Crystals I've collected. It's good for your little baby, Granny. I hope your baby can evolve faster."

The old woman squinted, her mood seeming not too bad as she nodded, "Good! Thank you!" She took out all the five-colored Perish Essence Crystals and poured them into the eager, open mouth of the snake.

As soon as the five-colored Perish Essence Crystals got into the snake belly, the moving halo on its body became dazzling. Apparently, it received a good deal of energy from the crystals.

The old woman's smile became brighter. Her bright-lit eyes gazed at Shi Yan for a while and then said, "Kid, behave. If my baby can ascend using your body, I will consider saving your life."

Shi Yan's visage was grim. He frowned, but didn't say a word.

He understood that this hag and Fergie were full of lies, and that he couldn't believe their words. If his body could help the snake evolve, the other would absolutely not let him go. She would take his body as the long-term supply station for that little snake.

However, he had no solution at this moment. There were many King God Realm experts in this place. That hag was not only a Rank two Divine Grade alchemist, but also a King God Realm warrior.

If he fought with them now, he would receive nothing good but a faster death.

"Come, my little baby. I hope you like your new home." The old woman's eyes got colder all of a sudden. A sharp, gloomy look fell on Shi Yan's body with an obvious threat.

That small snake flew happily from her hand, shooting towards Shi Yan's left palm. Its relatively long fangs bared as it bit open a small hole on his palm. The snake then shrank its body to intrude into Shi Yan's body through the hole it created on his left hand.

Right after the snake got into Shi Yan's left arm, his face changed dramatically, as a tearing pain expanded from his arm to his entire body.

A large amount of Essence Qi and Blood Qi in his body rolled massively and uncontrollably towards his left arm. The snake started to absorb his energy little by little, giving him a head-splitting pain. Shortly, his spirit, soul, and Qi became vulnerable.

This snake was a parasite living on the human body. It could devour the essence of the human body and make it stronger. This snake was extremely evil and ghoulish.

A marvelous energy fluctuation was constantly moving on the snake's body, which was scarily sharp, as if it had the considerable lethality that could eat humans alive.

Shi Yan's body was really sturdy after so many years of being quenched. His bones and internal organs all had massive Qi, while each of his muscles contained the mysterious energy. At the same time, his blood had miraculous effects, which could be compared to many outstanding medicines.

After the small snake got into his body, it released a happy energy wave while making some hissing sounds. Its body slithered under the skin on Shi Yan's arm, then reappeared through the hole, which tingled people's scalp.

Granny's eye brightened on seeing the little snake happy. She continually nodded and said, "Not bad! Fergie, you got me good stuff this time. I'll help you solve your trouble. Your seniors will never punish you."

Fergie put on a smiling face, bowing to the old woman. "Thank

you, Granny."

"Yeah, for the time being, you should stay here. Once I'm done with your things, it's not too late to leave." The hag waved her hand to order the King God Realm expert. "Hui Shuang, you take this kid to the potion chamber and give him Rank 5 Sacred Grade pellets. Ah no, give him Rank 7 Solid Pellet. His corporeal body's tenacious enough to endure the medicinal power of these kinds of meds.

The King God Realm expert called Hui Shuang cracked a grin, talking to Shi Yan, "Follow me."

Shi Yan was begrudging. He knew that it wasn't the right time to rouse any dispute. Otherwise, his consequence would be pathetic.

He didn't say anything, just threw Fergie a glare before leaving with Hui Shuang.

Fergie was startled as a cold feeling crept over her body. She furrowed her eyebrows. After the men had left for a while, she spoke up. "Granny, this kid came from a low-level continent, but his innate endowment isn't bad. He has many mysteries too. You should be careful. Don't give him a chance to rebel."

The hag beamed a chilly smile while nodding. "Little Fergie, don't worry. No one can dream to get out from my place alive. That kid's a brutal character, I can see that. Anyway, since his realm's too low, he can't struggle at all."

Fergie seemed to ease her mind after listening to the old woman. She didn't talk further.

Shi Yan's cold and sinister gaze that fell on her when he left still irritated her. It was like a wolf hiding in the dark, gazing at her in silence.

Shaking her head, Fergie tried to sweep away the tangling thoughts. She stretched her body, revealing her charming bearing. "I have stayed in the Meteorolite Sea for too long. I didn't even

have time to bathe. Haha, Granny, I'm going to take a rest now. I won't bother you anymore."

"Okay, you should go. Don't worry. We won't let you suffer while staying here." The hag squinted, throwing her a bottle casually. "Take this. It's good for your realm. You deserve it."

Fergie's eyes lit up, thanking the old woman continually. She squeezed her fist around the pellet bottle, leaving with a smile on her face.

...

Hui Shuang took Shi Yan to a strange conical building. A crystal-clear pond stood in front of that building, where many fishes were swimming back and forth. A large amount of white mist hovered above the pond. It was the Five Elements steam, which diffused and flooded the herb field around the planet.

The building behind the pond was made of dark brown rock. It had several stories. Barriers were arranged at each stair leading to the other floor.

Hui Shuang arranged him to stay on the lowest floor. Shi Yan could see many square lots containing many bottles and jars, which had been labeled as the foundation pellets.

Hui Shuang threw him a bottle malignantly and sneered, "This is Rank 7 Solid Pellet. You have to take one after every three days. It will restore your Blood Qi. Otherwise, you will die soon."

Shi Yan darkened his face. As he knew he had nothing to discuss with this man, he took the pellet and sat down, without saying anything.

"You are not allowed to go further than ten miles around here. Or else, I will capture you and give you some bitter flavor," Hui Shuang advised Shi Yan. "You're not allowed to touch anything here. Every day, you should urge the pellet's medicinal powers to supplement your Blood Qi. It will help you live a little longer."

Afterward, Hui Shuang walked to the door. In just a flash, his figure faded like a mist.

The place suddenly quieted down. No noise could be heard anymore besides the murmuring pond in front of the building with its thick steam.

There was no shadow of humans on Shi Yan's floor, and he couldn't reach the upper floors because of the barriers and restrictions. Also, Shi Yan didn't dare to touch the pellets on the square boxes. He didn't know most of them, and he wasn't interested in them either. Shi Yan sat down in this room.

He used his Soul Consciousness to check his situation. He could see clearly that the small snake was taking in his Blood Qi little by little from his left arm.

After every fifteen minutes, his Blood Qi was reduced. This hurt Shi Yan's heart a lot. His body convulsed from time to time as the pain flooded him.

He had never thought about this situation. He didn't know Fergie's wicked intention, so she ended up setting him up in such dangerous circumstances. If he had known of her evil plan, he would have attacked her maliciously when they were still in the outer space.

With his current realm, if he had ambushed her in the energy storm, he could have killed Fergie, escaping from her and entering a wider galaxy.

However, it was too late. At this moment, he could only accept his destiny. When he could see his situation clearly, he would plan the next steps.

Shi Yan tried to stop his Essence Qi and Blood Qi from flowing into his arm. However, when he did that, he found a fierce, surging soul fluctuation come from the snake, which gave his God Soul an inexplicable pain from time to time, while his body

suffered from a several times stronger pain.

That soul fluctuation carried the small snake's aura and a flow of that hag's Soul Consciousness, giving him a clear warning message.

He immediately stopped his probe as he knew that he would only bear a bad result when the other found his operation.

If he couldn't prevent the loss of his Blood Qi, he could only think about how to enhance the Blood Qi and Essence Qi in his body. Or else, when the snake drained him, his tenacious body would be like a thin sheet of paper, that would be ripped effortlessly.

Shi Yan took out the so-called Rank 7 Sacred Level Solid Pellet. He pondered for a while. Eventually, he beamed a forced smile and took out a longan-sized pellet. Taking in the pleasant smell of the pellet, Shi Yan didn't feel any joy but only bitterness.

He knew that the other had made him a potion cauldron to provide his Blood Qi as the nutrient for that snake to evolve. She was using his exhausted Blood Qi and body to exchange for the flourishing, quick development of the snake.

The Rank 7 Sacred Level Solid Pellet was just another ingredient of this cauldron, which would keep him alive a little longer, and give the snake more time to enjoy his energy. All of these were to urge the snake's ascension faster.

And Shi Yan, he was just a pathetic supporting rock.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan reluctantly swallowed the Solid Pellet. He then stood upright, using the Essence Qi to urge and take in the medicinal efficacy of the pellet.

As soon as the pellet got into his body, an extremely extravagant medicinal efficacy started to slaughter his body like a furious flood, with the pellet as the eye of the storm. Numerous currents appeared like countless streams, connecting with his blood vessels.



The furious medicinal efficacy attacked his body here and there, boiling in his vessels just like hundreds of wild horses escaping their leads, running madly inside his body.

Shi Yan's vessels and tendons were swollen forcefully. Such kind of pain was indescribable, making his consciousness blurry.

It was just a Rank 7 Sacred Grade pellet, but the power it brought was like an erupting flood, which could be compared to the power of a warrior at the Second or Third Sky of True God Realm. This medicinal power was wildly destroying his vessels and acupuncture points. Shi Yan thought that he could die from this intensive pain.

Shi Yan paled. He finally knew why Hui Shuang had such a mocking smile when he heard the old woman call the name of the Rank 7 Sacred Grade Solid Pellet.

The medicinal power of this pellet was too harsh. It was much dangerous than the blend of Bao Ao and Jie Jie's liquors.

This furious power didn't give him time to counter. Shi Yan felt his entire body swollen. Green vessels bulged on his body like small tadpoles crawling under his skin, giving him an incomparable fearful look.

# Chapter 711: Quenching the body to the acme

---

The medicinal efficacy of the Rank 7 Sacred Grade Solid Pellet was as furious as an erupting volcano in Shi Yan's body. Countless streams of the medicinal power were wrecking havoc inside Shi Yan.

During this process, the torrentially powerful medicinal efficacy was running disorderly in Shi Yan's entire body, quickly refilling the consumed energy.

Sweat soaked him like summer rain, while vessels bulged under his skin. He roared from time to time, as he was using a large amount of Essence Qi to neutralize the pain, keeping his mind sound.

The power of the pellet was like wild horses escaping their leads, making his vessels and tendons enlarge, as if they were about to break at any second.

Shi Yan clenched his teeth, groaning and roaring to resist the pain.

After an unknown period, the power of the pellet started to cease. At this moment, half of his vessels and acupuncture points had been broken. Such a pain, that was beyond the range humans could endure, could put someone in a coma after a few seconds.

However, Shi Yan was abnormal indeed. Before he had arrived in the Grace Mainland, he had always sought for the utmost simulation and challenge. His patience to pain had surpassed normal people.

After he had started his martial cultivation, this ability of his had been doubled the second time. At the same time, Shi Yan's Immortal Martial Spirit had given him a solid support, which also made him more persistent.

Shi Yan didn't go unconscious. He still kept his calm and sound mind, scattering the medicinal efficacy into the flesh and blood of his whole body, giving his Essence Qi a big benefit.

After a while, the Rank 7 Sacred Grade Solid Pellet's medicinal efficacy was absorbed totally.

His smashed tendons and vessels started to be healed quickly under the powerful self-restoring ability of the Immortal Martial Spirit.

After an hour, all of his broken tendons and vessels had been connected. His spirit, soul, and Qi were all full. At the same time, his Blood Qi became more abundant.

Taking a deep breath, Shi Yan sat neatly with a dark face.

He understood that if he were just a normal warrior, under the excessively brutal power of the Solid Pellet, even if he could survive, it would be like getting skinned alive. Half of his vessels and tendons would be broken, which was something ordinary warrior couldn't endure.

He suddenly knew why the man that Hui Shuang had taken to them before couldn't even stand firmly.

The other's realm was higher than Shi Yan. He should be at the Second Sky of True God Realm. However, even though he was a strong warrior, under the mighty power of the Solid Pellet, his acupuncture points, vessels, tendons, and bones had cracked. Without the Immortal Martial Spirit, his wounds would get worse gradually.

That man had certainly been using the Solid Pellet. He had no choice. Without the Solid Pellet to restore his energy, he would die earlier.

Although the Solid Pellet could supplement his Blood Qi and energy, his body couldn't endure such powerful medicinal efficacy. His vessels, tendons, and bones would be broken. This was a

prolonged death. However, it was slower than the death of being drained by the snake.

There were two options, and both of them were fatal ones.

Without the Solid Pellet, the snake would exhaust him to death. Using the Solid Pellet without the powerful recovery power, it was a slow death when the vessels, tendons, and bones were all broken.

Shi Yan suddenly felt lucky that he had the Immortal Martial Spirit. Under deadly circumstances where he must die, he could find the way to survive.

The power of a Solid Pellet could refill his Blood Qi and make it abundant. At the same time, the Blood Qi absorbed by the snake wasn't as much as the amount the pellet had given him. Thus, the energy he took in was much more than the amount he had lost.

He became the beneficial party now.

A normal warrior at the True God Realm without the Immortal Martial Spirit could use a Solid Pellet after every three days. Moreover, they hardly restored their body's functions.

It was like the power of the Solid Pellet was enough for the little snake to absorb for three days. After three days, the warrior had to supplement more using the pellet. Or else, the snake would take the energy from his own body.

Shi Yan knew that it took him only half a day to absorb an entire Solid Pellet. At the same time, he could recover his tendons, vessels, and bones.

Shi Yan grinned. He pondered for a while, then took out another Solid Pellet, and swallowed it.

Another inhuman pain flooded him once again. This Solid Pellet had a formidable medicinal efficacy, which was wildly destroying Shi Yan's body. However, it also brought him a mighty Blood Qi.

This excessive amount of Blood Qi dispersed in his tendons,

vessels, bones, and inner organs. It was quenching his blood and flesh, making his body unbreakable.

In this chamber, Shi Yan was constantly using the Solid Pellets, pressing down his pain to supplement the lost amount of his Blood Qi and whet his body.

The Blood Qi taken by the snake from him was far behind the amount he had been supplemented. Later on, he forgot the existence of the small snake in his arm, as he could feel that the power of the snake wasn't too mighty to hurt his foundation.

Today, while Shi Yan was converting the power of the Solid Pellet, he knitted his brows.

A bottle of Solid Pellet had sixteen pieces. As Shi Yan was continually using the pellets, he had only two left.

If he didn't have more Solid Pellets to use, as time went by, the snake would draw all the Blood Qi he had taken in.

Frowning, Shi Yan was squeezing his brain for a solution.

He got it.

He took in two pellets at the same time. He tried to press down the double pain to scatter the medicinal efficacy of the pellets.

Right at the time the pellets were about to dissolve, Shi Yan roared madly like an enraged dragon. His voice extended, reaching one thousand miles away. "Help! Anybody, help!"

The medicinal power of the two pellets was wrecking havoc in his body. Strange noises arose from his vessels, tendons, and bones. Not long afterward, vessels and tendons of his entire body were broken. However, his bones weren't fractured, and he just had some cracks in the bones of his thighs and arms.

This was the result of using the Solid Pellet to train his body throughout this period.

After using more than ten Solid Pellets, the strength and

tenaciousness of his body had been upgraded the second time.

Granny and Hui Shuang came as they heard his voice. They appeared by the pond with dark countenances. At first glance, they saw Shi Yan struggling, balling his body in pain on the ground.

These two exchanged looks, slamming their brows together.

At this moment, the power of the two Solid Pellets in Shi Yan's body had almost dissolved completely. And, his tendons and vessels were almost shattered. Blood covered his whole body. Under the red blood, green vessels bulged under his skin, which gave him a fearful look.

"Brat, what the f\*ck you are yelling for?" Hui Shuang harrumphed, walking towards him. "You disturbed Granny while she was refining medicines. Do you want to die early?"

Shi Yan's face distorted. His eyes swept through Hui Shuang, falling on the hag. He spoke up with pain. "I've used up the Solid Pellets. If you want the snake to continue its ascension, please give me another bottle

The old woman's pupils shrank all of a sudden as if she were witnessing something absolutely abnormal. Her figure flashed, and she reached Shi Yan immediately. She extended her hand, touching Shi Yan's arm. Granny released a beam of her energy to survey the changes inside Shi Yan's body.

She immediately found that his tendons and vessels were all fractured, which was the sign of the Solid Pellet's effect. As the alchemist who had refined this pellet, she surely knew the power of the Rank 7 Sacred Grade Solid Pellet. She understood that an ordinary True God Realm warrior couldn't resist the mighty power of her pellet.

However, Shi Yan had consumed the whole bottle of Solid Pellet in such a short period, and he hadn't died yet. This surprised her a lot.

She closed her eyes, sending her Soul Consciousness into the small snake as if she were checking something.

Her eyes brightened as though she saw something so joyful. She couldn't hold her cheery laughter, then nodded and took out three bottles of Solid Pellet. The old woman gently threw them to Shi Yan. She smiled until her eyes squinted. "Take these three new bottles of Solid Pellets. They are all level Rank 7 Sacred Grade Solid Pellets. Take your time and use them all. Haha, not bad, kid. You have potential. I like it."

Hui Shuang gawked, looking at Granny disbelievingly. He muttered, "Granny, can he endure it? A warrior at the Third Sky of True God Realm could only resist the power of the three Solid Pellet bottles. Then, he would burst to death. Can he survive?"

Granny screwed up her eyes. She looked thrilled, waving her hands, but she didn't explain further. "He can. Move. We shouldn't disturb him."

Then, she took Hui Shuang and left.

The old woman and Hui Shuang left Shi Yan's place to go to a luxuriant green structure. She suddenly became serious, talking to the other. "There're five God Congealing Pellets. That kid has such abundant Blood Qi!"

"What?" Hui Shuang was surprised, his face unbelieving. "It's just been a short period. How could it produce five God Congealing Pellets?!?"

"I also found it unbelievable." The old woman smiled until she squinted. "This says that our kid has luxuriant Blood Qi in his body. Yeah, Fergie has brought me a good kid this time. Not bad at all! It could produce five pellets in not more than seven days. This progress is much faster than we've expected. This kid's a treasure. I have to protect him well to prevent him from dying early."

Hui Shuang was also happy. "Five God Congealing Pellets in

seven days! With this speed, we'll be rich soon. Our superiors will be happy too. Granny, you got a treasure this time. Congratulations!"

The old woman nodded with a cheerful face. "I hope this kid could endure longer. Then, we can fulfill the given task. Haha... I was worried that we couldn't catch up with the progress. I didn't expect that Little Fergie could find me such a treasure. Not bad. I'll deal with her problem immediately."

...

Granny and Hui Shuang were happy, and so was Shi Yan. Looking at the three bottles of Rank 7 Sacred Grade Solid Pellets, his face brightened.

Since Hui Shuang and Granny had left early, they didn't know that Shi Yan had a new change right after they were gone.

Shi Yan's shattered tendons and vessels were healed and connected once again. The medicinal power from the pellets was absorbed completely. A dark gold halo was moving miraculously on his body.

Squeezing three new bottles of Solid Pellet in his palms, Shi Yan cracked a smile, muttering to himself. "Perhaps, I can break through to the Second Sky of True God Realm shortly. It seems I have to thank Fergie for giving me a fortune in miseries."

Although he was showing his gratitude, his eyes were as cold as sharp blades, full of murderous intentions.



# Chapter 712: Miss Bi Rou

---

Soon, Shi Yan had consumed the two Rank 7 Solid Pellets.

The Essence Qi ancient tree in his body was luxuriant, while the energy in his flesh and blood had reached the threshold, from where he could break through again.

Shi Yan had killed the expert of the Dark Clan in the energy storm. Then, he used his Devouring power to absorb both the God Soul and soul altar of the other, which granted his own altar benefits, along with new perceptions of his powers in the new realm.

While staying in the meteorolite sea, he had always been using his powers, which enhanced his understanding and usage of the powers of Stars, Space, and Death and Life to a new level.

As his Essence Qi tree was full, and his realm had reached the threshold, Shi Yan knew that he could break through shortly to the Second Sky of True God Realm.

Now, he had a bottle of the Rank 7 Solid Pellets in his hands.

All of a sudden, Shi Yan thought that his life wasn't as tough as he had thought. The energy the snake had absorbed was just a little bit, compared to the amount he got supplemented. Thus, he didn't care about it anymore.

Now, he needed to wait for the right time to use the energy of the Essence Qi ancient tree to wash his altar and sublimate his powers, entering the new realm.

He had to wait until the experts in this Sixth Herbal Star left for a while. At least, he had to make sure that the King God Realm warrior wasn't present on the planet to seize the chance and break through. Afterward, he could run away.

During this period, Shi Yan always paid attention to the changes of the herbal star. He had released his Soul Consciousness to sense

everything.

Shi Yan found that the old woman and Hui Shuang didn't always stay in the Herbal Star. They would disappear for several days from time to time. They seemed to go somewhere to transport the materials, or to submit the pellets to their superiors.

Shi Yan was waiting. He was waiting for a good opportunity.

Time flew hurriedly. Shi Yan had consumed another bottle of Solid Pellets. The abundant power of the medicine had been scattered and stashed in his body, making his body immensely powerful.

Unfortunately, the medicinal power couldn't help him condense the Immortal Demon Blood. Otherwise, he would have tried his best to convert all the power of the pellets to condense the Immortal Demon Blood, which would help him move towards the direction Bao Ao and Jie Ji had told him – replacing the blood of his entire body.

According to those two demons, if he could replace his blood with the Immortal Demon Blood, he could have a tremendous breakthrough, receiving the formidable fighting ability of the Immortal Demon from Antiquity Era. At that time, his body would become invincible, with bursting power.

When Shi Yan was about to finish the last bottle of Solid Pellet, he had taken in three pellets at the same time. When the tendons and vessels of his whole body shattered, Granny and Hui Shuang appeared.

These two were frightened on seeing his performance, as he could consume three bottles of Solid Pellet in an amazingly short time. They all put on an astounded visage.

Granny picked up the small snake and took out some green pellets from its mouth. After she was done with the snake, she put it back into Shi Yan's body. Giving him three more bottles of

pellets, she left together with Hui Shuang with an odd countenance.

Waiting until these two left, Shi Yan sent his Soul Consciousness into the snake's body. He found an amazing thing.

That snake held a whole different world in its tummy. Many exquisite spiritual formations were carved inside the abdomen of the little snake. Besides, there were so many piles of herbs, other foundation materials, and the five-colored Perish Essence Crystals.

This little snake was like a cauldron. Those spiritual grass, herbs, and five-colored Perish Essence Crystals were the essential materials to refine some kind of pellets. The tremendous amount of Blood Qi the small snake had absorbed was poured into the center of the formation to provide the necessary energy to form the pellets in the center of the formation.

Shi Yan suddenly got it.

That hag had let this little snake stay in his body to make use of the abundant Blood Qi and energy in his body to refine some special pellets.

During this time, the formation inside the snake had condensed many pellets, which satisfied Granny a lot. That was why she didn't care about the anomaly on Shi Yan's body, but gave him more Solid Pellets. She thought it would make the small snake condense more pellets.

Shi Yan didn't know what kind of pellet the snake was making, or what its effects were. He didn't care about it much anyway.

Shi Yan was waiting for a chance in pain. He had to wait until all the strong King God Realm warriors on this Sixth Herbal Star went away to carry out his breakthrough, which would help him escape this place.

As Fergie was still here, Shi Yan felt happy discreetly, as he was considering making her regret for what she had done, once he

reached the Second Sky of True God Realm in the absence of the King God Realm expert.

Today, as he finished absorbing the power of the last Solid Pellet, he wanted to take a rest. All of a sudden, he saw a bronze steamship descending from the sky. That steamship was around three hundred meters long, with the same diamond mark on its massive body. Shi Yan could see many people standing on the ship.

The bronze steamship landed slowly. After it stood firm right next to the old woman and Hui Shuang, many people started to get off. They surrounded a white-haired old man, gathering with Granny's team.

Shi Yan didn't know what was happening. He felt tense, since he had been waiting for a chance for so long. However, the King God Realm experts hadn't left yet, and he had found more experts coming. It made Shi Yan upset.

...

After the big bronze steamship landed, several hundred warriors of various realms followed a young girl and an old man, walking towards Granny and Hui Shuang.

Fergie walked out of her room, standing respectfully together with the old woman and Hui Shuang to greet the people coming from the steamship. Not long afterward, a young lady and an old man reached Granny.

That old man was also an alchemist at Rank 3 Divine Grade, which was one grade higher than Granny. He was wearing gold clothes, which made his white head seem outstanding. His face was indifferent, as if he didn't care about anything else.

Standing next to him was a young girl wearing a sky-blue gown. She was so pretty that every young man of this herbal planet seemed to be enchanted by her beauty. They were all gazing at her, revealing the appearance of the beloved brother Pigsy. (He is one of

the three helpers of Xuanzang and a major character in the novel Journey to the West. He looks like a terrible monster, part human, and part pig, who often gets himself and his companions into trouble through his laziness, gluttony, and propensity for lusting after pretty women – TL.)

The young girl seemed to not be an ordinary woman, as she was walking in front of the Rank 3 Divine Grade alchemist. When Granny, Hui Shuang, and Fergie saw her, they took one step forward, greeting her with great respect. "Greetings, Miss Bi Rou."

That young girl was calm, standing there charmingly. She nodded gently, talking faintly. "We just passed by this place, so we thought to pay you a visit."

"Nita, I heard that you guys are making quick progress. Haha. I'm here to learn from your experience. It has just been three months. How could you produce thirty-six God Congealing Pellets?" The white-headed old man cracked a buck-toothed smile. "Our team's slow. I'm afraid our superiors will punish us. I hope you could help us a little bit."

That old man was also an alchemist of this force, and his position was as high as Granny's. He also had his own Herbal Star. His job was to refine pellets for the force and nurture new talents.

"Well, I don't have any secret. It's the same. I use the medicinal animal to produce the pellets using Blood Qi of the warriors to enhance the progress of producing the God Congealing Pellets." Nita squinted and continued, "Allard, your refining speed's always faster than the others. I think you appreciate me too much to come here and ask for experience."

The old man called Allard beamed a forced smile, shaking his head. "I couldn't find a good cauldron recently. It slows me down. It would be alright if I didn't agree to refine the pellets for Miss Bi Rou. But, I can't make it on time."

As she heard him mention Miss Bi Rou, Nita's face became

serious. She slightly bowed, talking to the young girl. "Miss Bi Rou, your father loves you that much. Why do you need to be hurried and use pellets?"

The maiden nodded begrudgingly. "I'm about to break through the Second Sky of King God Realm. When my brother got hurt, he had used all the pellets in our house. I'm in a hurry, which is why I came to visit grandpa Allard."

"What are the pellets you need?" Nita pondered for a while and then probed carefully, "God Developing Pellet?"

The maiden nodded, her eyes as bright and beautiful as stars in the sky. "If you can make me some, my father will repay you generously."

Nita's eyes brightened. As she knew the other's father was a generous character, she contemplated for a while. "It also requires the medicinal animal to produce them. And, it needs abundant Blood Qi. However, the Blood Qi mustn't be too strong. Medicinal animals can't stand the Blood Qi of King God Realm experts. At the same time, the Blood Qi of True God Realm warriors isn't enough. Not long after the medicinal animal has started to absorb the energy, the cauldron will explode. It's really annoying."

"If it isn't annoying, why would we need to find you?" Bi Rou smiled. "It's because we know that your progress of refining God Congealing Pellet's getting faster that we come to check it out. I wonder if you can help me out."

"My medicinal animal's now bearing the God Congealing Pellet spiritual formation. It takes time to change it." Nita frowned, as if she wanted to help her, but she found it a headache to do so.

"If it's only the matter of the medicinal animal, it isn't a problem." Bi Rou smiled shiningly as if she were the brightest star in the sky. "That's why we have grandpa Allard here, right? His medicinal animal has the God Developing Pellet formation. It also contains the other required ingredients for the God Developing

Pellet. We just need the mighty Blood Qi. As long as we could get the suitable cauldron, it wouldn't be a matter."

The old man bared his buck teeth, laughing evilly. "Nita, if you have a good cauldron, we aren't afraid to cooperate with you. You know how generous Miss Bi Rou's father is. If you help her, her father will remember your favor. How does it sound?"

Fergie became excited even before Nita had had time to say anything. She cried in a low tone. "Granny, the favor from Master Bi Tian is really big."

Hui Shuang also put on an excited visage, his eyes as bright as torches, as if doing a favor to Bi Tian was something worth their lives.

Bi Rou and Allard were all smiling, looking at Nita. They seemed to be sure that the old woman would agree with them, as their faith in the name of Bi Tian was strong enough.

Indeed, Nita considered for a while and then agreed with gritted teeth. "Alright. I will offer my cauldron to fulfill this task!"

"Can you take us to see the medicinal cauldron?" The maiden asked as she couldn't make sure about it.

"Not a problem." Nita nodded then smiled. "And, it's because of our little Fergie. Haha, follow me."

Then, they walked directly towards Shi Yan's place.

## Chapter 713: Shake and roam

---

Shi Yan stopped taking in the Solid Pellets, waiting silently with a solemn countenance. He could feel some strong warriors coming towards his place. As he didn't know what would happen to him, he had no choice but to prepare himself to counter his enemies.

Shortly, Nita, Hui Shuang, and Fergie brought Allard and Bi Rou to his place. They descended by the pond, gazing at him with bizarre looks on their faces.

Shi Yan suddenly felt like he was an animal in a zoo that the others were watching. He couldn't hold a snort in his mind.

While the others were studying him, Shi Yan also scrutinized the newcomers, especially Allard and Bi Rou.

Allard was also a Divine Grade alchemist, whose rank was one level higher than that hag. He had an arrogance that originated from his bones and marrows. Shi Yan's look then fell on the young maiden called Bi Rou, his face solemn.

Bi Rou was walking in the front of the others.

Even the hag – the owner of this place – had to walk behind her. And, the higher-ranked alchemist had to show respect when he looked at the young girl. From this minor detail, Shi Yan recognized that the young maiden should hold a high position.

That young girl was charming and exquisite, at the King God Realm. She stood in front of him with a noble aura of the royals. Her star-like eyes scanned him, making him irritated.

Bi Rou studied him for a while and then gently said, "Grandpa Allard, please check if he's suitable."

The old man bared his teeth, squeezing a disgusting smile from his face. He stepped forward, grabbing Shi Yan's arm without asking for his consent.



This old man's arm was like a heavy steel hook. While he was squeezing Shi Yan's arm, flows of energy expanded like gossamer, surveying here and there inside Shi Yan's body. The old man also sent his Soul Consciousness to the snake on Shi Yan's arm to sense the amount of Blood Qi the snake was taking in.

After sensing for a while, Allard had his eyes brightened. He turned around, talking to Nita. "How long has he been here? I meant... How long has he been your medicinal cauldron?"

"Half a year," Granny put on a bizarre look. She hesitated for a while and then explained. "He has used six bottles of Rank 7 Solid Pellet."

A gleam of astonishment sparkled in Allard's pupils. He pondered, then nodded and laughed, talking to Bi Rou. "Excellent!"

Bi Rou's eyes sparkled, revealing a contented smile. "Then, it's good." She paused, then shifted her look to Nita. "Give this man to me. I'll hand him back to you when I'm done with him. I have to go home now. By the time I get home, it's enough time to produce God Developing Pellets adequately."

"You want to take him away?" Nita was a little bit unpleasant, her face distorted. "Miss Bi Rou, it was not easy for me to have such an excellent medicinal cauldron. I still need him to produce God Congealing Pellets. If I can't submit the God Congealing Pellets on time, my superiors will punish me."

"It's not a big deal," Allard cracked a smile. "I will give you fifty God Congealing Pellets to take this cauldron. I won't let you fall in trouble."

Bi Rou frowned, showing that she wasn't so pleased. "Granny, you don't want to help me?"

Nita wore a bitter visage, shaking her head. "Forget it. You guys can take him. Anyway, after you are done with him, you have to return him to me. He's such a good cauldron, a treasure to

alchemists like us. I still want to use this kid to refine other kinds of pellets."

"Of course," Bi Rou smiled, talking neither slowly nor fast. "Then we've settled this. He will leave with us. Yeah, after I have gotten enough God Developing Pellets, I will send him back to you."

Nita agreed. She grabbed something in the air, and the five-colored small snake flew out of Shi Yan's arm, disappearing into her sleeve under a strange suction force.

After Granny retrieved the small snake, she talked to Allard. "This kid has a tremendous adaptive ability. He can endure the efficacy of the five-colored Solid Pellets. His Blood Qi's abundant... You don't need to worry about him."

Allard laughed contentedly. "Then it's good. So good! I've sensed a little bit. This cauldron's really good. Seems Miss Bi Rou's God Developing Pellets would be produced faster."

Shi Yan's face darkened. He was so enraged he wanted to curse out loud.

"Miss Bi Rou, I also want to return to the continent. Can I take a ride, too?" Fergie slightly bowed, her face longing.

"You can. And, it's because of you that I could find such an excellent medicinal cauldron." Bi Rou agreed happily. Then, she turned to Allard, "We should leave."

"Kid, we shall go," Allard bared his buck teeth again.

"Hui Shuang, take that kid to the ship," ordered Nita.

Hui Shuang took action on her words immediately.

Shi Yan felt so bitter inside, regretting that he wasn't strong enough. Or else, he would have slaughtered all those young and old people.

He understood that his time hadn't come yet. Those people were so strong. Even if he risked his life, his consequences wouldn't turn

so nice. Shi Yan could only be patient for now.

Hui Shuang didn't need to force him, as Shi Yan cooperated well. He followed behind Bi Rou and the alchemist called Allard to the bronze steamship. Under Hui Shuang's dark look, Shi Yan proactively got on board after Allard.

As soon as he could steady his body on the ship, he shuddered, and his face changed.

King God Realm experts on this giant bronze steamship were too many, much more than those on the Sixth Herbal Star. Besides Allard and Bi Rou, there were three other King God Realm experts, guarding the center and the two sides of the steamship. The unique aura of the King God Realm warriors irritated Shi Yan a lot.

"Grandpa Allard, arrange for him, will you?" The young maiden advised, then stretched her body lazily. Her charming mouth parted. "I'm tired. I'm going to take a rest. Wake me up when we reach the Drifting Gold Sand area."

She directly walked into the cabin. Her beautiful, straight legs took several steps and then she disappeared completely. Shortly, her aura was wholly hidden, as if she had entered a secluding place to cultivate.

"You're Fergie, right?" Allard threw a glance at the woman standing behind him, his face indifferent. "You get to the lower cabin down there. We have many vacant rooms. Don't be too polite. Find yourself a nice place to rest."

He arranged for Fergie, then shifted his look to Shi Yan, smiling nauseatingly. "You must have experience, so I won't explain much. Yeah, just do what you need to do for us, just like what you've done for Nita. If you're lucky enough, you can set yourself free later. You don't need to be a medicinal cauldron forever."

Then, he shouted, "Stinky worm, get you're a\*s here!"

A discontented grunt arose from the cabin. In the next moment,

a black light flashed, and a hundred-legged centipede with a gold back appeared. This centipede had a golden filament on its back, with a hundred jade-like fulgent legs. Its body was almost transparent, that people could see the mysterious formation carved inside the insect's trunk.

Allard pointed at Shi Yan, then scolded and laughed. "Move. I got a new host for you. He's a top-quality one. If you delay Miss Bi Rou's business, I'll use your body to cook soup."

The hundred-legged centipede hissed discontentedly, turning into a black light and entering Shi Yan's left arm. It stayed where the five-colored snake used to stay, and continued to use his Blood Qi to refine pellets.

This centipede could absorb Blood Qi much faster than the small snake. As soon as it took shelter inside Shi Yan's arm, the latter felt a head-splitting pain. Shi Yan couldn't help but take a deep breath, his face grimaced.

Allard observed Shi Yan's change from his eyes. Seeing him taking a deep breath and then quiet down shortly without any intestine-ripping-off scream, Allard nodded quietly. "Not bad, kid. You have the potential to be a good cauldron. Here, take five bottles of Solid Pellets to refill your energy. Yeah, whenever you're done with the pellets, just find me to take more. I'm sure I won't let you suffer from pellet shortage."

He paused for a while and then waved his hand. "You should get down there too, the bottom deck. Human cauldrons stay there. Without my permission, you are not allowed to wander."

Shi Yan was actually sending his greetings to eighteen generations of that old man's family in his head. However, he proactively descended each deck of this big steamship. After five decks, he didn't find the staircase anymore, so he stopped there.

This area had many small cabins. It seemed like all of them were occupied. Shi Yan could smell the pungent, stinky odor rising from

many cabins. People staying inside those cabins seemed to not have gone out for a long time or taken a shower. That was why they had such an unpleasant smell.

Shi Yan pinched his nose, trying to find a relatively clean cabin to stay. It had only one bed inside and nothing else.

Trying to press down the desire to vent out his anger, Shi Yan stayed idle in this cabin, trying to ignore the gross smell of this area. The first thing he wanted to do was to release his Soul Consciousness to survey this ship.

At the fifth deck of the steamship, Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness couldn't sense the operations of the upper decks. From the fourth deck upward, it seemed to have some kinds of barriers to prevent the energy of Soul Consciousness to probe around for sensing the activities and energy fluctuations of living things in those decks.

There were more than one hundred small cabins in this fifth deck, including eighty-two smaller rooms with living beings inside.

Those energy fluctuations of those living beings changed from time to time. Sometimes it was strong, and at other times, it was quite weak. It should be because of the change in Blood Qi. This spoke up the fact that this deck imprisoned all medicinal cauldrons, and the change in Blood Qi happened due to using pellets. While he was sensing the area, he often heard the painful whines and groans.

It was obvious that those cauldrons had the medicinal animals taking shelter. The pellets they were refining weren't high-quality, since the realms of those warrior-cauldrons weren't high. A rare number of them were at the True God Realm, while the majority of them were at the Spirit Realm and Sky Realm.

After a while, Shi Yan found that someone's energy fluctuation had disappeared. It meant that person had just died.

In the next moment, someone appeared on the staircase, coming to the room where that dead man dwelled. He threw the body out of the deck to prevent the pungent smell from polluting the air of the upper decks.

Shi Yan observed for a while. Then, he retrieved his Soul Consciousness as he decided not to wait furthermore. He must break through to the Second Sky of True God Realm as soon as possible.

Shi Yan didn't dare to waste more time.

# Chapter 714: Breaking through in adversity!

---

He didn't dare to break through when he was in the Sixth Herbal Star. It was because Shi Yan didn't know how valuable he was to Nita.

He was afraid that if he showed them his marvelous innate endowment, the others would be afraid of him, and then they would try to destroy him instead of giving him more time to grow.

This wasn't something he wanted to see.

However, after surveying this place for a while, he knew that his presence brought big benefits to Bi Rou.

There were many King God Realm warriors on this steamship. Even if he showed his talents by breaking through to the Second Sky of True God Realm, since the others needed him to produce the God Developing Pellets, they would have to keep him.

With this thought, he didn't need to ponder for more. Shi Yan wanted to advance to the new realm immediately.

It required expanding the Essence Qi ancient tree in order to break through to the Second Sky of True God Realm from the First Sky. Also, he needed to clean and whet his soul sacrificial altar to get a new good grasp of his power Upanishads.

To Shi Yan, it wasn't a big deal.

After so many days taking in the Solid Pellets, Shi Yan's Essence Qi ancient tree had been filled with abundant energy. And, after he had absorbed the soul altar of that Dark Clan's expert using the Devouring Original Essence Upanishad, the mysterious energy in his body was plentiful, which also enhanced his powers a little more.

Then, he had spent a good deal of time exploiting the five-colored Perish Essence for days and nights inside the meteorolites, which had improved his knowledge and usage of the three power

Upanishads.

Staying on the lowest deck of the steamship, Shi Yan took a Solid Pellet and tried to disperse its energy in his body. This made his spirit, soul, and Qi reach the peak again. After the Immortal Martial Spirit had healed his broken tendons and vessels, Shi Yan gained his consciousness and focused on expanding his Essence Qi ancient tree one more time.

It wasn't a difficult task, especially to a person who had been through extreme pains like him. The pain he had to endure while enlarging his Essence Qi ancient tree wasn't as intense as he had thought.

Many wisps of Essence Qi were moving disorderly in his stomach. His Blood Qi also scattered and gathered inside the Essence Qi tree, urging it to thrive.

The ancient tree was made of Essence Qi. When pouring energy into it to make it expand, it always brought an extreme pain along with it.

At the same time, pure energy from his stomach flowed into his Sea of Consciousness to wash his soul sacrificial altar.

Shi Yan's God Soul was calm and sound. He pulled himself together and concentrated on the tier of power Upanishads. Three Soul Seals appeared clearly in his God Soul in this magical realm. However, as Shi Yan was concentrating wholly to perceive the essence of his powers, he hadn't recognized it yet.

Time flew by quietly.

Gradually, energy fluctuations of power Upanishad appeared visibly from him. Starlight of the outer space that the naked eye couldn't see crept through the deck, falling on him.

Mysteries of Death and Life flowed in his heart. Inside this deck, energy fluctuation of Death and Life arose, creating a gravitational field that covered all human cauldrons.



Since those human cauldrons had low realms, they didn't have much knowledge of power Upanishads. In the coverage of the Death and Life Intent Domain, their lives were taken away unknowingly. Their vitality evaporated due to some mysterious power.

Shi Yan didn't know that his upgrading process had damaged the other human cauldrons in this deck badly. Still, Shi Yan was sinking in his realm perception state.

Slowly, fine wisps of space appeared in his cabin. The power of the chaotic space twirled fast and constantly, slashing down his small cabin.

As his Essence Qi ancient tree was expanding, the change of his body became clearer. Shortly, his God Soul sublimated. The energy moving around him started to cease, and the gravitational field disappeared.

His breaking through had caused death of half of the human cauldrons in this area. Soon, the experts on the upper decks got this information.

Allard woke Bi Rou up to report this situation.

"What?" Bi Rou looked sleepy-headed. She rubbed her eyes while trying to pull herself together. "You said that he suddenly broke through the next realm?"

Allard was wearing an odd countenance. He nodded. "It's unbelievable! As he's in the human cauldron state, his Blood Qi's constantly taken. However, he hasn't been exhausted, but broke through a new realm. This man is... really inexplicable."

Bi Rou's jade-like face was full of surprise. She contemplated for a while and then said, "People who could break through in the human cauldron state are all dangerous characters. Does he actually come from a low-grade continent?"

"Who knows?" Allard shook his head, "Fergie found him.

Perhaps, we should ask to make it clear. If that boy comes from a high-grade continent and Fergie captured him while he was traveling, later on when he escapes or his seniors find him, it would be big trouble."

"Get Fergie here!" Bi Rou said resolutely.

Allard nodded and left quickly. Not long after that, he brought Fergie, who was also surprised.

"I'm sure he comes from a low-level continent, because he didn't even know the three major realms of the God Realm. Accompanying him were some experts at the True God Realm. They were at the low realm as well." Fergie also recognized how serious it could be, so she hurried to ensure the others. "I don't dare to deceive Miss Bi Rou. Don't worry; he won't cause trouble."

Hearing her explanation, Bi Rou could ease her mind. She pondered for a while and then talked to Allard, "You should keep an eye on him. Although he comes from a low-level continent, we can't underestimate him. You have to settle this matter. We will never let him leave alive. Or else, when he gets stronger, he will be a headache for us."

Allard nodded heavily, "I understood."

"Alright, I'm going to rest more. Call me when we get to the Drifting Gold Sand area. And, focus on him!" Bi Rou advised the old man then left.

...

Since his Essence Qi ancient tree had expanded, his power Upanishads were all cleaned, and his God Soul had sublimated, Shi Yan advanced sufficiently, reaching the Second Sky of True God Realm.

At this moment, Shi Yan felt exhausted. He found his Essence Qi ancient tree was drained again, but it also had grown a new large section, which required a tremendous amount of energy to fill it

up.

As he wanted to use the Solid Pellet, he felt something, frowning while looking ahead of him.

A tender figure descended, looking at him with complicated eyes. It was Fergie.

She steadied her body in Shi Yan's cabin, frowning while gazing at him. After a while, she said, "Don't blame me. I was reluctant in doing that. I left Anmou on my own. If he reports me, my superiors won't spare me. Only handing you to Granny would give me a way out. Granny would help me beg for mercy, so that I can continue to live."

Shi Yan kept his dark and sinister visage, but didn't say a word.

"Your innate endowment isn't bad, with an enormous Blood Qi. You won't die after being the human medicinal cauldron," Fergie continued. "Surviving in outer space isn't easy at all. Just consider that I've given you a big hand. You know, warriors from low-grade continents would have a pathetic ending when they come here eventually. You're good here. Many people were killed right when they saw outer space."

She understood that Shi Yan had a lot of mysterious yet marvelous stuff on his body. As she couldn't calm her nerves, she came here to check.

"Are you done?" Shi Yan waited until she finished her monologue and then asked with mocking eyes.

Fergie nodded.

"Then get the f\*ck off!"

Fergie's face changed in fright. She became colder, gazing at him maliciously. "You don't know how to consider the situation. I think you can't leave this place alive."

Shi Yan laughed faintly with his dark face, but he didn't reply.

Fergie got embarrassed. She nodded and didn't talk more, leaving the place to her cabin in the upper deck to rest.

Shi Yan's eyes were cold and gloomy, gazing at her figure until she disappeared.

Afterward, Shi Yan pursed his lips, beaming a fiendish grin as he took out the Solid Pellet and swallowed it. It would help him refill the exhausted Essence Qi ancient tree and restore his power, bringing him back to his peak.

He couldn't see the sun, moon, or stars from this place, so Shi Yan didn't know how much time had passed. However, from time to time, he found that one of the human cauldrons died. Their bodies would be thrown directly to outer space, being torn apart by the furious energy storm there.

Shi Yan didn't know the destination of this giant bronze steamship. He wanted to know, but he couldn't ask anyone.

Around him were so many human medicinal cauldrons, but they were all struggling to survive under the torture of the medicinal animals. Even though Shi Yan had asked them many times, they had no extra strength to answer even a single question.

Today, Shi Yan had absorbed the medicinal efficacy of three pellets. After he had taken them in all, he felt quite full. He walked out of his small cabin, strolling back and forth in this lowest deck. Sometimes, he pushed open the door of a cabin to check.

Each cabin held a warrior of different races. Shi Yan found members of the Dark Spirit Clan, the Ghost Mark Clan, Human Clan, and even the Dark Clan. Most of them didn't have a high realm.

They were all bony, and looked more like the skeleton of a crying ghost covered by a skin coat. Those people didn't look like living beings anymore.

This was caused by losing too much blood and flesh.

Those people were dying slowly in their cabin. The medicinal animals would suck all of their Blood Qi, or the pellets would destroy their body's functions.

When they saw Shi Yan, there was no light of life in their eyes anymore. Despair and death covered them. They didn't answer Shi Yan's questions or want to utter a word. As they knew they would never escape this place, their hearts had died even before their bodies.

After entering more than ten rooms, the same scene repeated in front of Shi Yan's eyes. He felt his heart sink to the bottom. His face became more grimaced.

The force that Fergie belonged to didn't have any humanity worth mentioning. To produce pellets, they could use living beings to be their cauldrons, using their blood and flesh to feed the medicinal animals. All were to make some pellets.

The reality was always cruel. The strong could do anything they wanted, and no one could stop them. If one wanted to detach from their restraint, one had to be stronger than them. Only when one could scare the other, one could live better than them.

Shi Yan sauntered inside the deck, entering each cabin and asking people staying inside. If the other didn't answer, he would leave to another cabin.

Soon, Shi Yan reached the last cabin. Suddenly, he let out a surprised scream, as if he had found something strange.

# Chapter 715: Raging Flame Star Area

---

This cabin wasn't similar to the other rooms, as Shi Yan couldn't push it open, with its door having a barrier. Also, this dark green door was somehow specially customized with a faint halo glowing and moving on it.

The power of the barrier on this door had prevented Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness from sensing the interiors. In other words, Shi Yan had missed this cabin all this while.

Shi Yan immediately confirmed that the one inside this cabin was a special human cauldron. He couldn't press down his curiosity, studying the barrier on the door. Shi Yan sent his Soul Consciousness to observe the structure of the barrier.

Making barrier was a method of using energy to build formations. Different energy intensity levels would create different functions of a barrier.

Some barriers were best at defending, while other barriers could counterattack fiercely. Shi Yan studied the barrier on the door and found that it was portrayed quite complicatedly. It was formed by five different types of energies distributed equally, but the energy in each section was different, making it form a magical barrier.

Shi Yan couldn't understand this barrier, so he couldn't resolve it. At the same time, he wasn't sure if he could break it with force.

Even if he could do that, he didn't dare to take risks. Because once he did that, the master who made this barrier would know about it via his Soul Consciousness immediately.

If he couldn't get in, he wouldn't spend more time thinking about how to beat this barrier. Shi Yan contemplated in front of this door for a while and then released a beam of his Soul Consciousness with Space power, piercing through the door.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness had been added with Space power,

so he didn't need to worry about being blocked by the barrier. Shortly, his wisps of Soul Consciousness got to the cabin through the barrier on the door.

However, it was strange that his Soul Consciousness couldn't see the interior of the cabin. He could only feel it was a gray and gloomy area, having the flow of energy of some living being.

That living being found him shortly, as a thought was sent to his Soul Consciousness. "Who are you?"

Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then explained. "I'm one of the human cauldrons in this deck. They imprisoned me to produce the God Developing Pellets for the owner of this steamship – Bi Rou. I'm from a low-level continent. I have no idea about outer space. I don't know the owner of this ship either. I have no clue about this world."

"... medicinal cauldrons..." The other's thought was paused for a long while before talking again. "As you can still walk around, your condition isn't bad at all. Seems you still can survive for a while."

Shi Yan forced a smile, not knowing how to continue this topic.

"What realm are you at?" The other asked since he saw Shi Yan staying silent.

"Second Sky of True God Realm," Shi Yan answered honestly.

"Only the Second Sky of True God Realm? Sigh, too low." The other seemed to be disappointed. "At this realm, you have no hope to escape. If they want to kill you, it will be as easy as flipping one's hand. You will have no chance to escape your human medicinal cauldron state."

Shi Yan felt bitter. "How about you? Are you a human cauldron too? Why have they isolated you with such a barrier?"

Hearing his questions, the other seemed to be enraged. His Soul Consciousness was also disorderly. Suddenly, he got something. "How could your Soul Consciousness... get here?"

"My Soul Consciousness is a bit unique. The Upanishad I've cultivated isn't the same as normal people. The energy of barriers can't stop me." Shi Yan was still cautious as he didn't talk about his Space power. Since he didn't know the other's identity, and after the wild scheme Fergie had set him up with, he was cautious towards everybody.

"Although the barrier doesn't stop you, we can only talk," The other calmed down. "You shouldn't stay here. Don't let the others find your operation. They will trouble you."

Shi Yan put up guard on hearing the other's advice. He nodded, returning to his small cabin. Despite the space between them, he could still contact with the other.

"I want to know the situation of this ship. Which force does it belong to? How strong is this force?"

"You're just a cauldron at the Second Sky of True God Realm. Even if you know about it, what you can do? Do you think you can escape your destiny?"

"We still need to try. Without trying, should we accept our fate?"

"This steamship belongs to the General Commander of the 'Underworld League.' Underworld League in the Raging Flame Star Area's the strongest force of the strongest forces. They have so many hotshots, and experts are everywhere. Bi Tian's one of the three General Commanders. He is at the Original God Realm. He has many King God Realm subordinates. Bi Rou's the owner of this steamship, and Bi Tian's daughter." The other seemed to be too bored, so he explained to Shi Yan in detail. "Underworld League in the Raging Flame Star Area has more than one hundred life stars and many mineral stars. It's a mighty force. People that belong to this force have a diamond-like mark on their foreheads. I think you know this already."

"Yes, I know. But what are the life stars?"



"You're from a low-level continent indeed," The other disdained him. "The stars that have heaven and earth energy moving around, suitable for living beings to live and cultivate are considered life stars, just like the continent you come from. People can't live on the mineral stars. Well, it isn't suitable for living beings to cultivate and break through. However, the mineral stars have many types of ores and crystals that attract people more than the life stars."

Shi Yan wanted to ask more, but he suddenly retrieved his Soul Consciousness, staying quietly in his small cabin.

Not long afterward, Allard appeared on the staircase. He bared his teeth, then grinned and waved his hand towards Shi Yan. The hundred-legged centipede flew out of Shi Yan's arm immediately.

Allard surveyed his centipede for a while, then his eyes brightened up happily. He laughed contentedly while nodding his head. "Not bad, not bad! Your progress is quite fast."

Afterward, he took out some God Developing Pellets from the centipede. Next, in front of Shi Yan, he fed the hundred-legged centipede many medicinal ingredients, before letting it return to Shi Yan's arm.

Leaving him three new Solid Pellet bottles, Allard squinted at him. "Kid, behave and produce medicines for me. After it's all done, perhaps I won't return you to Nita. I will set you free directly."

Allard left with great satisfaction.

Shi Yan's face was as calm and cold as water, his eyes sharp and chilled. After the man left, he snorted.

After Allard had left, he continued to use Solid Pellet to increase his Blood Qi and refill the consumed Essence Qi of his ancient tree. He was quite relaxed though.

After each time he consumed the medicinal power of the Solid

Pellets, while the Immortal Martial Spirit was healing his body, he would talk to the man in the other cabin. Through him, Shi Yan got more information of the Raging Flame Star Area.

According to him, the Raging Flame Star Area consisted of several hundred life stars and many mineral stars. Different races and living beings were dwelling together there. The Underworld League was an extremely mighty force. It was considered the best of the best forces in the Raging Flame Star Area.

The Underworld League had strict rules on ranking. Besides the Hegemon, it had three other General Commanders guarding the other places, and around ten League Guard Elders. Rumors said that they were all experts with profound realms and extraordinary cultivation base.

There was no racial discrimination in the Raging Flame Star Area and the Underworld League. Different races could live together. And, as long as they were strong enough, they could earn positions and power.

Just like the three General Commanders and the League Guard Elders, each of them had their own life stars. Some even had several life stars and mineral stars. They could govern the stars and take all the harvest.

Shi Yan focused on the life stars. He understood that each life star was like the Grace Mainland, which was full of heaven and earth energy, pretty suitable for warriors to live and cultivate.

Life stars were classified according to their energy cycle. Just like the ranking of blacksmiths and alchemists, life stars were ranked in the scale of seven. Level 7 was the highest level, and level 1 was the lowest level. They even had someone specialized in measuring the energy of a life star to classify it.

Life stars that had come to an end of its energy cycle like the Grace Mainland, according to the ranking of the Raging Flame Star Area, were considered the lowest level, as they were about to drain

up and be abandoned.

Shi Yan became curious to know more about the Raging Flame Star Area, listening to the other's explanation. He had a beam of hope growing in his heart.

He had a dream that he could escape one day and have his own life star. At that time, he could bring his family and friends from the Perpetual Night Forest in the Grace Mainland there for a better life.

The Raging Flame Star Area had some special vehicles that could travel across the meteorolite sea without being affected by the brutal energy storms of outer space. If ordinary warriors could stay in those vehicles, they could also escape the storm.

This bronze steamship was that sort of a vehicle. Since it had been portrayed with so many mysterious and complicated formations, it could resist the furious energy storm.

If he could have a life star and a vehicle like this one, he could pick up his family and friends in the Perpetual Night Forest.

With this thought, Shi Yan had found an exit for people in the Grace Mainland through his trip to the foreign land. However, the premise was that he had to escape the Raging Flame Star Area.

On some day later on, when he had just finished refilling his Blood Qi using the Solid Pellet, and while he was about to contact the other, he felt a small tremor come from under his feet. After that, the ship stopped moving.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness went through the barrier to the cabin of the other. The other sent his thought to Shi Yan first. "Help me with this."

Shi Yan was surprised. He pondered for a while and then probed, "What?"

"We're supposed to arrive at the Drifting Gold Sand Area. That's why the ship stops. Later on, when you have a chance, help me

collect some drifting gold sand. It's useful to me."

"Drifting Gold Sand?" Shi Yan frowned, using his Soul Consciousness to ask the other. "I don't get it. What kind of sand is it? What's it good for?"

"It's the fine gold sand. We have so much out there. This fine sand has a strong erosive ability. Perhaps, it could melt the barrier confining me. You should be careful. Don't let the others realize your plan. If I can get out of here, you'll receive good things for sure."

"I can try, but I'm not sure," He paused and then continued, "Is it dangerous to collect the drifting gold sand?"

"Can you expose yourself in outer space?"

"Yes."

"So, it's not dangerous. Remember, don't let anybody know about it. Otherwise, both of us will be in big trouble."

"Sure."

After they had finished, Shi Yan walked out of his cabin, putting on a faint visage and then climbing the staircase to reach the main deck. Although he looked natural, he was discreetly cautious.

# Chapter 716: Big business deal

---

Many warriors were standing on the main deck of the giant bronze steamship. Allard and Bi Rou were also there, walking back and forth casually.

Big rocks floated outside the ship, glistening with a glorious golden hue. Bizarre fine sand flowed from those golden rocks. Following the wind, grains of this kind of fine gold sand scattered everywhere.

At first glance, Shi Yan felt like he was floating in a fine gold sand sea. Those fine gold grains sparkled with a dazzling gold hue while floating slowly here and there.

From a further distance, fulgent stars shone radiantly like numerous diamonds inlaid in the universe, giving him a calm and peaceful feeling.

Shi Yan could see some people standing on the gold rocks and hitting them.

Those people had different realms, but the lowest realm was the Sky Realm. Most of them had the Spirit Realm or True God Realm cultivation base. Also, Shi Yan saw a King God Realm expert, who had a diamond-shaped mark on his forehead. He seemed to be supervising the others, as he was screaming continually.

Watching for a while, Shi Yan knew that this Drifting Gold Sand Area was another mining area of the Underworld League. Those warriors with the relatively low realms were the miners, collecting drifting gold sand for the League.

This mining area surely belonged to Bi Tian, one of the General Commanders of the Underworld League. As soon as Bi Rou appeared, the King God Realm warrior came and greeted her. Then, he reported her something, showing her a logbook.

Bi Rou checked it for a while, then nodded and waved her hand.

Next, that King God Realm expert pitched his voice high like thunder, asking the miners to bring the drifting gold sand they had collected. They brought over the sand contained in a conical barrow.

The miners then pushed the conical barrows, which were full of gold sand, towards the fourth deck of the big steamship.

Soon, Allard saw Shi Yan. He frowned, walking towards him with an unhappy countenance. "Why are you up here?"

"It's too boring down there. I'm here to take some fresh air and widen my knowledge." Shi Yan wore an indifferent face, watching here and there deliberately. "Does it affect your work?"

Allard snorted, gazing at him. Seeing him doing nothing strange, he continued, "Just watch. Do not do anything. Otherwise... harrumph!"

Shi Yan acted naturally. He nodded but didn't answer, just watching the drifting gold sand around, thinking about how to collect it.

After Bi Rou had arranged everything, she peeked at him from a distance. Then, it seemed she got interested in him, walking towards him directly. When she stood firmly in front of him, she spoke up with an arrogant face. "You said that you're from a low-grade continent. What's it called?"

"The Grace Mainland," Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then replied honestly.

"The Grace Mainland?" A skeptical gleam flashed in Bi Rou's pupils. Searching in her head for a while, she then shook her head, talking faintly. "Never heard of it before. How could you get to the Meteorolite Sea?"

"Using a bone formation made of the skeletons of many beasts. After we got here, the energy of those bones had been consumed completely. They all turned into ashes and scattered." Shi Yan's

face was natural. He didn't conceal anything, because he also wanted to know the location of the Grace Mainland, and hoped that he could return someday to pick up his family and friends.

"Your innate endowment isn't bad. You could break through to the Second Sky of True God Realm while being the medicinal cauldron. It has proven your competence." Bi Rou lifted her head, revealing her snow-white neck while frowning her dark brows. "You don't need to blame heaven or earth. Everybody who comes from the low-level continents has to go through strenuous training. Many people become slaves, miners, or medicinal cauldrons not long after they get here. If their fortune isn't good, they will be killed shortly. If you can help me produce more God Developing Pellets, I agree not to send you back to the Sixth Herbal Star."

Shi Yan sneered in his heart. He had no trust in people in the outer space. However, his words were different. "Thank you. I, of course, will do my best."

"Yeah, just arrange things for yourself. Be honest, and I won't mistreat you," Bi Rou nodded, "If you're lucky enough, I'll introduce you to join the Underworld League. At that time, you will get rid of being the medicinal cauldron, and you can step on the Raging Flame Star Area."

Shi Yan cracked a smile but didn't answer.

Bi Rou didn't continue this topic. She called for Allard and the three King God Realm experts on the steamship to arrange stuff for the next journey.

Shi Yan watched everything carefully. Then, when they didn't notice, he took the chance and returned to the exit door leading to the staircase, waiting there. A miner pushed the conical barrow passing by him. Looking at the drifting gold sand in the barrow, a gleam of light sparkled in his eyes.

The drifting gold sand was contained in the fourth deck of the

ship, right above his cabin. That deck seemed to be a massive container for storing the ores or other mineral goods they'd been collecting along the way. Then, they would be transported to the life star of Bi Rou's father.

He quietly descended the staircase, leaning against the wall to make way for the miners pushing the drifting gold sand to the fourth deck. Three King God Realm warriors were guarding the door to that warehouse. Their sharp eyes opened wide, scrutinizing everybody to prevent them from stealing the drifting gold sand.

Shi Yan'd stayed aside and observed for a while. He touched his forehead, and a flame ignited on the soul altar. The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame appeared, with its aura concealed as it discreetly hid behind a barrow.

In Shi Yan's heaven flames altar, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was the most cunning one. It was good at stealthy concealing, and its unique energy waves could prevent the others from detecting it.

Shortly, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame got back to him, still hiding its entity, disappearing into his sleeve. A handful of drifting gold sand stayed in his sleeve, and no one detected this operation.

His face was still calm, mounting down the staircase neither slowly nor fast, towards the lowest deck of the ship. The other three King God Realm experts guarding the fourth deck scanned their eyes on him thoroughly, but found nothing strange. Once Shi Yan disappeared into the staircase leading to the lowest deck, they retrieved their scrutinizing look.

Shi Yan got into his cabin and closed the door. He didn't hurry to contact the other. First, he stashed most of the drifting gold sand into his Storage Ring, leaving just a pinch of sand in his palm.

The fine gold sand murmured like water. This sand had strong



erosive power, but it didn't aim at the flesh and blood. Nothing strange happened to his palm. However, as soon as he put some grains on the corner of the room, it suddenly emitted a gray smoke, as if it were eroded.

Shi Yan changed his face as he found that the characteristics of this sand were quite strange. Except for flesh and blood, all other kinds of matter would be eroded.

Shi Yan didn't know what kind of treasures needed drifting gold sand to be fabricated. He pondered for a while and then contacted the other, sending a message. "I got it."

"Did you get caught?"

"No."

"Good! When the ship departs again, you should rub the drifting gold sand on the barrier on the door of my cabin."

"What do I get for that?"

"If I can get out of here, you can escape this ship, and you don't need to be a human cauldron anymore."

"I'm not hurried. I don't want to leave for now. Although that medicinal animal's taking my Blood Qi constantly, it doesn't affect me much. It's not the best offer you've given me. You should think carefully to see if you have anything worth me risking my life to help you. If I help you and the others figure it out, I will be put in misery. If the benefits aren't big enough, I won't take such risks."

"You! Why are you so strange? You want to be a human cauldron? Didn't you count how many human cauldrons have died on this deck?"

"Of course, I know. Well, they aren't me. They will die, but I won't. Anyhow, if they find out that I helped you, I would surely die then. And, when you get out of your cabin, are you sure you can escape this ship? What's your realm? I have no clue about you. I don't want to step into your trap."

After the experience he gained from Fergie, Shi Yan always put up guard against everybody. He would never listen to only one side, and would never act rashly.

"What do you want?"

"What can you offer me?"

The other kept silent for a while. Shi Yan wasn't hurried to send another message, giving the other time to consider.

"I can see you're interested in the life stars. After we're done with this, I'll give you a rank two life star as payment. What do you think?" The other pondered for a long while and then sent him his thought eventually.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. "You have got life stars? How could you have life stars?"

"Harrumph! I'm Prince Du Feng of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. What's strange if I have my life stars given by my father?"

"Prince? You are a prince? Why are you captured and imprisoned here?"

The other quieted down.

From the situation of the Raging Flame Star Area the other had told him, Shi Yan knew the Dark Firmament Divine Nation was like the Underworld League. It was an extremely mighty force in this star area.

The Dark Firmament Divine Nation had many life stars and mineral stars. Many strong experts had exploited the old royal regime to stand firmly on the Raging Flame Star Area. The King of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation was one of the most powerful experts of the Raging Flame Star Area. He was extremely dangerous for sure!

The temptation of a life star was tremendous to Shi Yan. If he could have a life star of his own, he could bring all of his family

and friends here and solve the most difficult problem of the Grace Mainland – the shortage of energy.

Thus, he pondered for a while and then sent the message again. "How can I believe you?"

"How could Du Feng betray his own words?" The other seemed to be enraged. "It's just a rank 2 life star. You think I can't give it to you? Why do I need to deceive you?"

"If you change your mind, I would have nothing I could do... How about... you use your ancestor's name to pledge? Although it's not so strong, it's better than nothing. I have to take big risks for you. You should make a pledge to ease my mind."

The other got enraged badly. "You're just a cauldron at the True God Realm. You dare to force me using my ancestor's name to pledge?"

"If you can't make a solemn promise, we have nothing to continue. You can wait there. I'm not hurried at all."

"Alright, you're good, b\*stard!" The other calmed down his rage. He resentfully used the name of the ancestor of his Dark Firmament Divine Nation to make a vow, saying that when he could escape this place, he would give Shi Yan a rank 2 life star as his payment.

"Deal." Shi Yan thought for a while. After he could confirm that the other's wording had nothing wrong, he sent the other his approval.

# Chapter 717: The God Domain

---

Shi Yan applied the drifting gold sand equally on the corners of Du Feng's door. Seeing the drifting gold sand eroding the barrier little by little, yet not causing any big commotion, Shi Yan could finally ease his mind.

In the next period of time, he still used the Solid Pellet to recover his power and train his body. Shi Yan didn't notice how fast time had passed.

After an unknown period of time, Shi Yan suddenly detected Du Feng's Soul Consciousness proactively come to him from his cabin.

Shi Yan was startled. He crept to Du Feng's cabin and found that the drifting gold sand had eroded a small corner of the barrier. Du Feng's Soul Consciousness had sneaked out through that tiny corner.

"You can get out already?" Shi Yan was struck. "Alright, what's your realm? Even if you can get rid of the barrier, will you be able to leave?"

"At this moment, I can't. Anyway, since the barrier is torn, I can send messages to you. Not long afterward, people from my Dark Firmament Divine Nation will come for me." Du Feng grinned fiendishly. "Wait until the hotshots of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation come. I will make that b\*tch wish to die rather than to live!"

"Bi Rou?"

"Who else then?"

"Why have they captured you?"

"Doesn't matter to you!" Du Feng was so embarrassed that he got angry. "You don't need to poke your nose in other things. What I've promised you, I will do."

Shi Yan nodded. He didn't continue the topic but returned to his cabin.

Not long after that, Allard came down there another time to harvest the God Developing Pellets from the hundred-legged centipede. He put more materials into the insect, then gave Shi Yan five more bottles of the Solid Pellet to help him recover his body.

Shi Yan was happy and relatively free. He felt that it wasn't too harsh to live here. Every day, he used the Solid Pellets to restore his Essence Qi and whet his body, which would help him improve his powers. Eventually, Shi Yan found that his realm had been advanced greatly. Such life where he didn't need to worry about the outer world and just focus on his cultivation was quite useful to his martial path.

Fergie hadn't come down here anymore. Since Shi Yan had scolded her, she got it and didn't visit him to be scolded again.

However, Bi Rou would come to check him from time to time as if she were interested in him. She was curious that he had never been exhausted as a human medicinal cauldron. Quite the contrary, he had been progressing well day by day.

Shi Yan had no good feelings for this lady. Every time he talked to her, he just wanted to finish it quickly. Anything he could conceal about himself, he had tried his best to hide it all. If he couldn't hide, he would try to lie to make the lady confused.

Today, he stayed on the lowest deck of the steamship and took in three Solid Pellets at the same time. His spirit, soul, and Qi had gained a lot of benefits from this kind of pellets. Shi Yan was glad to feel the wild, mighty power in his body.

Right at this minute, the giant bronze steamship suddenly had a grumbling explosion, as if a heavy object had just hit the ship. It trembled hard when an energy fluctuation as heavy as a collapsing mountain burst off on the deck of the ship. It woke Shi Yan up

with a pale face.

Du Feng immediately sent him a surprising message. "My men are here! Haha! I want to peel off the face of that b\*tch this time!"

Shi Yan was struck. He understood that he finally had a chance to overturn his situation. He didn't dare to crane his head out of the cabin, just waiting in silence at his spot.

The ship trembled harder. Tremendous energy attack bloomed from the upper decks. Such earth-shaking energy movement seemed to be strong enough to destroy an entire planet. It was so strong that it made Shi Yan's soul tremble uneasily.

BOOM!

A massive impact transmitted from the deck under his feet. This bronze steamship seemed to be pierced through as the intense gust of outer space started to flood in, wrecking many small cabins.

Many human cauldrons were smashed under such formidable pressure.

Shi Yan discolored a little bit. He understood that staying on the deck wasn't a wise move. But, since he didn't know the direction of the other party's attacks, if they hit his area, he wouldn't have a chance to dodge. Perhaps, he would be killed instantly.

Shi Yan hesitated for a while. Then, he walked out of the cabin and climbed the staircase to reach the main deck of this massive bronze steamship.

Du Feng didn't make any big commotion in his small room. He was still waiting.

Shi Yan got to the main deck with a dark face, but his eyes were sparkling.

The outer space was dark and frosty. Stars twinkled from far away, while energy storms were wreaking havoc around the ship.

Bi Rou, Allard, and the other three King God Realm experts were

fighting the enemies, which were probably the armed force of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. They were wearing orange fighting clothes and gears, holding different sharp weapons in their hands. Those weapons were huge, around three or four meters long, exuding a brutal lethality.

Those people didn't come from the same race, but they wore the same uniform. The energy waves rippled from them were formidable. This group had five King God Realm warriors.

Those five experts were enough to stop Bi Rou, Allard, and the three King God Realm warriors of their side. Powers from their weapons were urged, which were the most profound power, creating the God Domain. They were like the most furious energy storms, destroying everything on their way.

Only the King God Realm warrior, who had the God Body and a certain control over the power Upanishads, could create the God Domain.

Each God Domain was different, but they were all sharp and lethal. One of them had the God Domain of Metal class, which was almost unbreakable.

Wherever the God Domain passed by, the rigid deck of the ship exploded, as if many sharp sabers had slashed on it. Such tyrannical energy movement had scared Shi Yan seriously.

He understood that if the God Domain covered him, even his abnormal sturdy body wouldn't be able to stand a blow.

Allard was covered inside the God Domain. He had to use pellets continually to supplement the consumed energy. However, he couldn't endure for long. His body sparked like a block of metal being polished. He looked totally distressed.

The others had different classes of God Domains due to different power they had perceived. Their Domains also had different effects.

It seemed like Bi Rou was using Water techniques. After she released her God Domain, it was like she was covered by an immense, shoreless ocean. Whenever the others' attacks reached her, they would be neutralized by the water power. After getting through many layers, all attacks were weakened to the point they could do no harm to her.

While they were engaging in a furious battle, no one had paid attention to Shi Yan, who had just got out of the deck. Shi Yan had time to observe the situation.

On this massive bronze steamship, there were many warriors under Bi Rou's order. Around five hundred warriors with low realms were scared off by the God Domains. They had tried to stay as far away from the God Domains as possible.

Fergie was also there. She hid in the back area of the deck to watch the things happening on the main deck. Seeing the God Domain about to reach this area, she proactively moved aside to get rid of its coverage.

Seeing Shi Yan, a strange gleam appeared in her eyes, but she didn't persist her glance on Shi Yan as she had to change her location constantly.

Hovering not far away from the big bronze steamship was a dazzling amethyst war chariot, around five meters wide and ten meters long. It seemed to be cut and fabricated from a whole block of pure amethyst. In this dark space, it radiated gloriously with a blazing halo.

There was a crown image portrayed on the top of the amethyst war chariot. Sitting leisurely under the crown was a charming and elegant figure. She was covered in layers of purple light that made it hard to see her real appearance. She seemed to not pay any attention to the battle over there. Shi Yan could see that she was eating some kind of fruits relaxedly.

Shi Yan could notice that Fergie had always glued her eyes on the



amethyst war chariot. Her face changed continually with deep fear.

Even though Bi Rou and Allard were engaging in a fierce fight, they had to keep an eye on that purple chariot. Fright sparkled in their eyes, as if they knew the woman sitting there was really dangerous.

"My good brother, you want to hide away until when, eh? Get you're a\*s out, quick!" A lazy voice that sounded like it came from heaven arose melodiously from the amethyst war chariot. It seemed to be able to run straight to human souls and enchant them. Her voice made people's souls sink into its beautiful melody and never want to get out.

A quick enchantment appeared in Shi Yan's eyes. But he recovered fast, changing his face.

That woman had a voice that could pierce through people's soul naturally and charmingly. It was like the nightmare that could run directly to the deepest level of people's hearts, making them powerlessly lazy, and preventing them from raising their fighting will. This was a tremendous power indeed.

Many warriors at the Spirit Realm and True God Realm on the steamship under Bi Rou's command were bewildered on hearing that voice. They looked like they were struck by the Body Fixing Spell. Their faces were dull and dreamy, as if they were flying happily in their best dreams. Expressions of lust appeared on their faces as well.

No one had seen her yet, but her seductive voice was enough to mess their minds. Shi Yan acclaimed her inside his head while circulating the power of the Ice Cold Flame, using its icy aura to relax his Sea of Consciousness and prevent the other from snatching his mind.

Du Feng's cold voice eventually arose from the cabin. "Sis, why are you here?"

"Well, if I didn't come here, did you want us to wait until they got you to the Underworld League and ask for several life stars and mineral stars as ransom?" The heavenly voice of the woman arose one more time. "Our father said that you will be grounded for ten years this time. You always make troubles. Sigh, you tell me, till when would our father no longer need to worry about you anymore?"

A young, handsome man with a cold, gloomy face walked out of the cabin. His clothes were full of dust. Pungent odor rose from him from time to time. He was Prince Du Feng.

"How could he get out?" Bi Rou paled. She shifted her look to Allard. "Didn't you say that the barrier has no flaws?"

Allard was still fighting with the others. Hearing her, he paled, screaming continually. "I don't know. Theoretically, he should have never escaped!"

"Muahaha! It used to be true. Your barrier can prevent the Soul Consciousness and seal all ways of communication. If I relied only on my power, I couldn't send my whereabouts to my men." Du Feng smiled darkly. Suddenly, he rose his voice. "Friend, where are you? We have always used the Soul Consciousness to talk, but have never met before. I don't know what you look like, mate."

Du Feng's look raked through those people. An inexplicable smile hung on the corner of his mouth.

Bi Rou and Allard darkened their faces on hearing him.

Even the woman sitting in the amethyst war chariot got startled. Later on, she laughed cheerily. "Turns out you have got a partner. I say, you moron, how could you send the message while being confined! Who is so stupid that he helped my b\*stard brother? Actually, I don't know whether to say thank or scold you for helping him. I don't want him to get out, you know? Haha!"

While the woman was talking, her amethyst war chariot slowly

flew and harbored next to the giant bronze steamship. A purple figure floated up and then descended on the main deck amidst the scrutinizing look of so many people.

# Chapter 718: Princess Zi Yao

---

(Zi Yao lit. means glorious amethyst – TL)

The woman was wearing purple clothes made of some unknown material, which was sparkling like stars in the sky. In this dark starry space, she was as gorgeous as the most beautiful purple star of the universe, dazzlingly delightful!

As soon as she appeared, all the warriors, no matter they were under Bi Rou, or the five King God Realm warriors on her side, revealed their enchanted faces.

Her kind of beauty was so hard to be described with words. Her body and appearance were so perfect that no one could find even a tiny flaw. She looked like a masterpiece of fine art created by God after spending countless hours. Each feature of hers could make people want to dream about it. No one could resist but immerse passionately in her beauty.

She had a pair of purple eyes, which looked like two glorious pieces of amethyst, which were always full of a magical purple light. Her pretty eyes were so charming that it could entice men's souls, making them glue their eyes on her.

Even Shi Yan, a man who had almost seen all kinds of beauties in this world, got struck at first glance. He couldn't shift his look from her, as if he had entered a wonderful dream where she was the most beautiful sight, that kept people from waking up.

In the Grace Mainland, Shi Yan had seen many outstanding women, but none of them could be as flawless as this woman. She was truly a miracle.

"Princess Zi Yao," The five King God Realm experts, who were attacking Bi Rou, stopped their attack and bowed to greet the woman respectably.

The woman beamed a gentle smile that was naturally beautiful

like a newborn star, and nothing could compare to her. This smile could melt even the toughest heart. She nodded, raking her look on the ground. Men under her look all tried to stand upright and chin up, trying to earn her favor.

Her look scanned through many people, and eventually fell on Shi Yan.

Shi Yan quietly circulated the Ice Cold Flame. Extremely cold energy started to move around his body, which reluctantly helped him resist the natural seduction of that woman. He didn't show his lust towards her and kept a calm face. However, his eyes still sparkled with a strange light.

Princess Zi Yao of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation had a gleam of surprise in her beautiful amethyst-like eyes. She was amazed on seeing Shi Yan's calm expression, so she wanted to look at him a little bit more.

Shi Yan didn't know why he was scared on receiving her favor. He blamed himself for being rude under the look of a beauty. Later on, he felt that the other had a mighty enchanting power, that as long as he was a male, he couldn't keep his eyes off her.

"Sis, does Father really want to ground me for ten years?" Du Feng put on a miserable countenance. "Didn't you beg him to save me?"

"Beg him?" Princess Zi Yao curled her lips interestedly. "I did."

Du Feng was struck, cracking a smile. "I know you love me, sis."

"Oh, yeah," Princess Zi Yao burst out laughing. "I've begged Father to ground you for fifty years. But Father loves you, moron. He didn't agree with me. He failed me though... Sigh!"

Du Feng's countenance froze. His smile became more miserable. However, he didn't dare to mess up with his sister, even though his heart was filled with resentment.

"Leave this ship here, Bi Rou. You guys should leave. The ores

and natural resources on this ship are to compensate for the fact that you've confined my brother." Princess Zi Yao didn't care about Shi Yan, turning to Bi Rou's team and then continued, "Do you have any idea?"

Bi Rou's face became cold. Her eyes were filled with rage. "Du Feng harassed me first. What's wrong if I captured him?"

"B\*tch, being the wife of Prince Du Feng is a humiliation to you? You don't know how many women have cried to roll into my arms. I favored you, but you didn't appreciate me!" Du Feng shouted harshly.

Bi Rou's face darkened, as her beautiful eyes sparkled coldly. "If you weren't a prince, I would have killed you already. You want to marry me? In your dreams!"

Du Feng still wanted to say something, but Princess Zi Yao had waved her hand to stop him. She laughed cheerily at Bi Rou. "It's true. My brother doesn't deserve you. People in the Raging Flame Star Area all know his bad habits. But, you've killed my people. Big mistakes! I'm easy to talk to, so I won't capture you and ask your father to give a ransom for you to reduce the troubles. However, you have to leave this ship. Well, after you get home and cry in front of your father, we will calculate our debts then."

"Miss Bi Rou..." Allard reminded her gently as his eyes sparkled with a strange light.

Apparently, the force they had here wasn't a match of Zi Yao's team. Her five King God Realm warriors were enough to oppress all of them. At the same time, Princess Zi Yao's realm and bearings were well-known around the Raging Flame Star Area. Allard knew that they were in the disadvantaged situation, so he had to wake Bi Rou up.

The other three King God Realm warriors on Bi Rou's side also signaled her to be patient.

Bi Rou hesitated for a while and then agreed begrudgingly. She spoke up coldly. "You won this time. However, it won't be easy to solve this grudge!"

"Haha, if you want to play, I'll accompany you." Princess Zi Yao burst out laughing, nodding her head elegantly. "Go home and ask your brother why he got hurt. Little girl, don't appreciate yourself too highly. Although your father's the General Commander of the Underworld League, he's just a commander, not the Hegemon. We, the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, aren't afraid of you guys. Let him come find us."

After she said that, Bi Rou and Allard discolored, their faces darkening immediately.

Bi Rou's big brother got home with severe wounds, from which he had to use a lot of Bi Tian's pellets and medicines to recover. That's why Bi Rou had to find another way, meeting Nita to ask for Shi Yan to produce the God Developing Pellet. This kind of pellet would ensure her breakthrough, making it flawless.

When her big brother came home, he kept his mouth shut, talking nothing about his wounds. He didn't reveal who had hurt him. Until now, Bi Rou didn't know who did that to him.

Today, as she heard Princess Zi Yao say that, Bi Rou changed her face instantly. Finally, she knew who had attacked her brother. She got tense as she was scared.

As the other had dared to hurt her brother, apparently, she wasn't afraid of Bi Tian. If Bi Rou wanted to linger here, she would earn nothing good.

She suddenly recalled the words people had used to assess Princess Zi Yao: beautiful like a fairy, evil as a scorpion!

A cold feeling arose from the bottom of Bi Rou's heart. She stared at Zi Yao for a while and then nodded with an anxious visage. She turned to Allard standing next to her, "We'll go. Leave the ship

here." She paused for a while, as if she suddenly recalled something, pointing at Shi Yan. "He'll come with us. I don't need the other medicinal cauldrons."

During this period, Shi Yan alone had produced twenty God Developing Pellets. As Bi Rou could see the marvelous potential of his body, she remembered Shi Yan at this critical moment.

"I won't go. See you later." Shi Yan was always quiet standing in a corner of the ship, and nobody had noticed him. He cracked a smile. "Don't worry. I will remember you guys. When I have the chance, I will pay back your favor today."

Du Feng was stooping his head in distress. Hearing his voice, he was struck, laughing contentedly. "Hey, buddy. You spoke finally."

People's eyes instantly fell on Shi Yan.

At this moment, they then understood who Du Feng's partner in crime was.

"It's you?!" Allard clenched his jaw, his face grimaced. "It's you! Kid, you don't want to live, right? I should have killed you earlier!"

Bi Rou's face became as cold as ice. Her sharp eyes scanned through Shi Yan like a cold saber as she was gritting her teeth.

Fergie was standing not far from them. She changed her countenance immediately, as she could finally recognize how touch and dangerous Shi Yan was. A beam of fear crossed her beautiful eyes as she was discreetly worried.

She understood how dangerous and patient Shi Yan was more than anybody else. If Shi Yan could escape this time, his realm would advance tremendously in the future.

A man who could still break through the next realm while being a human medicinal cauldron was truly the most dangerous one. Furthermore, Fergie knew that Shi Yan was pretty young, and his potential seemed to be endless.



She suddenly felt regret. She regretted that she shouldn't ambush Shi Yan. Today, as he had a new opportunity, he would never spare her life once he got stronger.

"Ah, not bad. Not bad. I was wondering why you could be so calm."

Princess Zi Yao also beamed a smile. She was curious why Shi Yan wasn't enchanted under her look. Hearing Du Feng, she now knew that Shi Yan was the one who had broken Du Feng's adversity. Thus, she became more curious, scanning her purple eyes on him with great interest.

Under her scrutinizing look, Shi Yan was indifferent, pointing at Fergie while his eyes were on Du Feng. "I want to kill her, and I don't want anybody to interfere. Can you help me with this?"

Du Feng was surprised. He stood in a daze, unable to react.

Fergie's face changed dramatically. Fear and angst flashed in her eyes. An ice-cold feeling arose from the bottom of her heart.

She thought it would end here, and Shi Yan would come to find her for revenge after he reached the higher realm. However, Shi Yan's revenge came too fast. He wanted to kill her before she had time to even leave.

In her panic, Fergie felt even more resentful. She was at the Third Sky of True God Realm cultivation base, and had always stayed in the Raging Flame Star Area to cultivate. Whether it was her knowledge or power, it was all extraordinary.

A kid from a low-grade continent, who had just broken through the Second Sky of True God Realm, wanted to kill her! It was such a humiliation to her! She was so embarrassed she got indignant.

"Good. I like to watch people fighting and killing." Du Feng hadn't said anything and yet his sister, Princess Zi Yao, smiled broadly first. Her smile was as beautiful and cheerful as a hundred spirits singing and dancing. She said excitedly, "Kill her. I'm sure

no one can disturb you. Haha, Little brother, you have the guts. You only have the Second Sky of True God Realm, but you dare to provoke the higher realm warriors. Good! I like you that way. Go, I'll support you." She swung her jade-like, flawless arm, smiling charmingly.

Shi Yan's eyes flashed with a gleam of affection, but he was awakened up immediately by the power of the Ice Cold Flame. Then, he stooped and walked towards Fergie while smiling.

Fergie was angry. She calmed down her surging emotion and countered. She had been accumulating power to show Shi Yan, the one who didn't know how high the sky was in this place, what the so-called mighty warriors of high-level continents were.

Since she wasn't a member of Bi Rou's force and just a passenger taking a ride with them, Bi Rou's team was just standing and watching with unconcerned visages. Actually, they also wanted to see how unusual this strange human medicinal cauldron was.

# Chapter 719: Break the chest!

---

Fergie's face darkened. Two different energies started to expand from her body, creating two distinctive poles with a magnetic field in between, which was the magical mediatory area where the two energies pulled and pushed each other.

She was extremely indignant. In front of so many people, Shi Yan, a Second Sky of True God Realm warrior, called her name while saying that he wanted to kill her. It was such a big bloody humiliation to her. She needed Shi Yan's blood to wash this shame.

Fergie decided to kill Shi Yan this time. She would never give him more time to grow.

She could see his endless potential. If she let him progress further, he would be a fatal disaster, bringing a great deal of trouble to her.

Bi Rou and Allard always felt that Shi Yan had many mysteries. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to break through while being a human medicinal cauldron.

They didn't know Shi Yan's real competence either. That was why they wanted to use this battle to estimate his power, in order to have a proper counterplan.

Although Prince Du Feng wanted to say something to Shi Yan, hearing his sister's words, he put on a dark and cold face while gazing at him.

Princess Zi Yao of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation was still nonchalant even though she was busy. Her curled lips cracked a smile that made many people crazy. She was leisurely eating some translucent fruits. There was no worry but excitement in her eyes.

Under people's eyeballing, Shi Yan maintained his calm and natural posture, as if he were taking a walk in his backyard garden. He sauntered nonchalantly towards Fergie.

After he was about a hundred meters away from Fergie, a furious energy wave shot out from his body. Then, different kinds of energies were released quietly, gathering in front of his body and creating a miraculous magnetic field.

### Gravitational Field!

Inside that Gravitational Field, different energies were tangling and exploding altogether. They made it seem like the energy storm of outer space, having a tremendously lethal power.

The eyes of Bi Rou and Princess Zi Yao glistened. Their faces looked as if they were struck. Bi Rou became serious, as she was a little bit surprised.

The Gravitational Field Shi Yan had released was somehow similar to the God Domain of the King God Realm warriors, which had the magical magnetic field combined with a flow of energy that could be compared to the energy storm. This is a special martial technique that had fused different types of powers.

Although they were in the Raging Flame Star Area, the fusing martial techniques that could combine different types of power were extremely rare. However, each of those techniques was brutal and tyrannical enough.

A kid from a low-level continent could release such gravitation field to combine different powers into one attack at first try, making Shi Yan look more mysterious in people's eyes. He had caught more of their attention.

"Cut off!"

Fergie's face got colder as her beautiful mouth parted, shouting. Two flows of energy generated from her soft body extended outward from her sides. They rumblingly formed a pair of scissors in the void, attempting to cut Shi Yan's body.

That pair of scissors was made of two different types of energy. The two power Upanishads had blended with each other, which

doubled the power of the scissors. Light dots sizzled in the gap between the two blades of the scissors, caused by the energy particles moving extremely fast.

The pair of scissors rumblingly darted towards him. In just a blink, it reached his chest and was about to halve him.

"Riot!"

Shi Yan was still calm. All of a sudden, he shouted, making his Gravitational Field more ruthless. All of the energies inside the field tangled together like the chaotic space basin, while countless light spots appeared on his body.

Shi Yan stood still in the dazzling nimbus, as starlight dots sparkled in his palms.

Starlight dots emerged like fireflies and converged on his palms. Instantly, they turned into a massive star cluster. With the enormous star power, it was like a meteor that Shi Yan had managed to catch. It then shot towards the gap between the two blades of the scissors.

Boom Boom Boom!

Explosions echoed continually from the gap of the scissors while numerous light spots sparked beautifully.

Fergie's soft body trembled. A streak of fright appeared in the bottom of her eyes. All of a sudden, her clothes were covered in layers of light, which seemed to supplement her energy.

As Shi Yan was still nonchalant, he suddenly stepped forward from the Gravitational Field. Just like a thousand-year rock, his body naturally gushed out a brutal energy wave. Inside his acupuncture points, negative energy was generated silently, flowing towards his arms.

At the same time, torrentially surging energy from his Essence Qi ancient tree splashed abruptly. The energy stored in his ancient tree showered just like a sudden flood, while Shi Yan's energy

supply rocketed immediately.

His two bare hands pushed up to the sky. Strange and magical small seals, like the illusion of mountains, congealed between his eyes, creating the Death and Life Seal and furiously attacking Fergie.

The Dead Intent Domain suddenly gushed out. At this moment, his eyes turned ash-gray. No living aura could be found on him, as a deadly and desolate aura arose from his body, covering the entire area.

People who were watching the battle discolored in fright. Strange light sparked from their eyes as they were gazing at Shi Yan and the seal on his hands.

The Death and Life seal snatched over at Fergie. Her fairy-like clothes moved without the wind, as layers of rippling energy expanded one after another from her clothes, just like waves of water. She was using this kind of energy to neutralize the Death Intent Domain's soul erosive effects.

The wind-tearing sound, which was unpleasant and mournful to the ears, echoed in people's eardrum. Their God Souls were shaken as they started to find the source of that noise.

Three pale bunches of light appeared from the space cracks. Shortly, they appeared behind Fergie's back and stabbed her furiously.

These three Bone Thorns were made of bones of a level 10 beast, so they were as sharp as the sharpest spear. Also, they were added with space power and Shi Yan's magical Soul Consciousness. They flashed and then disappeared.

Crack Crack Crack!

Three cracking sounds echoed from Fergie's back. Her tender body shook three times. She paled, while the energy protection of her clothes had reduced by dozens of layers.

People then had their eyes turned brighter. They shivered in thrill while looking at the three Bone Thorns that had just appeared from nowhere. Fear crossed their eyes.

The Bone Thorns left almost no shadow or figure as they crossed the space. This sort of an instant attack was really fatal, because even the Soul Consciousness couldn't catch the thorns' movement. Their whereabouts and trajectories were unknown and ever-changing. Such a technique was too dangerous and frightening.

Fergie was lucky that her clothes had the powerful defensive ability. Or else, with that attack, she would have been pierced through and died on the spot.

"Two-pole Magnetic Storm!"

Apparently, Fergie got enraged. She screamed, throwing her arms into the air and then pulling. The fierce energy was enhanced by the energy that shot out of her ample bosom, creating areas of chaotic magnetic storms, which could shatter any kind of energy or attack.

At the same time, Fergie flipped her hand, grabbing something. A sharp halo flashed and then disappeared. An energy attack like pointy needles swarmed over the three Bone Thorns.

Buzzing sounds emitted from the Bone Thorns as they made a curve in the air. After getting hit, the Bone Thorns deviated. However, they were still flying behind her back while Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness attached to the Bone Thorns was washed away.

Shi Yan didn't change his visage. The corner of his mouth was icy cold. At this moment, he didn't retreat, but strengthened his attacks. He stormed over Fergie right away.

His Petrification Martial Spirit had been activated for a long time, as a result of which, his entire body had turned golden. Marvelous energy shot out of each muscle of his while his blood boiled and his bones echoed the cracking sounds continually. It

seemed Shi Yan wanted to urge all of the energy in his body.

Shi Yan's body was immune to the harsh energy storm due to so many days and nights under the intensive training that ordinary people would never be able to endure. During this period, he had used the Solid Pellets to refill his energy, and the Immortal Martial Spirit to quench his body dozens of times, which could be considered a formidably terrifying process.

BOOM!

Shi Yan impacted the Two-pole Magnetic Storm created by Fergie. Light dots that naked eye could see bloomed like a furious water current, pouring all over his body.

Shortly, the body that had been through so many challenges got cracked. Countless fine cuts appeared on his skin and started to bleed.

Extreme pain flooded his body, storming into his Sea of Consciousness. This kind of sharp pain continually tore his body, as if it wanted to rip his bones and flesh off.

Strange breaking noise came from his bones. However, he was still struggling, accumulating the negative power while lunging forward. He dashed out of the Two-pole Magnetic Storm.

Fergie looked as pale as a sheet of paper. Fright reflected clearly in her pupils as she was trying to escape.

People who were watching the battle were dumbstruck, as they couldn't believe in their own eyes. It seemed they had witnessed something against the common rules. Fear flashed across their faces.

They had seen the lethal power of the Two-pole Magnetic Storm. Under such a tremendous energy attack, no need to mention Shi Yan, even a King God Realm expert couldn't endure it if he hadn't completed quenched his body.

They asked themselves and found that if they had to jump into



the Two-pole Magnetic Storm, they could hardly escape.

Shi Yan had got out of the magnetic storm almost immediately and reappeared three meters in front of Fergie.

Just like a long sharp spear, Shi Yan's face was calm, but his eyes were cold while he bumped into Fergie. At the moment Fergie was frightened, Shi Yan condensed the Death and Life Seal once again, rumblingly striking towards her generous bosom.

Layers of water waves on her magical clothes disappeared to the last layer shortly.

The energy stored in those layers had been drained completely under the attack of the three Bone Thorns and the Death and Life Seal. It couldn't hold its defense to the last moment.

"Puff!"

Shi Yan's right arm pierced through Fergie's clothes and then her chest like a sharp spear. People could see his five fingers jutting out of her tender back.

"Crack!"

His hand stirred one round, smashing all internal organs inside her body. Blood splashed everywhere, staining his body.

The color in Fergie's eyes faded away, replaced by despair. Her breath of life diminished.

Shi Yan got a lot of blood all over his face and body. He frowned and retracted his right arm, retreating by one meter. Under the people's frightened looks, he tore a piece of Fergie's clothes and wiped the bloodstains off his face.

# Chapter 720: The value of Shi Yan

---

This battle ended earlier than people had estimated.

According to the onlookers, Shi Yan, a warrior at the Second Sky of True God realm, had skipped the grade and challenged Fergie, an expert at the Peak of True God Realm. Even if he could win, it would be a pathetic victory from a long, bloody battle.

However, the result was beyond their expectation. Shi Yan won, and it was a quick battle. From the time he started his attack to the moment he killed Fergie, it wasn't more than one minute.

This speed was like the productivity of a King God Realm expert killing a Peak of True God Realm expert.

For the time being, a silence fell on this massive bronze steamship.

Shi Yan's bloody, brutal, and resolute style of fighting was like a seal, imprinting deeply in their brains that could never wash off.

Since his performance was both beautiful and frightening, everybody had a feeling that they had missed something. They felt that Fergie was the one who had skipped the level and challenged Shi Yan, who was the higher realm warrior who had the absolute control of that battle.

On the other side, Shi Yan was still calm as usual. He hadn't realized that the onlookers were still sinking in his bloody style of fighting. He quietly wiped the blood stains off his body and deactivated the Petrification Martial Spirit. It was to prevent showing his marvelous body recovery speed to the others, which could scare them even more.

Under the given situation that he couldn't estimate the others precisely, he should never reveal his Aces completely. Otherwise, the opponents would have a better chance to kill him.

Shi Yan understood this well.

"Princess Zi Yao, I'm willing to give up the Metal Wind mineral lode in the South Bay of the Underworld League for his head." All of a sudden, Bi Rou broke the silence. Her beautiful eyes sparkled coldly, gazing at Shi Yan. "I want him to die."

"Miss!" The two King God Realm experts on her sides couldn't help but scream, looking at her disbelievingly.

Bi Rou waved her hand, signaling them to stop. She was still eyeballing at Shi Yan. All of a sudden, she turned to Princess Zi Yao. "So? A Metal Wind mineral lode for the life of a Second Sky of True God Realm medicinal cauldron. Have you ever seen any deal better than this?"

She hadn't recovered from the fright arising at the bottom of her heart yet. As the daughter of Bi Tian, her knowledge was much more outstanding than many people.

Shi Yan's performance today made her realize a hidden danger. She wanted to use the Metal Wind mineral lode to diminish this potential danger, and not let the seed of an immeasurable disaster sprout in the future.

Fergie was a member of the Underworld League, but she got killed that fast. Apparently, Shi Yan held a big grudge against the Underworld League. One day, when Shi Yan grew up stronger, he would take revenge for sure. At that time, the price they had to pay would be much bigger.

She understood clearly the value of a ruthless man who was good at fighting skills, and could break through the new realm while being a medicinal cauldron.

She wanted to remove this danger as soon as possible.

Allard didn't say anything, but he complimented her in his mind, thinking that she had such a good vision. He agreed with Bi Rou's suggestion.

"Sis!" Du Feng was shaken. He hastened to talk with a sound

mind. "A mineral lode of Metal Wind's extremely precious. Even in our Dark Firmament Divine Nation, it's still rare. Sis!"

"Shut up!" There was no smile on Princess Zi Yao's enchanting face anymore. Her beautiful eyes were so serious that they could scare people. "He saved you, and now you treat him like that?"

"Just a True God Realm warrior. Is he worth bargaining with me? Sh\*t, I used to want to deal with him though." Du Feng muttered while his dark eyes peeked at Shi Yan. He still hated Shi Yan for forcing him to pledge.

Shi Yan wore a faint face, calmly looking at him. However, Shi Yan was sighing inside, as he knew that he could hardly believe such sort of people.

Although he had forced Du Feng to make a pledge, he didn't think that he could receive a life star. In the Raging Flame Star Area, life stars were really precious. Since he was just at the Second Sky of True God Realm, even if he could have a life star, he couldn't keep it for a long time.

What Du Feng just said had proven his assumption. Indeed, right from the start, the other didn't want to keep his words.

He had predicted this result earlier, so he wasn't so angry. However, it pushed him further on the way of the endless pursuit of power. Shi Yan understood that if he had had a suppressive power and realm, Du Feng's promise would have become true.

But his realm was too low. Sigh...

Shi Yan sighed, but his goal was clearer than ever.

"You just need to nod. I can make the papers now and transfer the Metal Wind mineral lode to you, putting it under your name right now. What do you think about it? It's not a bad deal, you know? You should consider carefully," Bi Rou said seriously.

Although the two parties were negotiating the matter of his life, Shi Yan just listened. He didn't say anything, just looking at

Princess Zi Yao.

"Little brother, what do you think about me?" Princess Zi Yao suddenly beamed a smile like thousands of flowers blooming at the same time. Such charming bearings could melt the heart of any man, making them willing to be under her ruling. "Miss Bi Rou of the Underworld League wants to kill you. What do you think about it? If you were me, what would you do?"

Everybody put on an odd visage, eyeing him.

Shi Yan was still relaxed under their scrutinizing. He suddenly cracked a smile. "I think... As Miss Bi Rou wants to use a Metal Wind mineral lode to exchange for my life, my value is proven, right? What do I need to add?"

Princess Zi Yao's eyes sparkled. She nodded. "Such an arrogant smarta\*s. I like you, man. Alright, I'm going to make it clear here. You follow me and become my cortege. How does it sound?"

"What can you offer me?" Shi Yan didn't agree immediately, and smiled until he squinted. "Although my realm isn't high... my ambition's quite big. Do you still want to receive me?"

"I like people with ambition." Princess Zi Yao burst out laughing, shaking her soft, charming body naturally. "If you are strong enough, even if you desire me... it's not impossible. So? Think about it."

Everybody gawked with a bizarre countenance. Their electric-like looks were raking through Shi Yan from time to time.

"Okay." Shi Yan mused for three seconds while staring in Princess Zi Yao's eyes. He beamed a bright smile. "If I can be the guard of a flower like you, I can see you every day. To a man, it isn't a strenuous task."

"Such a sweet mouth. I like you even more." Princess Zi Yao laughed until her body shook. Her smile was absolutely mesmerizing. "Then, it'll be that way. You come with me. Forget

about what you and my dumb brother have dealt. What he can't offer you, I can give you in the future. However, the premise is... you have to prove that you have such competence."

Shi Yan nodded, replying faintly. "I will."

"Princess Zi Yao, you are willing to give up a Metal Wind mineral lode for a True God Realm medicinal cauldron? Are you sure?" Bi Rou gritted her teeth, stressing the words 'medicinal cauldron,' which indicated Shi Yan's low status.

"Am I not clear?" Princess Zi Yao threw her a glance while chuckling. "So, did you get water in your head, saying that you are willing to give up a Metal Wind mineral lode for his life? What you can see, don't you think I can as well?"

Bi Rou's face became grimaced.

She contemplated for a while, her eyes like a knife peeling Shi Yan's flesh. She nodded heavily. "Okay! You're lucky this time. Remember, you've created a grudge against Bi Rou. It can't be undone easily. I won't give you much time to grow. If you want to take revenge, let's see if you are eligible!"

Shi Yan's face was cold and harsh, but his manner was still calm and natural. "We'll talk about it later. As long as I'm alive, I always have a chance. I will always remember your favor. We will meet again, soon."

Then, his arm suddenly shook. A fierce energy exploded, blowing the hundred-legged centipede away forcefully.

Beams of starlight fell like sand, covering the centipede. The medicinal animal hissed, while holes appeared on its body as its vitality was cut off. The unfinished God Developing Pellets inside the centipede were taken out. Shi Yan stashed them in his Storage Ring, then shifted his look towards Bi Rou. "Well, those are my interest."

"My medicinal animal!" Allard cried hoarsely. Tears lingered in

his eyes as he angrily and maliciously cried towards Shi Yan. "Kid, I swear that I will make you die from the cruelest tortures."

"I'll be waiting for you," Shi Yan nodded, but he didn't seem to be threatened. "About who will die earlier, muahaha, just wait to see it."

"Sis!" Du Feng was discontented, his face grim. "Are you really willing to give up a Metal Wind mineral lode for a medicinal cauldron like him? It's a Metal Wind mineral lode!"

"Shut up!" Princess Zi Yao's eyes got colder. She gazed at him coldly. "You can never see the whole picture or the future. Being grounded for ten years is a too short to a brat like you! When we come back, I will report to Father and ask him to confine you for a little longer. It would help you see what a good vision is!"

Du Feng discolored, continually begging to be forgiven. He didn't dare to talk more.

As Bi Rou found it hard to persuade Princess Zi Yao, she didn't want to waste more time with her. She coldly gazed at Shi Yan for a long while, as if she wanted to carve his image into her head. Later on, she asked, "What's your name?"

"Shi Yan."

"Alright, I remember you now. Shi Yan, you'd better not meet me again. Or else, I'll make you die pathetically."

"Sure. I will remember you, Miss Bi Rou of the Underworld League."

Bi Rou, Allard, and her group didn't dare to linger. They left the big bronze steamship, storming into the dark, gloomy outer space. Their lonely figures disappeared into an energy storm.

On the ship, Princess Zi Yao was giggling, eyeing Shi Yan with great interest. Her pupils were filled with curiosity. "Don't worry. As long as you ace your job as my bodyguard, I won't mistreat you. If your contribution is sufficient, you can get what you want. Du

Feng can't give it to you, but I can."

Shi Yan slightly bent his body. His eyes were cold and relaxed, as they didn't reflect any of his happy or unpleasant emotions under the woman's enticement.

"Clean it up. We'll alter the journey. Let's go home." As soon as Princess Zi Yao ordered, the other King God Realm warriors moved immediately, getting inside the giant bronze steamship.

Shortly, the ship departed again.



# Chapter 721: The Moving Temporary Imperial Abode

---

Shi Yan had gotten rid of his status as a medicinal cauldron, so he didn't need to stay on the lowest deck of the bronze steamship anymore. He moved to the second deck of the ship, which had large rooms with bathrooms and training rooms. The facilities there were much better and exquisite. He also got good food there.

Du Feng wasn't so friendly to Shi Yan. Every time he saw him, he gave him an ugly face and cold eyes.

Shi Yan didn't care about him. He stayed and practiced relaxingly in his cabin. The wounds he got from the battle with Fergie had been healed long ago. And, quite the contrary, Shi Yan received a bigger benefit from Fergie's Essence Qi when she died. Now, he felt that his realm more solid, and he could even gain a new gleam of understanding of his powers.

The giant bronze steamship was now controlled by a King God Realm expert under Princess Zi Yao's command. Not long afterward, it stopped.

"Move!" Princess Zi Yao let out a low shout from the main deck of the ship. The warriors under her command, including Shi Yan, got out of their cabins.

When he got to the main deck, at the first glance, Shi Yan was shaken, revealing that he was dumbstruck.

In front of him was a massive amethyst crystal, as big as a giant meteorolite, more than five times bigger than this bronze steamship. This amethyst crystal was shimmering with a charming halo in this dark and gloomy outer space. He could see some purple buildings and even a small lake there.

This amethyst crystal was like a small island or a moving temporary imperial abode, floating silently in the air. Many

warriors in neat uniforms were waiting for them on that massive amethyst crystal with respectful manners.

"This amethyst battleship's my moving temporary imperial abode. Lately, I was hurried to get there, so I had to leave it here." Princess Zi Yao smiled charmingly, throwing Shi Yan a glance. She chuckled and asked, "What do you think?"

"Luxurious and noble. A thing I could never imagine something like this. I have never heard about it in my continent," Shi Yan answered her honestly, showing her that he was quite astounded.

Princess Zi Yao smiled then nodded. "Of course. You're from a low-level continent. It would be weird if your place had an outer space moving battleship like this one." She waved her hand, talking to a King God Realm expert. "You'll be in charge of this Underworld League's bronze ship. The others follow me."

She floated up and flew down from that amethyst war chariot. Amidst the glorious purple light, she descended like a bunch of light towards the amethyst battleship.

Many warriors on the battleship bowed to greet her. They pitched their voices respectfully.

When her purple war chariot was about to land, that amethyst crystal suddenly cracked open, swallowing the entire war chariot, as if it had a special landing location for it.

Du Feng and the other warriors of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation flew up and then landed on the amethyst battleship – Princess Zi Yao's private moving temporary imperial abode – one by one.

Shi Yan hesitated a little bit before turning into a bunch of light, drilling through the energy storm, and landing on that giant amethyst crystal.

A flow of fiercely surging energy rippled from the amethyst battleship. The moving imperial abode suddenly flew up,

accelerating fast.

"Bergh, you should arrange a place for him." Princess Zi Yao stretched her body, revealing her curves that enchanted people. She talked to Shi Yan lazily. "If you don't know something, just ask Bergh. He's been following me for quite long. He understands our situation well."

Shi Yan smiled, then slightly bowed to the Dark Spirit Clan's warrior called Bergh, a man who had many braids. "Please teach me more."

"Don't be too polite," Bergh nodded faintly. He was a little arrogant as well.

This expert was at the Second Sky of King God Realm, and he had followed Princess Zi Yao for many years. He could be considered quite experienced. Although Shi Yan had proven his extraordinary competence, he was only at the Second Sky of True God Realm. In this expert's eyes, Shi Yan wasn't a top-grade warrior.

"Alright, I'm going to take a flower bath and then rest. You should do what you need to do." Princess Zi Yao entered the amethyst battleship and then disappeared. Shi Yan couldn't even sense her aura anymore.

Shi Yan sensed for a while and found that there were almost one thousand people inside and outside this amethyst battleship!

Most of them were at the True God Realm and Spirit Realm. It looked like they were Princess Zi Yao's cortege and servants. Also, Shi Yan could sense more than ten King God Realm experts on this battleship. Those people must be holding high positions.

Each King God Realm warriors had a different place to rest, and they didn't need to share the room with other people.

"If you don't know something, you can ask me. But, I don't have much time to take care of you all the time. You can only disturb me when I'm not cultivating." The King God Realm expert with so

many braids on his head lifted his face, pointing in a direction with a cold visage. "You should get to that entrance. The second room on the left on the second floor is yours. If you have any problems, think and ask me later."

Du Feng had disappeared earlier. As soon as they landed on the battleship, he immediately got in as if he needed to use the place to restore his power.

During the period he was restrained, he had consumed a lot of energy without any supplementation. His confinement also had a barrier that prevented him from gathering energy. If he couldn't refill his energy soon, it would harm his cultivation base.

Hearing Bergh's advice, Shi Yan smiled and nodded, but didn't ask anything. Following the man's words, he got into the battleship through a passage and went to the second room down there.

The walls here were made of amethyst, sparkling beautifully with the purple light. They consecutively diffused thick and pure energies that warriors of different classes could take in and convert to use. Although it wasn't as pure as the Divine Crystals, it was still quite useful to the warriors.

His cabin was almost two hundred meters squared in area, with different-sized rooms. Those rooms contained precious and exquisite furniture and facilities. Besides the rare fruits and cakes, he found a hot spring and a big bath in a room.

This place was much luxurious than the bronze steamship. Staying in the middle of the opulent furniture, he felt like he was living in a dreamy purple crystal palace.

Shi Yan was satisfied. He took several rounds to check the rooms and kept complimenting Princess Zi Yao, who was really good at enjoying life, as she had such a luxurious and beautiful moving palace.

With this amethyst battleship, moving in outer space wasn't difficult at all. It was more like enjoying a vacation, where he could ask for everything he wanted.

From this point, Shi Yan knew that Princess Zi Yao's position in the Dark Firmament Divine Nation wasn't ordinary. Also, that country was a filthy rich country, worth being one of the most powerful forces of the Raging Flame Star Area.

Shi Yan stayed in the amethyst battleship, enjoying the fine cuisine and the Solid Pellets every day to enhance his body and power. He didn't ask Bergh anything initially.

Shi Yan could see that Bergh didn't have a good impression of him, and he didn't want to care about Shi Yan. So, Shi Yan shouldn't go to him to lose his face.

Today, while he was cultivating with his eyes closed, he found Princess Zi Yao coming to his cabin quietly. This woman was wearing purple silk pajamas. She strolled with a lazy smile hung on her mouth. Her beautiful eyes looked like the vast, purple sea, where people wanted to sail and never get back.

Shi Yan woke up, opened his eyes, and beamed a bright smile. He stood up, then slightly bent his body. "Greeting, your highness."

"Here, take these ten God Congealing Pellets and ten medium-quality Divine Crystals. You are only at the Second Sky of True God Realm. They should be enough for you until you break through to the King God Realm." Princess Zi Yao beamed a smile. "God Congealing Pellets are to be used when you break through the King God Realm. It can provide an enormous energy, which helps you condense the God Body faster. As you have followed me, of course, I will treat you well."

Then ten God Congealing Pellets and ten pieces of medium-quality Divine Crystal flew towards him.

Shi Yan extended his arm to receive them. Touching a medium-

quality Divine Crystal, he was astounded, thanking her sincerely. He could feel the massive energy contained inside that medium-quality Divine Crystal. Only a piece of this kind of Divine Crystal was enough to refill all of his exhausted Essence Qi!

Also, he finally knew the effects of the God Congealing Pellets which Nita had used his Blood Qi to refine.

Turned out it was such a big help to refine the God Body. He could imagine how bloody the war to compete for a piece of God Congealing Pellet would be if it fell on the Grace Mainland.

At this moment, he knew that the peak experts of the Raging Flame Star Area had more support and better natural resources than the Grace Mainland. And, this God Congealing Pellet was just a low-level supplement. Yet, alchemists of the Grace Mainland could never produce it.

"I could see that you have a sturdy body while fighting with the little girl from the Underworld League. I want to check your body to know your level." Princess Zi Yao smiled beautifully. Then, she extended her left arm, which was such a great piece of art. The fingernail on her index finger sparkled, slowly pricking towards Shi Yan.

The distance between her and Shi Yan seemed to be shortened immediately. An orchid fragrance permeated Shi Yan's mouth and nostrils, making him dreamy. Lust could be seen in his eyes at this moment.

This woman was such a gorgeous disaster of the world. She was incomparably charming. She was much more perfect and sexier than any women Shi Yan had met. She could be considered the best of the best.

Her jade-like index finger had a moving halo, but her fingernail was really long, like a small, sharp knife. When it approached Shi Yan's chest, the aura it diffused was so sharp that nothing could resist its power.

Shi Yan suddenly became tense, his face solemn. He silently activated the Petrification Martial Spirit and accumulated the powers in his body. They congealed in front of his chest, creating a dedicatedly fine textured protective flesh layer that naked eyes couldn't see.

"Don't be so nervous. You are one of my people, so I won't hurt you. I just want to check the intensity of your body to see how much pressure you can bear." Princess Zi Yao giggled. Her breath smelled as good as the orchid fragrance. Her heavenly voice was as effective as the best tranquilizer, which relaxed Shi Yan's tense nerves.

However, the aura from her index finger was getting sharper while she was talking. It was like an ice saber or the cold stream shooting towards him.

Shi Yan's eyes relaxed, but his whole mind was staying alert. He knew this was the first time the other had tested him. He must be careful.

# Chapter 722: A battle appointment

---

Bang!

Princess Zi Yao's index finger pricked into Shi Yan's chest, and a clear sound of metal banging echoed. Shi Yan shivered slightly, and his face turned red immediately. Light sparkled in his eyes, which looked really terrible.

Shi Yan felt as if a long spear had stabbed him. Fine light spots shot out of his chest, while his shirt had been ragged, revealing a finger-sized hole.

The energy layer he had accumulated in front of his chest had been broken by a sharp force. Energy hidden in his flesh and blood boiled furiously, flowing towards that area to recover the protection.

Princess Zi Yao's beautiful eyes sparkled. She nodded, but it was hard to recognize. She pushed with more force, stabbing her index finger again.

The extremely sharp energy burst off instantly. Shi Yan felt like so many needles were pricking his stone-like body, making him tremble.

An eye-catching halo bloomed as Princess Zi Yao's fingernail pierced through the shield Shi Yan had created. Her sharp finger dug deep into Shi Yan's flesh, and blood gushed out.

Shi Yan's face was cold and calm. He stooped to see the jade-like index finger of the other while urging his energy discreetly. He had to be always cautious.

Zi Yao didn't push it further. She parted her lips and smiled, slowly retracting her finger. Her beautiful eyes were as bright as a pair of diamonds, her breath like the orchid fragrance. "You didn't fail me, indeed. It's excellent that your body can reach this degree even before you can condense the God Body."



Shi Yan exhaled in relief, forcing a smile. "My highness, could you be kind enough to tell me what your realm is?"

"A little higher than yours," Zi Yao smiled tenderly. "The Third Sky of King God Realm. It's not easy to destroy your flesh shield. Don't think you're too weak."

A pleasant fragrance diffused from her body that could get into people's soul and make them show their masculine desires.

Although Shi Yan had experienced all kinds of women, he couldn't resist it. Shi Yan felt shameful with a red face while he had the featured reaction that a man should have in front of a beautiful woman.

Zi Yao chuckled tenderly. Her beautiful eyes peeked meaningfully at his crotch. She laughed for a bit. "Turns out you're a bad boy."

Shi Yan was so embarrassed that he could only beam a forced smile.

"Although your realm isn't so high, your competence isn't bad. We are going to pass by a place where you have to join a battle. Don't fail me. You need to recover to the peak." Zi Yao took several steps backward, her pretty eyes raking through his body. She said smilingly. "Your opponent's the youngest son of a feudal vassal. He's a genius at the Third Sky of True God Realm. Anyway, he's much stronger than Fergie. I heard that... he can fight with a King God Realm warrior for a while without falling into the disadvantaged situation. You'll help me destroy his fighting spirit."

"Your Highness, you do favor me," Shi Yan felt funny.

"Of course! I was willing to give up the Metal Wind mineral lode Bi Rou had offered, which means I do favor you, and highly appreciate you. With your innate and ability in learning, you will have a bright future. So, you must grab it tightly while you still have the chance."

While Zi Yao was talking, she stretched her body. Her milky bosom under the thin layer of her purple silk dress bulged generously, as if it wanted to tear her clothes to get some fresh air out there. Such amazing elasticity and fullness had shaken Shi Yan's mind badly.

"Of course, I will do my best," Shi Yan took a sly look and then held his breath, circulating the cold energy of the Ice Cold Flame to wake up his mind. It would save him from showing his unacceptable behavior.

This woman was truly a pretty disaster, the nemesis of all men. Each move of hers, from frowning to laughing, could grab a man's soul tightly, making him sink deep into her charming features.

Shi Yan thought that every moment he had spent with this woman was the time his dark desire had been driven fiercely. He had to always remind and restrain himself to reluctantly escape from her charming seduction.

"Okay, we'll do that way. You should recover your power to the peak. When we get there, you should come out yourself. If you can defeat him, I will satisfy one of your wishes." Zi Yao's succulent red lips parted. Her watery black eyes hid something.

A wish? What kind of wish? Looking at her, Shi Yan couldn't control his mind but think badly. His eyes became hot.

"Little brother, you are bad. You said you wanted to be a flower guard of mine. Don't watch and then steal." Zi Yao laughed cheerily. Her eyes stroked along his lower body. She left the laughter that sounded cheerful as the jingle of silver bells before disappearing. Although she wasn't in the room, her voice was still echoing. "Don't think too much. If you can surpass me one day, I'll allow you to wander your thoughts. It's too early now." Her voice was like she was whining right next to Shi Yan's ears. It was just her voice, but it could still seduce Shi Yan that much.

When her voice faded, Shi Yan looked down to see a little tent at

his crotch. He couldn't hide his embarrassment.

"This alluring woman..."

He muttered, then beamed a forced smile and shook his head to wake his mind. He returned to his bed, sitting neatly and closing his eyes again. Shi Yan quieted down his mind and soul to sink in his cultivation.

..

Princess Zi Yao got back to her master cabin. The amethyst hall in this cabin was carved with exquisite patterns. A pond stayed in the middle of the room, which was full of spiritual Qi and strange fruits. They were all fresh and delicious, making people's mouth water.

Bergh, Prince Du Feng, and the five King God Realm warriors were sitting neatly around a round table by the pond. They were having fruits and discussing something.

After Zi Yao took her seat, she smiled tenderly. "That kid's innate endowment isn't bad. Although he doesn't have the God Body, his body's really sturdy. Moreover, his fighting style's brutal and fierce. He should have the energy to fight once."

"Sis, do you really want him to battle Da Meng?" Apparently, Du Feng didn't agree with her idea. He snorted, "In our Dark Firmament Divine Nation, Da Meng is a famous genius. He has reached the Peak of True God Realm when he's still young. Fergie can't be compared with him. If we fail, not only we can't trouble Da Lei's spirit, but it will make him even more arrogant. What we could gain wouldn't be enough to make up our losses."

"Da Lei and General Commander Tuo Hai of the Underworld League are really close lately. I think they have some intentions. If we don't correct him, he will feel that we aren't keeping our eye on him. He will become more arrogant." Zi Yao's smile ceased. Although she wasn't angry, she looked solemn. "Da Meng isn't

ordinary at the Peak of True God Realm. He's able to battle with King God Realm warriors. Even if he can't actually win, he's dangerous enough. If Shi Yan defeats Da Meng, Da Lei will understand that I want him to be contented with his lot, and not engage in dark things behind my back."

"Your Highness, can Shi Yan do that?" The braids on Bergh's head swung as he shook his head. "That kid comes from a low-level continent. Even if he can kill Fergie, it proves nothing. That woman was just a small character in the Underworld League. He isn't as excellent as Da Meng."

"Of course, I know that," Zi Yao frowned. "I don't expect that he can win. If he makes it a tie, he can fulfill our wish already. Since he is only at the Second Sky of True God Realm, even if he loses, he won't embarrass us."

She wasn't so confident. Da Meng's reputation was well known around the area, and there was also his outstanding father. Since he was just a little kid, he had had all the best power Upanishads to cultivate. At the same time, his body had been refined by so many precious pellets, medicines, and secret treasures, which made his fighting competence earth-shaking.

In her eyes, as long as Shi Yan could surprise or trouble Da Meng, it was enough to satisfy her.

"Your Highness, you've used a Metal Wind mineral lode to exchange for this kid. Don't bury him too early," Bergh tried to advise her. "Da Meng's always ruthless. No one can have a decent ending fighting with him. If you let Shi Yan engage in a battle with him, it's not different from a slap on his face. He won't give you face. If Shi Yan got killed instantly, we would lose our face for sure. It will harm our imperial prowess."

"That kid won't be killed that easily," Princess Zi Yao hesitated for a while and then continued with a faint voice. "Let him prove himself. Let see if he's worth a Metal Wind mineral lode. If he can

make it a tie in the battle with Da Meng and wear out the other's fighting spirit, it proves that he's a talent that we should nurture. If he got killed, then it would be his fate. Of course, it's not a piece of cake to gain an excellent achievement. He has to pay for what he wants. It's the rule of Nature."

Seeing her being so persistent, Bergh and Prince Du Feng understood that it was no use to give her advice. They didn't continue to discuss with her, but deep inside their heads, no one thought highly of him. They thought that the battle with Da Meng would be the end of Shi Yan's life.

Seeing Zi Yao not wanting to continue this topic, Bergh and Du Feng stood up and excused themselves with a dark countenance.

Waiting until everybody left, Zi Yao picked up some fulgent grapes and ate one by one, her eyes complicated. After a long while, she mumbled, "I hope you won't fail me. I hope you can make it this time. That's how I can have the reasons to nurture you and make the others believe in you."

...

Shi Yan didn't know about the talk between Princess Zi Yao and the others. He was still immersed in his cultivation world, using the Solid Pellets and a piece of medium-quality Divine Crystal to enhance his energy and train his body.

At the Second Sky of True God Realm, filling up his Essence Qi ancient tree was a long-term, big construction.

Normal warriors at this realm would need more than ten years using the Divine Crystals to supplement their energy and fill the Essence Qi ancient tree, making each branch of its translucent and abundant. It would be the required stage to prepare the Essence Qi to break through to the Third Sky of True God Realm.

He was a little bit better, since he had the power from Fergie, which had promoted his progress. However, it wasn't a short

period before his Essence Qi ancient tree possessed abundant energy.

Shi Yan had been in his ascetic training, not caring about days or nights. While the Immortal Martial Spirit was recovering his body, it made his tendons, bones, flesh, and blood sturdier. At the same time, his soul was immersing in understanding the power Upanishads. Shi Yan didn't dare to relax for even a second.

Today, Shi Yan had used up all of the Solid Pellets. After the Immortal Martial Spirit had recovered his blood and flesh, he finally had some time to gather and sort the information he had gained recently.

In the Raging Flame Star Area, he was just an outsider. Without a guide, it was not easy for him to grow and expose his talent alone.

He understood that following Princess Zi Yao was a wise decision. One day, when he could reach the higher realm and surpass the other, his cortege status would be dismissed.

It was the rule of outer space. As long as one's realm and power were strong enough, one could earn a place of their own. One didn't need to look at people's countenance to live. One could fly above the restriction of any force.

The amethyst battleship vibrated when a beam of sunlight crept through the amethyst, falling on him, making him comfortable and happy. His Star Martial Spirit proactively took in the flaming energy of the Sun. This harvest was much more than what he had experienced in the Grace Mainland.

Shi Yan was shaken. He knew that a furious battle was awaiting him, which would determine his destiny.

# Chapter 723: Feudal Vassal of a region

---

The amethyst battleship stopped at a continent which had three suns in the sky.

Standing on the battleship, Shi Yan lifted his head to watch the three massive suns in the sky. As his body was bathed in the thick sunlight, he felt so comfortable while his Star Martial Spirit was taking in the power of the sun.

The Earth Flame in the center of the heaven flame altar seemed to be happy too. Since the Earth Flame used to fuse with the Sun Essence, it had the solar energy in its nature.

Staying on a continent with the three dazzling suns like this, Shi Yan felt quite cozy.

The heaven and earth energy on this continent was lavish. Although Shi Yan was standing on the battleship, he could feel his mind refreshed. He understood that it would be quite useful for his cultivation while staying here.

In his sight, Shi Yan could see so many lakes and groups of massive palaces. Those palaces were like mountains piercing the clouds. In the center of the lakes and those palaces, flowers bloomed beautifully. Unknown flowers could be seen everywhere, even on the green city walls. This view seemed magnificent to Shi Yan.

After the amethyst battleship stopped, several thousand people gathered to greet them. The leader of that group was a Ghost Mark Clan's expert. He had delicate tattoos on his face, outlined by the shoulder-length hair. This expert had a lean body, but his clothes were kind of relaxing styled. He was wearing a green warrior attire, which couldn't be said to be luxurious or precious. His face was filled with sincere and longing smiles.

Standing behind him were many warriors, including almost one

hundred King God Realm warriors. Their auras shot up to the sky, which frightened people.

"The arrival of your Highness is Da Lei's biggest honor. Welcome, Princess!" The Ghost Mark Clan's leader expert pitched his voice cheerily and openly. He took several hurried steps to greet her from afar.

A young Ghost Mark Clan's member stood behind him. This man had some similar features as his leader. His eyes sparkled, gazing at Princess Zi Yao without blinking. Apparently, he had a deep admiration for her, and he didn't mind showing it.

Princess Zi Yao smiled implicitly. She descended off her amethyst battleship, talking tenderly. "Having Uncle Da Lei guarding this region, my Father could ease his mind. I'm passing by just to send Uncle Da Lei my Father's appreciation. Thank you for keeping this area peaceful."

"As the feudal official, it's my duty to erase the worry and solve the troubles. I don't dare to show my achievement," Da Lei laughed. "Please, your Highness, please join our party. I've arranged everything for you."

Shi Yan walked together with Bergh's team, getting off the purple battleship. He eyed Da Lei – the leader, and he couldn't hide his surprise.

Shi Yan felt no energy fluctuation on Da Lei's body. At first glance, he was just an ordinary person. However, the warriors standing behind him all had the aura of the high mountains or the deep ocean. Their energy fluctuations were all earth-shaking.

Shi Yan shuddered inside, as he immediately recognized that Da Lei was absolutely a supernatural expert. The one who could conceal all of his aura and reveal nothing to the outer world must have a tremendous realm, which he didn't dare to imagine.

"Ah, my Prince, you also came here. Excellent! Today is my lucky



day. My Prince and Princess are here. Such an honor has touched me so much." Da Lei looked at Du Feng, who had arrived the last, his face was joyful as he screamed continually.

"Greetings, Uncle Da Lei. I wish you could increase your realm to another level and expand your territory with more experts under your command." Du Feng slightly bent his body, his face natural.

"Thank you, thank you," Da Lei laughed cheerily. "As your golden mouth has wished me the best, I must try my best effort. Haha, perhaps I can borrow your luck. I can feel the sign of breaking through recently. I think your wish has its effect then." Da Lei seemed to be in a good mood as he thundered his happy words.

Standing behind him were the experts under his command. They stood upright, making their auras stronger and more intimidating.

Zi Yao, Du Feng, and the others had a streak of fear in their eyes, their faces panic-stricken.

Shi Yan's face remained as calm as usual. However, he was shaken inside. He was more surprised while looking at Da Lei.

Da Lei had reached a realm Shi Yan didn't dare to estimate. And now he said that he was about to break through again. This man was really frightening! If it happened that way, it was him prevailing over them from the very first encounter.

Shi Yan was good at reading people's words and countenance. He could see how uneasy Zi Yao and Du Feng were, so he understood that what Da Lei said had given them a headache. It was a feeling of finding the way to get off the tiger once one got on its back.

"Then, we have to congratulate Uncle," Princess Zi Yao smiled. Her beautiful eyes moved, falling on the young man standing behind Da Lei. "Brother Da Meng, are you about to break through, too?"

The young man of the Ghost Mark Clan was shaken. He cracked a smile and then nodded. "Your Highness has such bright eyes. I

think it will take three years max to enter the King God Realm. Haha, it's my father who cares about me a lot. He has collected a lot of spiritual pellets and medicines to help me advance."

Zi Yao's eyes sparkled but her heart sank to the bottom. She peeked at Shi Yan meaningfully as she was sighing in her heart.

She was hesitant now, whether it was a good idea or not.

Da Meng had been so intimidating already. At the Third Sky of True God Realm, he could battle with a King God Realm warrior under Da Lei's force. Although the other hadn't tried his best, it was enough to prove that Da Meng was prominent.

If he could reach the threshold to break through again, he must have made some attainment recently. This was what was dangerous about Da Meng. He was about to reach a new realm.

Zi Yao didn't favor Shi Yan especially, and on hearing Da Meng, she became even more worried. Now, she was afraid that Shi Yan would be defeated right when he joined the battle. At that time, Da Lei and his son wouldn't be scared, but it would help increase their pride and arrogance even more.

She suddenly got a headache.

"My son didn't just boast. I've checked him carefully. He's at the threshold, indeed." Da Lei laughed contentedly, glancing at Zi Yao and Du Feng. A mysterious pride appeared in his eyes.

Zi Yao's mood became heavy.

Du Feng and Bergh also signaled her to give up the idea of letting Shi Yan combat with him. It would save their faces and the imperial prowess.

Zi Yao frowned, but she didn't reveal her thoughts, just glancing at Shi Yan, as if she were asking for his opinion.

Shi Yan's bearings were neither scared nor surprised. He looked at her straight in the eyes and nodded slightly.

Zi Yao was amazed. She looked at him for a while. Her hesitant thought seemed to get clearer.

It was unknown why, but on seeing Shi Yan's natural posture, she felt that she still had hope betting on this battle.

Shi Yan had something that could ease her mind, giving her an unclear trust.

Shi Yan had soon known who was going to be his opponent. The aura and energy surging from Da Meng's body was tremendous and intimidating, which was much more exaggerated than Bao Ao and Jie Ji. It was true that he was about to break through.

If Shi Yan hadn't broken through to the Second Sky of True God Realm, going through the period of arduous practice and his tough self-training, he wouldn't dare to agree with her.

However, he understood that this battle would determine his future. He didn't want to retreat, and he did want to see how much those days of ascetic training had helped him increase his power.

"Your Highness, can we join the party now?" Da Lei was laughing inwardly, but his face was respectful. He bowed and asked.

Princess Zi Yao nodded and smiled. "Thank you, Uncle."

Zi Yao's group sauntered toward the palaces in front of them amidst the warm welcome of father and son Da Lei. They, then saw the high and luxurious structures like small mounts, accompanied with so many beautiful lakes like pieces of emerald decorating the area.

Thick heaven and earth energy was guided into the place. The walls around the place had so many restraints and barriers, which emitted a furious energy. If someone carelessly touched them, the counterattack shot back would be tremendous.

Shi Yan frowned, quietly following Princess Zi Yao. He discreetly assessed the surroundings and becoming more astounded.

Compared to the defensive walls of this place, the Utmost Eight Purgatories City he had built in the Perpetual Night Forest was just a toy, be it in terms of the scale or defending ability.

He believed that even a King God Realm warrior, who wanted to vandalize this place, would be killed by the formation and barriers set up here. The guards of this place didn't need to move even a finger.

Da Meng put on a sincere smiling face, following Princess Zi Yao. He generously and amicably introduced the defensive power of this area. Shi Yan could see a gleam of arrogance in his eyes.

This young man didn't conceal his admiration towards Princess Zi Yao. Anybody could see that.

While he was introducing the place, he didn't forget to chat with Du Feng. He was so thoughtful that he didn't let Du Feng feel neglected.

However, except for Zi Yao and Du Feng, he didn't care about anyone else. He didn't even give them a glance. Da Meng disdainfully skipped them all.

In this star area, he was the master. He could swagger without caring about anything, as each life star in this area belonged to his territory. Since he was a little kid, he had been grown up under his father's favor and affections. With outstanding innate endowment, he could break through to the new realm fast. That was why his father loved him even more than before.

He had the competence to be arrogant.

Shi Yan watched everything in silence. He didn't say anything, but he was astounded in his heart.

Da Lei was one of the feudal vassals of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. However, he had around ten life stars, and some big mineral stars. He had his own territory and people. He could be considered the lord of a large region.

His palaces were grand and large like the mountains jutting up to the sky, with countless restraints and formations. Under his commands were many hotshots, as dense as clouds in the sky. Shi Yan could detect almost one hundred King God Realm warriors, even one of whom was enough to destroy the entire Grace Mainland.

Da Lei's force was too powerful in Shi Yan's eyes.

Thinking about the Dark Firmament Divine Nation and the other forces that could stand shoulder by shoulder with it, Shi Yan felt so small in this vast universe.

He had just made his first step to the Raging Flaming Star Area. Compared to the other experts, he was just like a tiny, vulnerable ant.

He knew he had to try his best nonstop. He shouldn't relax. If he wanted to survive and gain things, he must become stronger by any means.

Quietly clenching his fists, Shi Yan's eyes became more resolute, as his goal was clear.

## Chapter 724: A quota

---

Inside the massive palace hall, people were enjoying good wine and various kinds of delicious food. Gentle young girls were dancing on the green tiled floor in the middle of the hall. It was a peaceful and harmonious atmosphere.

Da Lei and Da Meng were constantly offering good wine to them with smiling faces. They were showing their warm hospitality to their distinguished guests, making Princess Zi Yao and Prince Du Feng comfortable.

Shi Yan and Bergh's team weren't eligible to join this party. They were all standing behind Princess Zi Yao and Prince Du Feng, waiting for orders.

Many warriors under Da Lei's command visited and cheered with Princess Zi Yao and Prince Du Feng. No one paid attention to the group of warriors standing behind them.

Shi Yan belonged to the group which was neglected. No one gave him even a glance.

When the party had come halfway, Da Lei laughed cheerily. "My distinguished guests, your Highness, I have nothing to offer you but some exotic fruits we don't have in our country. I hope you would enjoy them."

He clapped his hands. Shortly, some maids brought over trays of fruits with so many succulent and fresh fruits. Those fruits had an intimidating energy accumulated within.

At first glance, Shi Yan was shaken, discreetly amazed.

Those fruits looked really delicious. They had some fine, natural patterns with clear energy waves rippling. It seemed the energy they contained was much easier to absorb than that of the Divine Crystals.

Those fruits should be some kind of heaven and earth products

that they could use directly without waiting for the alchemist to refine them.

Right when Princess Zi Yao and Du Peng saw the fruits, their eyes brightened. They didn't wait for the others to offer but extended their hands to grab the fruits.

"Uncle Da Lei's generous, indeed. We haven't seen the fruits with pure energy from heaven and earth like these. It seems we've made the best decision to let Uncle Da Lei guard this area," Princess Zi Yao smiled tenderly while having the fruit. She nodded continually, as if she was in a good mood.

Du Feng didn't say a word as he was wolfing down the fruits, which were the best for his cultivation. He didn't want to let this chance slide away.

While eating the fruits, a clear energy fluctuation rippled from him as though he was taking in the energy of the fruits. Shortly, his Qi became abundant, and his face glowed with full spirit.

Da Lei laughed, "If your Highness likes them, I'll give you some when you leave. You can enjoy more on your trip."

"Thank you, Uncle Da Lei," Princess Zi Yao laughed cheerily. Her beautiful eyes sparkled while she threw a glance at Da Meng. "Da Meng, your realm has been progressed fast. I think you can break through to the King God Realm shortly. It's our fortune, too. When I get back, I will report my Father on your efforts. I'm sure my Father will be pleased."

Da Meng's eyes brightened. "If I can gain the King's recognition, it will be my greatest honor."

"As long as you're loyal to the Empire and making progress, my Father will recognize you." Zi Yao smiled, but her eyes were somehow strange.

"Come here, come here. We'll drink more. It's not often that your Highness comes here. We must enjoy until we feel pleased," Da Lei

laughed and continued to pour wine for them.

Shi Yan was always watching to evaluate Da Meng's moves while standing behind Princess Zi Yao. He knew that this man was really dangerous. If they had to fight, Shi Yan couldn't be 100% sure.

It was beyond his expectation that Zi Yao didn't arrange a battle for him and Da Meng. She hadn't mentioned it even when the party got over. She made an excuse that she was tired due to the long trip and then took him away, leaving the party.

Leaving the palace, Shi Yan saw many warriors under Da Lei's command transporting materials and goods to Zi Yao's battleship. Those were probably the presents, the taxes that Da Lei had to submit to his superior. Many of them were strange and rare things Shi Yan had never seen before.

Da Meng himself took Zi Yao's delegation to a charming but quiet palace. From the beginning to the end, Da Meng had always smiled and talked to Princess Zi Yao and Prince Du Feng, as if they were chatting about some family stuff. He didn't look at Shi Yan even once.

When Zi Yao implied him, Da Meng got her signal and left.

Waiting until the young man left, Bergh and Du Feng immediately put on solemn countenances. "Sis, I think we should forget this battle. Lately, Da Meng's realm has been upgraded. The energy fluctuations accumulated on his body aren't much less than a King God Realm warrior. He just hasn't achieved the God Body yet. We don't need this battle for sure," advised Du Feng.

Bergh nodded in agreement. "Your Highness, I think we don't have even one percent chance of victory in this battle. We don't need to carry on with this idea."

Princess Zi Yao didn't answer them. Her dark brows slammed together as she looked at Shi Yan. "Do you dare to battle with him?"



Under people's scrutinizing look, Shi Yan's visage was cold and somber. "I want to try once. Although I'm not sure I could win, I won't embarrass you."

"You should think about it carefully," Princess Zi Yao was severe. It was rare that she put on such solemn countenance. "Da Meng's a brutal man. Not many people could have a decent end after fighting with him. Have you made up your mind? If you lose, the best scenario would be you being hurt severely. It'd be normal if you got killed. Da Meng holds a noble status. If he kills you during the fight, I can't say anything. Have you made up your mind thoroughly?"

"Sis!"

"Your Highness!"

Du Feng and Bergh let out a low shout. They seemed to be very discontented, as they didn't know why Princess Zi Yao was so stubborn.

Waving her hands, Princess Zi Yao eased the other two's minds. She frowned and then explained. "Although Da Lei looks humble, I can sense his arrogance through his voice. If we don't correct him, he will become wilder. Da Meng's at the Peak of True God Realm now. If nothing unexpected happened, he would break through smoothly soon. Of course, if he loses this battle or it's a tie, it will leave a deep impression in his heart. It would follow him forever and create a Mara. It's a good chance. Don't miss it. If we miss it and let him enter the King God Realm, it'll be tough to suppress him later."

"But, Shi Yan has no chance to defeat him," Bergh beamed a forced smile.

Princess Zi Yao didn't say anything, and just looked at Shi Yan.

"I'll do my best." Shi Yan's face was indifferent, as if he didn't know how dangerous Da Meng was. "Your Highness, don't worry. I

won't let you down."

"Good. Brave enough!" Princess Zi Yao nodded heavily. "I'll make a bet this time. If you can win this battle, I will give you more benefits. I won't tell you what it is. When you win, you will know what you can get."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened.

"Then, we'll do like that." Princess Zi Yao stopped Bergh and Du Feng from talking more. "In the next two days, you guys have to watch everything carefully, especially the tax. Don't let Da Lei trick us and submit less than required."

Bergh nodded.

...

It had been three days, and Princess Zi Yao's delegation hadn't come out, using the excuse that they wanted to rest more.

Shi Yan didn't notice anything outside, just focusing on his cultivation. He had performed the powers Upanishad he had learned in his head several times. Also, he always maintained his spirit, soul, and Qi at the peak to be well prepared for the upcoming battle.

Staying on this life star, he found that his Star Martial Spirit had gained the best benefits. When he urged his Star Martial Spirit, the solar energy from the three suns in the sky flowed massively into his body, pouring in a scorching heat which made him want to battle to vent it out.

So, a battle was his wish at this moment.

He still maintained this desire for a fight with tense nerves. He had prepared for a strenuous battle, which could happen at any minute.

Eventually, Princess Zi Yao got out of her room. She walked with a group of her men to her amethyst battleship. A warrior handed

her the logbook, then she started to check it thoroughly.

As Da Lei and Da Meng saw her, they took a delegation of one hundred warriors and came to greet her humbly.

Princess Zi Yao nodded to them and then continued to read the list of materials and goods in her documents. After a while, she lifted her head, talking with astonishment in her voice. "Uncle Da Lei, I think something's wrong with this list."

Shi Yan shuddered. His eyes changed as he secretly put up guard.

Da Lei was still smilingly calm as usual. "What? We've missed something?"

"No, nothing's missed," Princess Zi Yao shook her head, her face odd. "Much more than required. Uncle Da Lei, your required amount isn't that big. You've miscalculated, I suppose."

Shi Yan was surprised. He used to think that Da Lei didn't have goodwill and he would reduce the offerings. He thought that the battle would happen soon. However, the situation was quite contrary. Shi Yan was skeptical.

"Haha, then it's alright," Da Lei laughed. "The added amount is in the hope to open a path for my son. It's... the Extreme Purgatory Field is about to open. Although my son's realm is relatively low, he can reluctantly go there. I'm offering more goods to ask for a favor from the King. I hope he would remember my loyalty and give him a quota."

Princess Zi Yao and Du Feng became odd, frowning.

Shi Yan didn't know what the 'Extreme Purgatory Field' they mentioned was. However, seeing the big amount of goods Da Lei wanted to submit to gain a slot for his son, it was no doubt it was a good place indeed.

"Two quotas Uncle Da Lei nominated have gone to the Extreme Purgatory Field. People who get in there need to contribute greatly to the Empire. Although brother Da Meng has an exquisite

cultivation base, he hasn't contributed much to our country. It's not good to favor him." Princess Zi Yao furrowed her brows as if it were hard to decide. "It's not easy to solve this."

Da Lei's face darkened. "I've done so many things for the Empire. It shouldn't be a problem if I let my son share my merit. Moreover, I've offered a lot of good things. Aren't they enough to let my son get in there? When my son gets out, he will contribute to our Empire. Can't you help us with this?"

Da Meng's face was getting colder.

"The number of quotas is limited each time. If Da Meng wants to go, we have to cross out another person. It's not convenient." Princess Zi Yao calmly shook her head.

"I heard that Your Highness has a quota this year. Can you?" Da Lei suddenly smiled again. "You've reached the Third Sky of King God Realm. You don't need to visit the Extreme Purgatory Field, right? What about you name a price for your quota. I'll really appreciate it!"

Shi Yan immediately reacted. Turned out that Da Lei had planned for a long time to get the quota from Princess Zi Yao.

Princess Zi Yao changed her visage. Rage flashed in her beautiful eyes. She pondered for three seconds and then pointed at Shi Yan all of a sudden. "I want to give that quota to him."

# Chapter 725: Exposed!

---

After her words, everybody else gazed at Shi Yan.

Not only were Da Lei and Da Meng startled, but Du Feng, Bergh, and the other warriors following Princess Zi Yao also discolored in shock.

Only Princess Zi Yao could maintain her natural composure. She smiled charmingly. "I've planned to assign that quota to him. Recently, he's done many things for me. And, all that I've done is to contribute to the Empire. So, it can be said that he has contributed his efforts to the Empire too."

Da Lei's face was cold. His blade-like eyes scanned Shi Yan over and over.

Shi Yan felt a vague pain wherever the other's eyes glided over his body. It seemed that his soul also got attacked by needles, causing an annoying pain that he made him want to die to end it.

Shi Yan was frightened. His visage changed while he was accumulating his energy to prepare himself discreetly.

Da Lei had just looked at him, yet it was too much to bear. If the other wanted to kill him, it would be much effortless like killing an ant.

This feeling irritated him a lot.

Shi Yan understood that what Princess Zi Yao said was just to deceive the others to make a chance for him to get on the stage, facilitating his battle with Da Meng. As for the merit, it was all fiction. Since Da Lei and Da Meng had never seen him before, they would have no means to prove it.

"Is he entitled to enter the Extreme Purgatory Field when he's only at the Second Sky of True God Realm?" Da Lei snorted with a dark face. "Since when has the Extreme Purgatory become that easy to enter?"

"Although his realm isn't high, his competence is enough," Princess Zi Yao nodded and smiled. "Just several days ago, he killed a Third Sky of True God Realm expert of the Underworld League. Well, it took him less than a minute."

Da Lei was surprised, though disdain was still visible on his face. "Just a small warrior of the Underworld League, do you think he could be compared to my son? My son can battle against King God Realm experts. His competence is proven to get into the Extreme Purgatory Field. About this kid... I think he isn't eligible!"

"Well, whether or not he's eligible, I think we should test it." Princess Zi Yao wasn't enraged, smiling to Da Meng. "You guys can fight with each other. If you win, I will give you this quota. How does it sound?"

"Is he eligible to be my match?" Da Meng sneered. "My opponents all have reputations. Well, do I look like I have a lot of free time to play with an anonymous kid like him?"

"Shi Yan's my follower, also the one I want to send to the Extreme Purgatory Field. He has done a lot for the Empire. When I say he's eligible, he's eligible!" Princess Zi Yao didn't smile anymore, speaking coldly. "If you don't dare to battle him, I'm sorry, you guys should find another way around for a quota. Perhaps, you can ask for it from another feudal vassal. Then, you don't need to babble with me."

Da Lei paled slightly.

The Dark Firmament Divine Empire had five Grand Vassals under the King. Da Lei was just one of them, and his position and force weren't the strongest.

The other four Grand Vassals were not weaker than him. Their realms and forces were even better than his!

It was really tough to ask for a quota from them. Since he had known he couldn't do that, he had to aim at Princess Zi Yao's

quota.

Shi Yan hadn't said anything, but he was accumulating his energy secretly. He had maintained the peak state for a fight. He knew that he would be exposed to a bloody battle, where he could shine his talent for the first time in the Raging Flame Star Area, at any minute.

"Your Highness, you mean as long as my son can defeat your cortege, you will give us that quota?" Da Lei contemplated for a while and then grinned all of a sudden. He wasn't so hostile as before, giving people a feeling of a tender and mild person.

However, his sharp eyes were gazing at Shi Yan with a gleam of brutal aura in his pupils.

As he had said that, Princess Zi Yao was bewildered. She slammed her brows together, throwing a glance at Shi Yan, while she was actually sighing in her heart. She said persistently, "It's true. If he can defeat Shi Yan, I'll grant him my quota."

"Thank you, Your Highness," Da Lei suddenly laughed, clapping his hands. "It's my bad, I misunderstood you. Turns out you've treated us best, as you wanted to give us a quota for free. How dumb I am! I just realized your hardship. I'm so bad I deserve to be dead."

He laughed out loud, glancing at Da Meng. "Then we shall get to the arena and train with the Princess' warrior. Remember son, you have to reduce your force. Don't you ever hurt the Princess' henchman."

As Da Meng heard his father, he seemed to understand something, bowing to Princess Zi Yao with a big smile on his face. "Your Highness, thank you for your favor. I will carve it in my heart, and I will never forget your favor today."

The other warriors standing behind them also wore a strange smile.

Princess Zi Yao and Du Feng grimaced, and people couldn't see their real thoughts.

Apparently, the other didn't consider Shi Yan an equal match. He disdained Shi Yan, and he just took the battle as a step of the procedure to get a pass. This game would be ended in seconds.

"Please instruct me more!"

Under such pressured atmosphere, Shi Yan took one step forward. With a calm face and a straight back, he diffused an aura as massive as a mountain.

People's mocking laughter ceased gradually. Da Lei, his son, and their men looked at Shi Yan with a natural face, as they weren't really serious while standing before this big fight.

"Go, and behave. Don't act unreasonably like you've always done. They offer you a quota for free. You should be grateful," Da Lei said relaxedly, waving his hand.

Princess Zi Yao's beautiful eyes sparkled strangely. She signaled Du Feng, Bergh, and the others to step back and leave a spacious area for Shi Yan and Da Meng, which would facilitate their battle, as they didn't need to worry about hurting the onlookers.

Shi Yan stood firm like a rock. He wasn't enraged by the sneering and mocking noises around. Such calmness made people feel weird. He acted like he was just a man in the crowd who was about to watch a good game, instead of the one who would take part in the battle.

Da Lei also waved his hand to make his delegation step back. Da Meng laughed out loud, throwing Shi Yan a glance. "Don't worry. I'll give the Princess face by not killing you. Anyway, I'm not a well-behaved guy. I'll perhaps leave some marks on you. It's normal though. Don't be tense. I won't take your life."

"Talkative," Shi Yan parted his lips and couldn't help but snort.

Da Meng's countenance became icy-cold. "Kid, what did you just



say?"

"I say, you're like a p\*ssy. You talk too much before the battle. Too talkative. Don't you feel annoyed?" Shi Yan said with a serious face.

Da Meng laughed louder. "You want to enrage me? Funny, eh? Do you think that you can affect the match by provoking me? Are you that naive? Who do you think you are? Although you can provoke me and mess my mind, do you think you could dodge this disaster?"

"Annoying!"

Shi Yan stooped slightly, then frowned and shouted.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Three Bone Thorns appeared behind Da Meng, hissing and stabbing fiercely towards his back.

Since those Bone Thorns were added with space power, they could use Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness to tear the space and appear out of thin air without any prior signals. By the time Da Meng found them, the three Bone Thorns were just a blink away from him.

Thud Thud Thud!

Three dull thudding sounds echoed. A flower bloomed behind Da Meng beautifully and evilly, creating a flower shield to prevent the three Bone Thorns thrusting. Real flower petals scattered.

The man's body shook three times. His face reddened, as a gleam of anger sparkled in his eyes. Shi Yan had finally provoked him.

"You've overreached yourself." Da Meng thundered indignantly, touching his forehead. A spinning soul altar flew out from his Sea of Consciousness. A massive soul got out of his glabella.

It was a Silver-armored Tigon King, that was around ten meters long. This Tigon King was really famous in the Raging Flame Star

Area. The Silver-armored Tigon King had silver scales around its body. It looked both like the lion and tiger, with an intimidating power and extremely sharp claws that could tear metals and rock easily. This creature had an inborn prowess, with its two eyes looking like two cubes of vivid blood. It was so frightening and amazing!

This Silver-armored Tigon King was just a soul. It seemed to have taken shelter in Da Meng's soul altar, where Da Meng raised the tigon. As soon as it got out, the Silver-armored Tigon King rolled on the ground. Big rocks then stuck on its massive body like pieces of clay.

Shortly, the tigon in its soul form had gained flesh from rocks. Its aura diffused brutally and evilly, as its formidable Blood Qi and energy expanded torrentially.

The ten-meters-tall Silver-armored Tigon King now had silver rocks as its armor. It then faced up the sky and roared ear-splittingly. Then, its sharp blade claws swept over Shi Yan, as if it wanted to rip Shi Yan's body apart and tear his abdomen instantly.

Energy fluctuations on the Silver-armored Tigon King were formidable. This creature didn't act as if it were just a soul. Moreover, it was more ruthless than before it died. Seeing its aura and swift moves, Princess Zi Yao's warriors were startled, their looks changing.

The cold visage on Zi Yao's face disappeared. Worry showed on her exquisite face. Her eyes flared as she was nervous secretly.

If Shi Yan lost this game, not only would she lose a quota, but it would also blow Da Lei's arrogance. This opportunity would give Da Meng a great benefit, which would make it hard to suppress him later.

No matter what, she didn't wish that Shi Yan would lose this game. However, as soon as Da Meng took action, she was astounded by his power. Finally, she could verify the rumors about

this young man. Da Meng did have the competence to battle with King God Realm warriors.

Different from her, as soon as Da Meng struck out, his father, Da Lei, immediately smiled relaxingly. With the service from his maids, he was smiling and eating fruits while talking with a warrior standing next to him.

He wasn't worried at all, as he seemed to know the result of this match beforehand. He believed that his son would win effortlessly.

No one expected good prospects for Shi Yan, including Princess Zi Yao, who had believed in him before. After seeing how strong Da Meng was, she suddenly felt regret. She regretted her decision of taking a risk and letting a strange warrior join this battle.

The woman worriedly watched Shi Yan as she sighed, thinking about her mistake and what to do to make it up.

However, while she hadn't thought about any good solutions, she saw something in Shi Yan's eyes. A tyrannically malicious aura burst out from Shi Yan, which could even shake her.

"A!" Princess Zi Yao's eyes brightened, and couldn't help but let out a breath. "Ah!"

# Chapter 726: Upanishad advancement

---

Shi Yan immediately urged negative energy of the acupuncture points in his entire body, creating a pale membrane enveloping his body.

Second Sky of Rampage!

His eyes turned blood red instantly. A brutal, wild, and malicious aura diffused quietly from his body, raising his imposing aura to another high level.

The sharp claws of the Silver-armored Tigon King tore the wind. Its ten-meters long body jumped like a massive mountain, pressing down on Shi Yan and giving forth a strong intimidating.

"Seven Stars Change the Moon!"

Shi Yan thundered. The Star Martial Spirit in front of his chest radiated a dazzling light. Numerous stars gathered into seven massive star clusters.

The seven star clusters were as bright as blazing diamonds, with torrentially surging energy. They rotated and then moved in the trajectory of the Northern Stars.

ROAR!

The Silver-armored Tigon King roared, storming towards the center of the seven massive star clusters. It twisted its body in the air and then pressed down.

A furious energy wave exploded from inside the Seven Clusters. The Seven Northern Stars released formidable energy waves like the strongest dynamite, as starlight shot out at max speed.

Silver scales on the Silver-armored Tigon King's body shook. The starlight that had just fallen got through the scales to intrude the tigon's body and then its soul.

Swoosh!

The Silver-armored Tigon King's giant body disappeared into so many beams of starlight, which looked extremely strange.

When the Silver-armored Tigon King reappeared, it fell around one thousand meters behind Shi Yan. It then heavily impacted the ground, digging up a large and deep hole. Pieces of rock scattered everywhere, with thick smoke and dust rising up.

Shi Yan didn't look behind his back. His eyes were like a sharp sword shooting towards Da Meng. A thought flashed through his head.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The three Bone Thorns, which had already disappeared, suddenly stormed over from a blind corner. Their aura became sharper and stronger, thrusting towards Da Meng.

This time, they didn't aim at his back but his front. Two of them aimed at his eyes while the last one was flying towards his glabella, with a strange aura that could pierce through anything.

The onlookers were breathing gingerly with astounded faces. Their eyes gazed at Shi Yan, but they were all tense.

Da Lei stopped talking to the warrior next to him. He was still holding a bunch of crystal grapes, but he seemed to forget eating them. His black eyes were gloomy, as he was extremely dissatisfied.

Standing behind him were almost one hundred King God Realm warriors. They all were frowning and putting up guard. Their happy and relaxed manners had been replaced with serious looks.

Prince Du Feng and Bergh's group dropped their jaws, as if they were watching an unbelievable scene. They were astounded, looking at Shi Yan with awe. At this moment, they had put aside the distressed and begrudging feeling they had had before the battle.

Princess Zi Yao's eyes were still as bright as diamonds. A gleam of

happiness appeared on her smooth cheeks. Her perfect body became calm as she stretched out laughing. She threw a glance at Da Lei. Seeing Da Lei discolor, she suddenly felt much better.

Shi Yan's performance was a little bit over her estimation. She had thought that this battle would have nothing surprising anymore. Under Da Meng's furious attack, Shi Yan would be hurt soon. Or, he could even be killed shortly.

She didn't know what to do and began to consider how to save the situation. It was unexpected that at the moment she was worried the most, Shi Yan suddenly showed his supernatural abilities, dissolving a fatal attack of the Silver-armored Tigon King. She was cheered up again, as the flame of hope was ignited in her heart.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The tearing wind sound made by the Bone Thorns was like a ghost screaming and asking for people's lives.

Beyond their expectations, when the Bone Thorns flew in the sky, they didn't move in a straight way. Strangely, they moved like snakes, slithering and changing their directions constantly, which made it hard to trace their whereabouts.

Wherever the three Bone Thorns glided over, they left three bright white streaks in the air, just like the tail of meteors. They even twisted with each other, which looked extremely strange and devilish.

Da Meng knew that the aura of those three Bone Thorns had locked his eyes and glabella. However, seeing their constantly changing direction and their increasing aura, he couldn't make up his mind, as the Bone Thorns could come from any direction instead of the starting one.

Although the first attack from the three Bone Thorns was sharp and fierce, it was a straight attack with obvious targets. Thus, even

if he had reacted a little bit slower, he could still create a shield behind his back to stop them.

However, at this moment, he couldn't be sure about anything. He couldn't guess the direction of attack, so he had to create a thick defensive layer covering his entire body, leaving no tiny leak. He was afraid that the Bone Thorns could aim at his flaws.

Shi Yan stood still, but a blood-red halo was expanding from his eyes. He looked like a demon from the abyss of Hell watching its prey. His look made people anxious.

Flows of his Soul Consciousness quietly reached the three Bone Thorns. Since he had mastered using space power, his Bone Thorns could swiftly glide through space and avoid the other's Soul Consciousness coverage in a short period. That was how they became so evilly cunning that people couldn't catch them.

Not long after Shi Yan had arrived in this Raging Flame Star Area, he knew warriors in this place didn't use many clear or fixed martial techniques, as they had only used the power Upanishad, the fundamental knowledge of heaven and earth's power.

Martial techniques were the ways of using energy and power Upanishads accurately. If they had a deep understanding of the Upanishads and a profound realm, they could vary their use of powers, and could create their unique martial techniques without considering the minor details.

Warriors in the Raging Flame Star Area had used the power Upanishad as the foundation to create the martial techniques through their understanding of the principles of their own powers and the particular situations. They wouldn't have a fixed style during fighting.

For example, the Dipper God Arrow of the Radiant God Cult was a way of using the star power of the Star Martial Spirit. However, as Shi Yan had a deep understanding of the Star Upanishad and the movement of the Big Dipper, he could use the simplest rules of

Nature and the situation of his battle to adjust the Big Dipper God Arrow as he liked. With small amendments, he could create a new martial technique, and also a new type of energy attack.

In the high-level continents, the power Upanishads were the foundation. As long as a warrior understood a rule of natural power, when he used this energy, he could base it on different given circumstances to create a better martial technique to attack his opponent. He could create a new martial technique at any time as he pleased.

Martial techniques were just the means to show the rules of Nature as they rebuilt and changed some kind of natural energy.

As they knew the foundation, the martial techniques would frequently change from time to time to show its best features.

The more they understood the power Upanishad and principles of heaven and earth, the more perfectly and flexibly they could utilize their energies during a fight. At the same time, the martial techniques they created during the battles would become more powerful and tremendous to promote the essence of power Upanishads.

As the three Bone Thorns had the essence of the mysterious space, it naturally advanced into the magical martial technique. It took curves in the air, making indefinite turns while gathering more and more space power to become devilishly sharper.

When the Bone Thorns almost stabbed Da Meng, they disappeared into thin air one more time as if they had fallen into a space crack, leaving no aura.

Da Meng discolored. He was totally alert, as he knew the attack would arrive abruptly.

Swoosh!

The three Bone Thorns suddenly flashed. They were moving in a triangular formation and hadn't changed their targets yet, still



aiming at his eyes and glabella.

At the moment they appeared visibly, they were just ten centimeters away from Da Meng, as if they could directly prick his sockets.

"F\*CK!"

Da Meng shouted ear-splittingly. A mark arose from deep inside his eyes. People could see his soul altar tremble a little bit.

A beast soul rolled, appeared, and enlarged from his left eye shortly. That beast looked like a giant hedgehog. Spikes on its body glistened radiantly.

Boom Boom Boom!

The three Bone Thorns stabbed on that beast, making it groan mournfully and bizarrely. The massive body of the beast shriveled rapidly. When the aura of the three Bone Thorns ceased completely, the beast got back into Da Meng's eyes, staying quietly in his soul altar.

Da Meng sneered. Countless symbols and charms sparkled in his hands. He grabbed the three Bone Thorns halting in front of him with one hand. So many symbols and charms flowed like a furious current of water, swarming into the three Bone Thorns.

The Bone Thorns made of the bones of a level 10 beast were softened under the power of those magical symbols.

Crack Crack!

Da Meng squeezed his hand, and the three Bone Thorns were broken into ten pieces. He then used both hands to knead the bones. Shortly, bone dust scattered as he had ground them up fully.

While smirking, he touched his forehead. His eyes were icy cold as he was giving orders using his Soul Consciousness.

Two more beasts were coming out of his eyes. They were a giant

hawk with blooming orange light and a one-eyed wolf. These two beasts were also in their soul form. As soon as they got out of his eyes, they started to take in the massive amount of heaven and earth energy. Shortly, their bodies gained the energy of the oppressive outer space, becoming full of flesh and blood Qi. They both looked imposing.

At the same time, the Silver-armored Tigon King, which had been struck hard by Shi Yan's Star power, stood up while glaring at him maliciously. It then faced up the sky, roaring terribly and gathering the heaven and earth energy. Just like a gray sand tornado, it furiously attacked Shi Yan's back.

"Don't kill him," Da Lei suddenly beamed a faint smile. He evilly peeked at Princess Zi Yao, asking his son. "Wounding is alright. He's just a barbarian warrior. Our Princess won't blame us for hurting him. Spare his life. This kid's good though. He's strong enough to force you using three soul beasts."

Du Feng, Bergh, and the others became grim, their faces gloomy.

"Kid, without those strange Bone Thorns, let see what tricks you have," Da Meng smirked. Even though his face was a little bit pale, his eyes were still as sharp as blades.

Shi Yan frowned, but he didn't hasten to answer or to look at his back. Instead, he looked at Princess Zi Yao standing aside. "I want to use all of my force to counter, so I'm not sure if I'll be careful enough not to hurt the opponent."

Rumble rumble!

The gray tornado of the Silver-armored Tigon King fell into Shi Yan's Gravitational Field, and then was ground by different energies in there. The tigon could create no threat to him now.

Princess Zi Yao's heart, which was tensed tight, calmed down on hearing him. She looked at him in the eyes and then beamed a bright smile. "It's hard to avoid getting hurt during a battle. I think

brother Da Meng has been prepared. You can use your full force.  
No need to be afraid so much."

"That will do!"

# Chapter 727: Soul Burial Ground Deadly Upanishad!

---

Shi Yan extended his right arm., as starlight gathered rapidly together, along with a flow of flaming solar energy.

It happened in just a blink of an eye. A broad starlight sword that was around three meters long appeared in Shi Yan's hand, which was made of starlight and solar energy. The sword had a burning red core, and edges made of starlight. It sparkled beautifully while releasing intimidating energy fluctuations.

Shi Yan didn't wait until the beasts from Da Meng's soul altar approached him. He faced the sky and roared. Holding the starlight sword, he rocketed to the sky. The broadsword made a gentle curve in the air, then furiously slashed the giant orange-red hawk, the first one approaching him.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Countless beams of starlight shot out from the broadsword. As the sword slashed the giant hawk, it screeched mournfully, struggling in the air as if it wanted to tear Shi Yan apart.

Starlight twirled around Shi Yan's body. Moving accordingly to the trajectory of the stars, Shi Yan continually changed the directions as he agilely dodged the attack of the giant hawk. The broad starlight sword in his hand constantly hacked down. Starlight energy in the sword flowed like quicksand towards the hawk's body.

The giant hawk screeched painfully. However, no matter how hard it tried, it couldn't catch Shi Yan. This also made the bird suffer.

The malignant wolf was pure gold, with a magical moving halo on its big body, as if it was molded out of water. When the wolf moved, water-like light waves would ripple continually.

The wolf bared its fangs and claws, facing the sky to roar loudly. Pure gold beams of light were weaving a net with thick mesh in the air, in an attempt to cover the whole space Shi Yan had occupied. It wanted to confine Shi Yan for a slow torture.

"Tear!"

Shi Yan's blood red eyes were shining radiantly. With a cold countenance, the broad starlight sword in his hand suddenly sent a fierce wave of energy. A flaming energy current that looked like a burning red stream shot out from the sword, pouring on that giant hawk.

The hawk had a fragment of refined energy outside its body, but it was the soul of the bird which was its foundation.

However, every kind of living being in their soul form had to be afraid of scorching heat. Furthermore, the flaming energy of the sun was the nemesis of such soul living beings.

As so many flows of flaming energy were pouring into the hawk and seeping through its soul, the bird's screaming became more pathetic, which irritated people. When the bird was screeching painfully, the vivid gold wolf also wanted to fly up to support his comrade.

The Silver-armored Tigon King roared and dashed forward one more time, but got trapped in the Gravitational Field again. It was like the tigon had fallen into a dangerous muddy puddle. The more it wiggled, the worse it was dragged into the twisting field of different energies. Obviously, it couldn't escape the coverage of the Gravitational Field shortly. It became more indignant, but it couldn't get out.

The starlight sword continued to shoot out the surging flaming solar energy, which shriveled the giant hawk.

As the giant hawk was shrunk, the energy fragment on its body was burned. It looked yearningly at Da Meng from a distance. It

was so frightened that it wanted to get back to the soul altar to recover.

Da Meng grimaced, standing there with cold and dark eyes, as a flame of anger was seething.

However, he didn't send the thought to the hawk to let it get back. Instead, he gritted his teeth and shouted. "Alright, you have good tricks. Seems like I have to do my best here."

He touched his forehead one more time, sending his thought to his soul altar. Abruptly, distinctive energy fluctuations of beasts shot out of his altar. However, there was no beast coming out this time, and instead, the flesh and blood of his entire body started transforming.

Crack Crack Crack!

Da Meng's body started to be animalized at the speed that naked eye could observe. He generated a tremendous suction force to gather the heaven and earth energy, supplementing his bestial power.

A bestial armor appeared on his limbs, forehead, and chest. There were thick layers of silver armor and animal fur growing on his body.

At that moment, Da Meng seemed to transform into a savage beast with a mighty strength. It seemed he had absorbed the energy of the beasts he had abruptly to push his energy to another higher peak, which made people feel scared of him.

From the beginning, Da Meng had never taken action. He had just used the beasts to attack his opponent. Eventually, he couldn't help it anymore. He howled like a beast, just like a great beast of the Ancient times getting awakened. He stood on all fours, storming forward to attack the other.

Stomp Stomp Stomp!

He used all of his limbs to move on the hard stone ground, which

was dug up under his massive pressure. At this moment, he looked like a dangerous beast that had the energy to destroy everything.

"Return!"

Da Meng shouted ear-splittingly the second time.

Instantly, the Silver-armored Tigon King, the giant orange-red hawk, and the pure gold wolf had returned to their soul form, turning into three beams and disappearing into his chest.

Da Meng had transformed completely. His neck and back were covered with thick bestial armor, while his arms and knees had sharp spikes, with a cold metallic light shining. They seemed sharp enough to stab through a mountain.

As he was completely animalized, there was no human feature to be seen on his body. Just like a wild hybrid of many kinds of monsters, he had absorbed the monster energy to develop a bloodthirsty and savage intention of destroying all creatures in the world in his eyes.

This was the power Upanishad Da Meng's had comprehended, which was to fuse with beast souls to improve his abilities. With the power of beasts in his body, he could have the competence to challenge higher-realm warriors.

"Being able to make Young Master Da Meng bring out his real power, this man is excellent enough to be arrogant. Anyway, it's nothing more than that." A King God Warrior standing next to Da Lie frowned and then said, "After being animalized completely, Young Master Da Meng will become more bloodthirsty. I just hope that kid would be lucky enough to survive this savage battle."

Da Lie became absolutely calm. He didn't say anything while his eyes gazed at his son. Pride could be seen in his eyes.

He knew how lethal Da Meng was after he was animalized better than anyone else. Even if that were a King God Realm warrior, if his God Body hadn't reached a high level yet, he couldn't resist Da

Meng's animalized body.

Besides, after Da Meng got animalized, he could use all the energy of the beast souls he had absorbed, which could skyrocket his energy to an intimidating level.

He believed that even if Shi Yan were at the Peak of True God Realm, his result would only be an instant death while fighting with Da Meng.

Du Feng and Bergh were desperate now. They shook their heads with forced smiles, as they had nothing to believe in at the moment.

The power Da Meng was showing could give a headache to Du Feng, a warrior at the First Sky of King God Realm. He felt like he didn't know how or where to attack the other, let alone Shi Yan.

Princess Zi Yao wasn't relaxed anymore; her bright smile had disappeared a long time ago. She knitted her brows tightly, sighing.

Shi Yan's performance didn't fail her. She believed that if it were another Peak of True God Realm warrior, Shi Yan could gain triumph and give her face.

Too bad, Da Meng, a new nova that could fight against the King God Realm warrior, was his opponent this time!

Zi Yao suddenly realized that she didn't underestimate Shi Yan but Da Meng! That was why she thought that at this moment, this battle had nothing else surprising left in it to continue watching.

"Third Sky of Rampage!"

Seeing Da Meng storming towards him with a deadly savage aura, and the holes he made along his way, Shi Yan changed his face for the first time, screaming wildly.

Shortly, pallid tentacles jutted out of the acupuncture points of his entire body. This was the feature of the acme accumulation of



Shi Yan's negative energy. Each tentacle was filled with thoughts of despair, resentment, bloodlust, and a mysteriously evil energy. They all were the representatives of evils.

In the Third Sky of Rampage, his body suddenly shriveled grossly. His flesh and blood seemed to be squeezed off his body. However, the energy in his body had become purer than ever.

In people's eyes, his bony body was full of essence energy. At the same time, his eyes became nonchalant, having no gleam of human emotions.

At this moment, Shi Yan didn't look like a human anymore. Even his breathing had lost the vitality of a living creature. It seemed that his aura had been transformed into a pure part of a combined evil force. This gave people an annoying feeling.

"What kind of a power Upanishad is that? Why is it so strangely evil?" The warrior standing next to Da Lie was startled, his face astounded.

Da Lie was also frowning, looking at Shi Yan with great astonishment.

A feeble beam of light sparkled in Princess Zi Yao's gloomy eyes. She was a little bit shaken.

A Death Intent Domain slowly expanded from Shi Yan. Under the effect of that Death Intent Domain, flowers in the garden pretty far from there suddenly withered. Their vitality flowed massively like a flood draining away.

Insects underground also cried continually as their lives were taken away. Everything became scarily quiet.

Small, flickering light dots also appeared on Princess Zi Yao, Du Feng, Bergh, and the other warriors standing near Shi Yan like fireflies. They then converged slowly towards Shi Yan.

Anybody under the coverage of the Death Intent Domain, as long as they were living creatures, felt irritated while their souls

became exhausted unknowingly.

Princess Zi Yao became dumbstruck, looking at the light dots flying out of her body. She frowned, feeling her soul agitated.

"Taking Life Origin! Soul Burial Ground Deadly Upanishad!" In the deadly silence, Da Lie suddenly recalled something, screaming hoarsely. His face grimaced.

Princess Zi Yao felt like she got a bucket of cold water pouring on her head. She reacted, her beautiful eyes becoming odd while looking at Shi Yan in fright.

The onlookers acted as if they had seen ghosts. Their countenance became terrified. Looking at Shi Yan without an energy fluctuation of living beings, they felt like they were watching a man who reaped lives. They shuddered in their hearts.

However, at this moment, pale tentacles extending from the acupuncture points of Shi Yan's entire body suddenly moved, rolling the flows of light dots from the others and driving them towards Shi Yan.

Those light dots came from the flowers pretty far from Shi Yan, the underground insects, Zi Yao, Du Feng, Bergh, and the other warriors. Those were the Life Origin, the power of vigorous living beings.

Shi Yan felt refreshed and comfortable, as he was brimming with energy incomparably. He could feel his body taking in a large amount of energy. He moved his body and bumped into Da Meng directly, using his bursting energy in its purest form to collide with the other. Light spots sparked everywhere.

Da Lie's face was ash gray, while Princess Zi Yao felt insecure.

## Chapter 728: The feudal vassal admits his defeat

---

Da Lei, Zi Yao, and the other onlookers all wore a grimaced face. Their torch-like eyes gazed at Shi Yan without blinking. It was so quiet that they could even hear the sound of a needle falling on the ground. This silence was terrifying.

The battle between Shi Yan and Da Meng was still going on.

Furious auras and lights twirled around them. However, the two of them didn't recognize the astounded onlookers, as they were still fighting hard.

After Da Meng had been animalized, he had the power of beasts and a non-human appearance. Shi Yan, his opponent, was even more bizarre. His body was shriveled, and he had so many peculiar tentacles sprouting from his acupuncture points.

It seemed like Shi Yan didn't feel pain or other feelings. He just used the strongest attack to counter Da Meng.

Martial techniques that had been generated from different power Upanishads bloomed on their bodies. The two were covered in so many strange beams of light.

During their fight, magical light spots were still sparkling on Zi Yao, Du Feng, Bergh, and the others. They couldn't do anything but watch the flow of light spots rolling towards Shi Yan's tentacles. Those light spots then turned into his unceasing, violent energy, supplementing his battle power.

The more he battled, the fiercer Shi Yan became.

Da Meng had to increase his power continuously to fight Shi Yan. Bestial energy revolved furiously around his body, which could be compared to a level 10 beast at this moment. His animalized body was more like a rigid metal or stone.

Soon, Zi Yao pulled herself together first. She threw a glance over her shoulder and then shouted. "Move. Stay away from Shi Yan's Intent Domain."

As soon as she said that, Prince Du Feng and Bergh felt like they were granted amnesty. They immediately retreated backward with a panic-stricken visage, as they were afraid that the field from him could affect them badly.

Zi Yao also stepped backward far from the battle arena.

Da Lei darkened his face. His eyes sparkled with a terrifying light as he suddenly shouted. "Retreat, all of you. If you don't want to die, stay as far as possible from that kid!"

Many warriors on this life star moved away anxiously. They stood several thousand meters away from Shi Yan, then quietly urged their energy to seal their aura.

After Da Lei had uttered 'Soul Burial Field,' any warrior who had heard this name before acted as if they had seen ghosts. They now looked at Shi Yan with great fright, as an unknown cold current rose from the bottom of their hearts.

In their eyes, Shi Yan used to be neglected. But now, he had turned into a demon which could easily drag their lives into the infinite abyss.

Bang Bang Boom!

Shi Yan's body, which had been quenched through countless challenges, was now covered in blood after Da Meng, in his animalized form, had bombarded him furiously. Shi Yan got badly wounded.

Just like him, Da Meng wasn't as comfortable as he had thought he would be. Wounds appeared on his entire body, while spikes on his elbows, knees, and shoulders were broken. As blood stained all over his face, his eyes became gloomier.

Quite the contrary, this had stimulated his wild instinct. He

roared ferociously, constantly boosting more energy.

The surrounding people quieted down. They stopped talking to each other, their faces solemn. As they looked at the two of them, their looks became bizarre.

Gradually, Da Meng felt exhausted. From time to time, magical light spots would detach from him. After each passing minute, he felt more tired, and he felt that his vitality had been draining unknowingly.

Shi Yan, his opponent, had the opposite status. The more he fought, the more intimidating he became. It seemed that he would never feel tired. His eyes were excited while his aura was getting sharper and more formidable.

The fight continued. But in the others' eyes, the situation now favored only one side, which was totally different from what they had expected.

Apparently, Shi Yan had gained the upper hand at this moment.

"Little Meng, come back here!" All of a sudden, Da Lei shouted.

Da Meng ignored his father. He continued to accumulate his energy, bombarding Shi Yan ferociously. It seemed he didn't want to stop.

So many light spots sparkled on his body then rolled into Shi Yan's tentacles. Da Meng didn't feel anything besides his exhausted spirit. However, depending on his tenacious body, he didn't want to stop. He didn't want to admit his defeat.

Da Lei's face became more solemn as he suddenly rose his arm.

A light curtain unfolded like a fishing net and covered Da Meng instantly. Without waiting for Da Meng to wiggle, his father dragged him out of the arena, far away from Shi Yan.

"Father!" Da Meng screamed, his face brave and stubborn. "Why did you stop me?"

Da Lei's face was as if he could hardly endure it anymore. He shook his head to his son and then took out a longan-sized verdant pellet. "Take it. You should refill your Essence Qi first, and then we'll talk."

"I haven't been defeated yet!" Da Meng didn't take the pellet. His eyes reddened as he wanted to storm to the arena again.

Da Lei harrumphed. The light curtain covering his son suddenly squeezed, restraining all the powers of Da Meng.

"Swallow it!" Da Lei shoved the pellet into his son's mouth. He flickered his thought to confine his son totally, even shutting his son up.

In the battle arena, Shi Yan lost his target. He frowned in surprise, looking at the others bewilderedly.

Having ceased engaging in a battle, his aura started to recede. His terrifying Intent Domain gradually faded out to the point the others couldn't sense it anymore.

"What's going on?" He looked at Da Lei from far away. "Does it count as an end?"

"My son got defeated." It was beyond people's expectations that Da Lei would proactively admit his son's defeat. He gave Shi Yan a deep look and then talked to Zi Yao. "Your Highness is always excellent. Even your follower is indeed talented. Today, I have widened my vision. Your Highness, I just want to ask what kind of relationship is between Shi Yan and that man?"

Shi Yan was surprised, as he didn't understand what the other was talking about.

However, before he had the time to say anything, Princess Zi Yao smiled naturally, waving her hand to signal him to shut up. She seemed to have something in her mind already. She laughed cheerily towards Da Lei. "Shi Yan's his descendant. I think I don't need to talk much about it, right? Uncle Da Lei, you've seen

everything clearly enough, haven't you?"

Da Lei contemplated for a while and then nodded helplessly, his face bitter. "I got it. Why didn't you tell me earlier, Your Highness? If you had told me he was the disciple of that man, how would have I messed up like that?"

Shi Yan frowned as he didn't understand anything. He knew that Da Lei and Zi Yao were talking about something related to him, but he didn't know what to do.

Zi Yao waved her hand, using her eyes to signal him not to talk. He could understand her signal, which was why he didn't say anything. However, on listening to their conversation, he felt something strange, but he couldn't explain.

It seemed that this person they were referring to was someone Da Lei had been wary of a lot, and he had something related to Shi Yan. However, Shi Yan had never known what relationship he had that was enough to terrify Da Lei.

"Haha, I didn't want to reveal it, but Uncle Da Lei has forced me. I had no choice, and had to let you see it yourself." Princess Zi Yao beamed a faint smile, then continued calmly. "If you don't have anything else to discuss, we shall bid farewell here. Anyway, I hope Uncle Da Lei would keep it in a down low for me."

Da Lei put on a forced smile. "How could I dare to talk about it? If someone gets to know about it, it will bring big trouble to our Divine Nation, I'm afraid. Don't worry, I will consider that I haven't seen anything."

"Thank you, Uncle Da Lei," Zi Yao bent her body to greet and thank him.

"Your Highness," Da Lei was dazed for a while, then asked with hope, "Is he... staying in our Raging Flame Star Area? I've heard about his legend, but never seen him before. I wonder if I can be lucky enough to meet him once."

"He isn't in our Raging Flame Star Area. And, where he is, I'm sorry I can't tell. Shi Yan's his disciple. He comes here to practice. That's why I will grant him the quota to go to the Extreme Purgatory Field this time. I think, Uncle Da Lei won't have any opposing opinions now, right?" Princess Zi Yao beamed a vague smile.

"How could I dare? Even if I had more guts, I wouldn't dare have any objections." Da Lei was scared. He bent to greet Shi Yan, his face smiling and friendly. "Little buddy, I've offended you as I didn't know your identity. Please be merciful."

Pausing for a while, Da Lei continued, "Servants, present him a carriage of mineral ingredients for pellets from my treasure. It's my gift to ask for his pardon."

Right after he finished, the King God Realm warrior standing next to him disappeared. Shortly, he pushed over a silver war chariot which was full of colorful materials. Then, they put the entire war chariot into Princess Zi Yao's amethyst battleship.

"I've offended you, little buddy. Please don't blame me," Da Lei clasped his hands, his face honest and his tone sincere.

"Haha, thank you, Uncle Da Lei. I'm late already. I shouldn't annoy you any longer. Goodbye." Princess Zi Yao laughed happily, then turned to Shi Yan. "Get to the ship. We shall depart right now."

Shi Yan was filled with suspicions, but his face was still calm and natural. He smiled and thanked Da Lei, then followed Princess Zi Yao to board the purple battleship.

Zi Yao was a little bit hurried. Right when they had boarded, she ordered to depart. With a loud explosion, the amethyst battleship tore the atmosphere to rocket into the dark universe. The giant bronze steamship, which was waiting for them in outer space, started to move, floating behind the amethyst battleship.



Da Lei watched the amethyst battleship leaving. He didn't say anything, his eyes quite complicated.

After a while, he swung his hand to dissolve the restraint he had put on Da Meng, talking to the others. "You should forget everything you've seen today. No one is allowed to disclose even a small detail. Otherwise, your entire family will suffer!"

One hundred King God Realm warriors standing behind him nodded with icy cold faces.

"Father, what has happened to you? Why did you stop me?" Da Meng shouted right when his restraint was lifted, his face grimaced.

"If you had continued to fight, your vitality would have been taken away completely. At that time, no pellet could help you recover." Da Lei took a deep breath, his face dark and gloomy. "If what Princess Zi Yao said is true, we can't offend that kid. In our Raging Flame Star Area, no one could bear the cost of offending him."

Da Meng was extremely frightened, looking at him bewilderedly.

"It happened so many years ago, when an unknown warrior came to our Raging Flame Star Area with several severe wounds. Wherever he passed by, the vitality of the life stars, including their inhabitants, was taken away. Life stars became dead stars wherever he went by. Within only half a month after he had appeared in the Raging Flame Star Area, there were more than ten life stars that turned into dead stars. Not even a single life fluctuation could be detected."

Da Lei paused for a while and then beamed a forced smile. "The power Upanishad that man used is the Death Upanishad. The God Domain he used was called the Soul Burial Ground. Rumors said that the reason why he had to do so was due to his bad wounds, and he had to recover quickly. It wasn't half a month, and he had consumed more than ten life tars! Can you imagine that?"

Da Meng and the warriors standing next to him paled in fright. They couldn't even utter a word.

## Chapter 729: Fabricate a new identity

---

Making the creatures of more than ten life stars live in misery just to recover his wounds, using the Soul Burial Ground Dead Upanishad to absorb the vitality of countless species could be considered an extremely ruthless operation.

Da Meng's group paled, as they were scared by the brutal cruelty of the other. They didn't know what to comment either.

After a while, Da Meng beamed a forced smile. "The forces in the Raging Flame Star Area aren't too naive to be bullied, right? Didn't they do anything to take revenge or to stop that man?"

The smile on Da Meng's father's face was much bitter than his. "How could they not do anything? It's quite the opposite. Right when the first life star was destroyed, the forces from everywhere started to send their best hotshots. However, none of them returned. They had all turned into energy for the other to recover his power."

Da Meng discolored in fright.

"He swept over the area like a cloud of grasshoppers. He had killed so many warriors and destroyed more than ten life stars of the Raging Flame Star Area. In the end, the hermits of many forces had joined hands to kill this man." Da Lei shook his head, his face grimaced. "Too bad, the hermits of our Raging Flame Star Area all ran away when they sensed the terror of the other. None of them dared to attack him."

Da Meng's group didn't say anything, but their eyes showed that their fear had reached the extreme.

"Just like what you think, the realm and competence of that man are much more frightening than that of our hermits." Da Lei hesitated for a while before speaking up again. "As they knew they weren't his rival, they quit, not daring to engage in a battle with

him."

"What happened in the end?" Da Meng contemplated for a while. Seeing his father musing, he asked for the second time.

"How would it develop according to you?" Da Lei forced a smile. "The other continued his robbery. He destroyed another five life stars. After he had recovered his power, he left our Raging Flame Star Area. Ghost knows where he came from. He was inexplicably strong. Before he left, the hermits of the Raging Flame Star Area had come to see him off with the humble manner of juniors. They hoped that he could teach them something. At that time, our old freaks knew that the other had used the Death Upanishad, and his God Domain was called the Soul Burial Ground. But he didn't reveal more. He didn't leave any useful information. Since the day he left, he hasn't reappeared yet."

Pausing for a while, Da Lei continued. "I thought that it was just a rumor people had fabricated. But today... I'm convinced."

Everybody quieted down, as if they were struck hard by the information. Even after a long while, no one had spoken anything.

"That's it?" Da Meng asked, "Father, do you believe that kid is the apprentice of that man?"

"I don't believe much. But I don't dare to take risks." Da Lei put on a solemn face. "At least, I won't offend him directly. It will help avoid a disaster for our family."

"What should we do?"

"You disclose the information, saying that Princess Zi Yao's transporting a large amount of materials and her whereabouts to the others. Let them try." Da Lei pondered and then ordered, "You are not allowed to say anything about that boy. Your information should only include Princess Zi Yao's situation. And, you should fabricate it complicatedly. Try to pass through many people, and don't make the others detect that the information came from us."

Da Meng's eyes brightened as he asked, "Father, you want to make those stealthy men take action?"

"Well, I'm not that easy to talk with." Da Lei smiled coldly. "Not offending him directly doesn't mean that I want to press down my anger. Zi Yao has swaggered in our territory. I won't let her be satisfied for a long time."

"Alright! As long as they won't put the debt on us, it's alright." Da Meng burst out laughing as he understood his father's intent.

"You arrange yourself. Remember, Zi Yao isn't easy to deal with. Don't let her discover you guys. At least... don't let her catch your real weaknesses. It would prevent her from aiming at us," Da Lei said seriously.

"Father, don't worry. I know what to do."

"Remember carefully, do not talk about anything related to that kid. Otherwise, it will not be good for any parties."

"Understood."

...

In the silent and cold outer space, the amethyst battleship moved slowly. Behind it was the massive bronze steamship tagging along.

As soon as Shi Yan boarded, he felt something wrong.

The other warriors, including Bergh and Du Feng, were eyeing him strangely. They discreetly kept a distance from him, as if he had a monster inside that could harm them at any minute.

Bergh and Du Feng had no gleam of disdain in their eyes anymore. Quite the contrary, they became more respectful and cautious. Shi Yan could see the deep fear in their eyes.

Shi Yan didn't know what had happened. He also felt strange on seeing their attitude towards him. However, he couldn't find a clue.

"You follow me." After steadying her body on the ship, Princess

Zi Yao frowned and contemplated for a long time before calling Shi Yan. It was when her amethyst battleship had moved far away from Da Lei's life star. She took a deep breath, raising her ample, milky bosom, and talking tenderly with Shi Yan.

Shi Yan didn't say anything, just following her in silence.

"Sis!" Du Feng suddenly shouted in fright. He wanted to say something, but he didn't finish it.

"Shut up!" Zi Yao glared at him, her eyes sharp. "I know what I'm doing. Don't cause more troubles!"

Du Feng retracted his head, not daring to talk more.

Bergh and the other warriors frowned, their eyes complicated, as they were assessing Shi Yan discreetly. They were afraid of him.

Shi Yan walked with Zi Yao to a spacious main cabin. Zi Yao sat down neatly on a round platform. Her dark brows furrowed, as she no longer wore the bright smile. She seemed to have many thoughts in her head.

Shi Yan waited in silence.

After a long time, Princess Zi Yao lifted her head, looking at him calmly. "Who imparted you the Death Upanishad?"

"No one. When I was in the low-grade continent, I found a book, and I've been practicing using that book. After a while, I discovered the Upanishad." Shi Yan wasn't stupid to tell her everything. He found a good reason to pass the topic.

Zi Yao looked at him. Her star-bright eyes didn't even blink, as if she wanted to see every thought in his head.

Shi Yan was natural. There was no gleam of chaos in his eyes. He was relaxed and cold, not showing even a streak of anxiety of lying.

"No one has taught you that?" Zi Yao pondered for a while and then continued. "Don't worry. You are going on the same way with me. No matter what, I won't hurt you."

"It's true. No one has taught me," Shi Yan confirmed. He mused for a while and then beamed a faint smile. "Powers Upanishad are interlinked. Each power Upanishad, when cultivated to the profound level, could connect with the others. It's the foundation. When you advance a power Upanishad from the foundation, you don't need a teacher to reach the same realm. At that time, you will understand how to perfectly use a power on your own."

Shi Yan didn't just make it up.

When warriors cultivated a kind of power Upanishad to a deep level, it could be interlinked.

Taking the water power Upanishad for example, when a warrior hadn't grasped the Essence of the power at the beginning, he would have to use many different martial techniques.

Only when he could understand it thoroughly to create the power Upanishad soul altar and the Seal of Upanishad in his God Soul could he finally understand the principles of water power. And, when he created the God Domain, it could be linked all together.

It was the same with other powers. When the warrior could cultivate them to the acme, the God Domains generated from the powers wouldn't be much different.

When a warrior understood the power Upanishad, he would get a good grasp of the fundamental principles. The principles would never change. However, each person would have their own ways of using the power.

"Anyway, there are so many powers Upanishad in our Raging Flame Star Area. We have Five Elements, Light, Darkness, and so on. They are greatly varied. For example, Da Meng knows the Beast Merging power Upanishad. No one else can use it." Zi Yao's pretty eyes sparkled a beam of strange light. "There was a man like you, who controlled the Death Upanishad. He had come for a short period in the Raging Flame Star Area. His God Domain was called Soul Burial Ground..."

Zi Yao seemed to try to guide Shi Yan's memory. While talking, her voice was calm and relaxing, as her bright eyes were studying Shi Yan from the beginning.

However, Shi Yan had shown her nothing anomalous. He seemed to be surprised. "Someone has the same power? So, why did you tell me that no one in the Raging Flame Star Area knows how to control it?"

"He's not from the Raging Flame Star Area," Zi Yao beamed a forced smile as she found nothing strange from Shi Yan's countenance. "He was so dangerous. He created a catastrophe in the Raging Flame Star Area, destroying more than ten big life stars."

Shi Yan was scared.

Zi Yao pondered for a while and then explained to Shi Yan what Da Lei had told his son. Shi Yan couldn't hide his fear, and was unable to react even after a long while.

"So, now you know why Da Lei changed his attitude?" Zi Yao waited until Shi Yan could digest the information, then asked him with furrowed brows.

Shi Yan nodded with a heavy visage. "I think... I got it. However, I have nothing related to that man. He's too strong. I can't reach him. Your Highness, is it true that the identity you've fabricated for me could threaten Da Lei?"

"He will be threatened. As long as he can't verify the relationship between you and that man, he will still have something to be afraid of. He won't dare to set us up explicitly." Zi Yao suddenly smiled like a blooming flower. "Not only him, anybody who knows about that man won't dare to mess with you. Although your existence is perilous, it can be a strong dose at critical moments."

Shi Yan was surprised. His thoughts flickered, and he got it.

"From now on, you are the apprentice of that man. Remember it.



If anyone asks you, just answer you are here to train yourself, and you don't need to tell them the information related to your teacher." Princess Zi Yao pondered for a while and then said excitedly. "As you can use the Death Intent Domain, people will be afraid of you! As long as they can't prove that you've lied, many people would consider you a peculiar existence. They won't dare to deal with you. And you... you will be an Ace in my hand. At critical moments, your effect could be unimaginable!"

# Chapter 730: The Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field

---

After the talk with Princess Zi Yao, Shi Yan returned to his amethyst cabin. He wasn't assigned another task.

Servants would timely visit his cabin, bringing him good food. Since he didn't need to worry about anything, he started to focus on his cultivation.

Prince Du Feng and Bergh's team would show respect to him every time they saw him. No one dared to disdain him anymore. Some even tried their best to stay away from him as they were afraid that their vitality would be drawn if they stayed close to Shi Yan for a long time.

Shi Yan stayed in his cabin and cultivated wholeheartedly. Hence, he recovered in a short period of time. The wounds he got in the battle with Da Meng had disappeared, leaving no scratches at all. Under the magical effects of the Immortal Martial Spirit, his recovery ability was kind of morbid.

Since he got to know about the mysteries of his Death Upanishad, he started to cultivate and comprehend this power more. When he could create the God Domain using this power, it would be much more intimidating.

Shi Yan had also contacted the Ring Spirit of the Blood Vein Ring. He wanted to know the origin of his Death Upanishad. Unfortunately, the Ring Spirit had remained quiet after they escaped the First Demon Area. It had no longer sent Shi Yan any living energy fluctuation. It seemed the ring had used a lot of its energy, so it had to be dormant.

Shi Yan knew that the Ring Spirit would understand his situation. However, since it didn't contact him, he could have no information.

The ring still had some magical barriers inside. After he had broken some barriers, he gained the Rampage, Death and Life Seal, and the technique to raise the Inner World Five Devils.

Shi Yan knew that hiding behind the barriers would be something magical and formidable. However, he had to reach a certain realm to break those barriers again.

It had been really long time since he had last attacked the barrier.

Today, as Shi Yan had reached the Second Sky of True God Realm, both his body and Essence Qi had extended to a level he had never dared to dream of.

However, he couldn't break another barrier. After several failed attempts, Shi Yan stopped without gaining anything.

Vaguely, he thought that when he could level up to the King God Realm and have the God Body, he would be able break another barrier inside the ring to know what was hiding there.

The King God Realm seemed not far from him. However, From the Second Sky of True God Realm to the King God Realm, even if it were a warrior of the Raging Flame Star Area, it would take a lot of time.

Some people would need dozens or even several hundred years to break through.

Once they entered the True God Realm and created the soul sacrificial altar, their longevity would be extended greatly. If nothing unexpected happened, they could even live for several thousand years.

Compared to thousands of years, dozens of years or hundreds of years weren't too long. Anyway, to a person who was used to breaking through quickly, this period... seemed to be infinitely long.

Shi Yan wasn't the type of person who would wait in pain. After pondering for a while, he understood that he had to keep fighting

continually to absorb the Essence Qi from other warriors through slaughtering and push up his progress.

All of a sudden, he desired to fight. He desired dangers and slaughter. He wanted chaos. He hated that the forces of the Raging Flame Star Area couldn't rebel altogether.

To him, only wars could bring him miracles, making him thrive vigorously and gain a deeper knowledge of his powers and realm.

...

On the amethyst battleship...

Princess Zi Yao sat neatly on an ivory bone chair. She was looking at some place further in this vast starry universe. Her beautiful eyes flashed, and her face became more solemn.

Du Feng, Bergh, and some King God Realm warriors were standing behind her. They all had solemn expressions.

In front of them was a dazzling light sea. Numerous blinding beams came from countless flaming rocks, emitting a tremendous flaming energy. Each beam could pierce through and melt any object. Once they reached the amethyst battleship, it would be melted gradually.

Of course, there were still some gaps between those bunches of light. If they were careful enough, they could dodge them all.

This area was famous for its hazardous features in the Raging Flame Star Area. It was the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field.

When the battleships of the forces crossed this area, they would always slow down to avoid the beams. They had to move and worm through the gaps between the lights to prevent getting shot.

Few people dared to fight in this area. Because, when they started a battle, they could hardly control the situation. If a King God Realm warrior got hit by the beams of light, his body would melt, and his soul would be burned into dust.

However, to many other people, that area hid some marvelous things to comprehend. Some warriors cultivating special power Upanishads would consider this place the holy land for their cultivation, where they could break through their realms.

"Sis, are we going to take this way?" Du Feng furrowed his brows tightly. "Everyone knows it's dangerous. Many people who don't have a country or a faith stay there. They live only for themselves. They are all tyrannical, and hate all big forces. Once they find us and the materials we are carrying, I don't think the name of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation is enough to scare them."

Bergh also advised, "Your Highness, should we change the route? Although we have to delay the journey, it will be much safer. If we want to cross this place, I'm not sure we can get out safely with our current force."

"If we change the route, it will take a lot of time. And, I come here to visit someone." Princess Zi Yao's face was still bright as usual. She smiled all of a sudden. "No need to worry too much. If we can meet him, we will get out of this place smoothly. I've spent a lot to get his whereabouts. I don't want to give it up."

"Who?" Du Feng asked, "Why don't I know him?"

"Harrumph!" Princess Zi Yao rolled her eyes at him. "If you can behave and stop flirting around, Father will assign you important tasks. Too bad you don't want to compete. You just want to wander around and have fun. You're still at the First Sky of King God Realm. I can tell that if you still live like that, Da Meng will surpass you shortly."

Du Feng stooped embarrassingly as she was teaching him. He didn't dare to snap back.

"Father doesn't have you as his only son," Zi Yao considered for a while then softened her voice. "You and I have the same Mother. That's why I have to take care of you daily. If you weren't my blood brother, I would never care about you."

"Sis, I know you want the best for me. I'm totally wrong," Du Feng lowered his head, answering in a low tone.

"Thus, you have to compete and gain the good things for your sister and mother. Don't let the other suppress you." Princess Zi Yao sighed. Thinking about the situation of the Divine Nation's royal family, she couldn't hide her worries. "You shouldn't mention things related to Shi Yan. Perhaps, his presence would grant you a great reputation in the future. If we can actually connect him and that man, we will gain big shortly."

Bergh's eyes brightened. He admiringly bowed to her. "You have such a wide vision, your Highness. It is all for you, Prince Du Feng. Thanks to your sister here, you can avoid many problems."

Du Feng seemed to remember his mother. He said with watery eyes. "I know you love me. Thank you, sister."

"A visit to that man is also what our Father wants. If he favors us, it's the best scenario for you and me," Princess Zi Yao nodded, "Thus, we can't change the route. We must go in there. As long as we can meet him, it won't waste our efforts of taking risks and the thousands of miles we have traveled to get here. If he favors you and me, even if we have to offer all those materials, it will be worth it."

"Sis, who is he after all?" Du Feng's eyes brightened.

"When our Father was young, he had befriended a man. It's been years, and they haven't contacted each other," Princess Zi Yao pondered for a while and then carefully disclosed a part of what she knew. "I heard that our Father had offered him the Imperial Preceptor position, but he denied. Our Father wasn't angry. He still tried to maintain a good relationship with him on purpose. If we can ask him to create a closer relationship with the Nation, I think our Father will be joyful."

Du Feng's eyes lit up as he made up his mind. "Alright, we should take risks this time. If we can get his approval, we can have a

stronger assurance."

"Your Highness, we admire your labor," Bergh said respectfully.

"I have only one brother. Even if he can't endure it, I have to plan everything for him." Princess Zi Yao beamed a forced smile. "The Empire has its own rules. The competition for the Crown Prince position is always brutal and merciless. Princes who fail won't have a decent ending. Of course, I have to calculate everything beforehand."

Du Feng stooped lower, his face touched.

...

In the area where lights were entangling with wild bursting energy emitting from countless burning meteorolites, almost one hundred strange war chariots were gathering in a corner.

Those chariots were all dark green and tiger shark-shaped, around ten meters long. They were decorated with exquisite drawings, shooting out sharp auras.

Sitting neatly on the biggest tiger shark chariot was a bulky man with a shiny bald head. He was a member of the Dark Spirit Clan. This man was wearing armor with numerous bloodstains. His aura was brutal and ferocious like a bloodthirsty beast.

"Are we all here?" He lifted his head, looking at the area where lights were entangling not far from them. His sight seemed to cross the blinding beams of light to a faraway place.

"Commander, we're all here." A young man of the Human Clan kneeled down, cracking a bright but cruel smile. "We can take action at any minute."

"Yeah," The man nodded, talking with a husky tone. "Remember, do not make mistakes. If we take action, we won't let any fish escape our net, understand? They are the royal members of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. If it's disclosed, we're gonna have big troubles."

"Commander, you're so brave! You dare touch the royal members of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. In our place, only our Commander can have such guts. You aren't afraid of the prowess of the Nation at all," The young man tried to be more servile.

"If the price is high enough, we can always take risks out of desperation. If we have no way to run, we can retreat to the desolate Lonesome Dead Territory. After ten years or a hundred years, we can dodge the wind easily!" The leader grinned fiendishly. "The payment we got this time isn't only the materials the other's carrying. Someone has priced a good deal for a guy. That's what I want. It's worth taking risks this time."

"Someone has set a big price?" The young man of the Human Clan was amazed. Then, he probed cautiously. "Who is that?"

"Muahaha, I can't tell," the commander laughed contentedly. "I'd like to participate in people's internal matters. It's okay if they think we are just a piece of their chessboard. As long as they pay us adequately, I don't feel humiliated being a chess piece."

"How wise you are!"

"Muahahahaha! Strolling in outer space, you can't survive for a long time without a wide vision, buddy."



# Chapter 731: Space Pirates

---

The amethyst battleship slowed down deliberately. In just a blink, it was five times slower than before.

Shi Yan was sensitive enough to catch this change. He walked out of his cabin, heading to the main deck. At first glance, he saw Princess Zi Yao, Du Feng, and Bergh there with their solemn countenances.

He was surprised as he found a flow of soul fluctuation sent from his Star Martial Spirit. In his Sea of Consciousness, the Star Upanishad also rippled, as if it had found something marvelous.

Looking at the space ahead of him, Shi Yan was dazed.

In front of his eyes was a sea of flames and burning light. Countless massive scorching meteorolites floated, as if they had been heated to the acme. Shi Yan could see the beams of light that were so hot that they could melt any matter.

The Earth Flame was shaking in thrill. It was overjoyed, dancing in its soul altar, sending Shi Yan its happy soul thought. "This place's marvelous. It suits me best. I love this place so much."

Shi Yan was surprised. He was in a daze for a while before he realized the dense, burning halo quietly rolled into the center of his Star Martial Spirit.

His entire body was bathed in warm light energy. He didn't need to urge his power to see how big the benefit he had just gained was. Shi Yan was so comfortable he couldn't hold his groan.

"Ah!" Princess Zi Yao sighed while talking to Du Feng and Bergh. She exhaled gently and then smiled at him. "Oh, here you are."

Shi Yan nodded, smiling brightly. "I suddenly found the ship slowing down, so I came out to check it out. Haha, what is this place? Looks so strange."

Seeing Shi Yan, Du Feng, Bergh, and the others paled slightly. They instinctively gathered their energy, in case their vitality started to be drawn.

After they knew that Shi Yan could use the Soul Burial Ground, they became wary of him. None of them dared to come close to Shi Yan, avoiding him discreetly.

Du Feng sensed for a while. After he could confirm that his vitality wasn't being drawn out, he finally eased his mind. He squeezed a reluctant smile and then nodded at Shi Yan. "Have you got used to the ship yet? My attitude wasn't good. Please forgive me. Yeah, wait until we come back, I will give you a life star to fulfill my promise. Don't hold a grudge against me."

Princess Zi Yao's beautiful eyes sparkled. She nodded quietly as she thought that her brother had finally grown up.

Shi Yan was quite surprised. He looked at Du Feng several times with an odd face. As he found that the other wasn't joking, he clasped his fist and talked to him. "It's your appreciation. How can I be talented enough to ask for a life star from you? Moreover, my realm is too low. Even if you grant me the life star, I can't keep it for a long time. We should just forget it."

"Then, I will keep it for you first. When you feel you need it, you can take it. As long as you ask me, I will give you at any time. I will absolutely keep my words this time!" Du Feng said with a serious visage.

Although Shi Yan was more suspicious, he didn't show it out. He beamed a faint smile. "Oh, thank you. I will always remember the favor from Your Highness."

"Don't be too polite. You've saved me. I should do something for you." Du Feng suddenly became excited, smiling.

"This place's called the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. Did you see the three suns on Da Lei's life star?" Princess Zi Yao stood

up from her seat, waving at him to signal him to come closer.

Shi Yan sauntered towards her, smiling. "You said the three suns?"

"Yeah, in Raging Flame Star Area, we call the sun a solar star. Perhaps you don't know, but we could see four Solar Stars from Da Lei's life star. But that was a long time ago." Zi Yao pointed to her side. "This place used to be the fourth Solar Star. However, it exploded, creating the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field we are watching here. The Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field has countless fragments of the Solar Star. They radiate the furious sunlight that can melt any creature or matter. Even myself, a Third Sky of King God Realm expert, could be melted if exposed to the sunlight for a long time."

Shi Yan was frightened.

Dangers in outer space were everywhere indeed. This Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field was much more perilous than the energy storms. If what Zi Yao said were true, this area would be too terrifying.

That was why his Star Martial Spirit had gained big benefits, and the Earth Flame was happy as soon as he had arrived in this area. This place was a special area created by a sun explosion.

"No battleship dares to move fast in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. Once we get in contact with those sunbeams, even my amethyst battleship will be melted quickly," Princess Zi Yao continued her explanation. "So, we need to slow down. And, space pirates often visit this area. If we meet them, it will be a bigger trouble."

"Space pirates?" Shi Yan's eyes sparkled with a strange light. "They aren't afraid of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation? They dare attack you guys too?"

Du Feng beamed a forced smile as he answered him, "The space

pirates all have secret whereabouts. They don't have their life stars. They often operate in perilous areas in the Raging Flame Star Area to rob the battleships. Once they get what they want, they will find a place to hide away. It's possible that they won't show up for a hundred years. We can't capture them."

Shi Yan got it right after the other had finished.

He had talked with Du Feng many times in the bronze steamship. Shi Yan knew that the Raging Flame Star Area had many dangerous experts, which could expand their Soul Consciousness to several life stars. Their competences were unimaginably incredible.

Anyway, even such warriors couldn't really control each area of the Raging Flame Star Area, as they couldn't sense all the commotions everywhere.

Also, this star area had so many bizarre and peculiar areas that could prevent the Soul Consciousness from surveying.

For example, the Lonesome Dead Territory could deactivate all kinds of soul sensing. When the Soul Consciousness got into that area, it would feel like it was barricaded in an endless darkness, where it could sense nothing.

If the space pirates took shelter in a similar area, no expert could use his Soul Consciousness to find them. And, what intensified their headache was that the Raging Flame Star Area had too many areas like that. Those experts couldn't go and check each area themselves.

Thus, even if the space pirates robbed a strong force they shouldn't create grudges with, they could deliberately retreat. As long as they didn't show up, it was hard to find them.

"Oh, that's how it is," Shi Yan nodded. "Space Pirates love to visit this Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field?"

Princess Zi Yao, Du Feng, Bergh, and the others nodded with an

ugly smile.

"So, why have you chosen this route? Couldn't we change the direction?" asked Shi Yan.

"We have our problems. If we don't have to, who wants to visit this area?" Zi Yao smiled nonchalantly, but she didn't explain thoroughly. "It's good that you finally come out of your cabin. Secluded training for a long time isn't good for breaking through. The Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field is also a wonder of the Raging Flame Star Area. It's stunning and unpredictable. You can observe this sight of outer space. Perhaps it could widen your mind and help you break through again."

"It's not that easy," Shi Yan smiled. He understood that she was just saying so. He didn't put it in his mind, just watching the marvelous Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field and chatting with them.

Each of the massive flaming meteorolites seemed to gush out melting burning liquid, which radiated the formidable sunbeams. They weaved, entangling with each other and creating the magnificent light nets. The flaming meteorolites were the fragments of the Solar Star. They hovered quietly like countless flames or giant lanterns, gloriously illuminating the whole area.

The temperature of this area was of course too high. Although Zi Yao's team was wearing thin clothes, their bodies were still damp with sweat.

Du Feng and Bergh were alright, but the sweat rolling on their bodies obviously didn't give Shi Yan any sense of beauty.

Zi Yao was different.

When her flimsy silky dress was soaked in sweat, it stuck to her perfectly charming body, revealing her seducing curves. It had increased her glamour by hundreds of times, making people's vein bulge and eyes get hot, as if they could even breath out fire from

their eyes.

Standing beside her, Shi Yan would sometimes let his eyes wander over her body for a while. It had stirred up his heart, making him want to eye her more.

He suddenly felt so hot he couldn't bear it. Shi Yan thought that this Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field was really scorching. Shortly, he was sweating like summer rain. However, he didn't recognize it, still talking to Zi Yao and Du Feng.

"Sometimes, we will sweat, and sweating means no harm. Even if we have the God Body, in this Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, if we don't use our power, we are no different from ordinary people." Princess Zi Yao smiled as she had busted him sneaking at her. However, she didn't care about it, her smile getting brighter. "When ordinary people arrive at this area, even if they can hide inside the battleship, they are unable to bear the heat. If they have the guts to expose their bodies, they will be melted shortly. However, we don't want to use energy now to make our God Body adapt to the harsh ambiance. It's considered a kind of strenuous training for us."

While Shi Yan was listening to her, he peeked at her body from time to time. Eventually, his face reddened, as he had a particular masculine reaction toward her.

Gradually, Shi Yan felt that he couldn't hold it anymore, and he felt embarrassed too. He contemplated for a while and then tried to move his attention to other things. He released his Soul Consciousness, taking a walk inside the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field.

As Shi Yan had comprehended Space power Upanishad, his Soul Consciousness had been added with space power. Although his realm was the lowest among this group, the area his Soul Consciousness could cover was much greater than Zi Yao at the Third Sky of King God Realm, all thanks to the existence of space

power.

While he was concentrating on his Soul Consciousness surveying, he could escape his embarrassing situation. The range his Soul Consciousness could reach was extended further and further.

Gradually, his soul felt tired, which was the sign of over-exertion. His Soul Consciousness had reached too far, beyond his realm's capability.

Shi Yan was dazed, wanting to retrieve his Soul Consciousness to recover.

However, at this moment, one of his furthest beams of Soul Consciousness reported him the energy fluctuation of living beings.

Shi Yan was a little bit startled. He retreated all the other beams of Soul Consciousness and poured more soul energy into that beam of Soul Consciousness to survey further.

Shi Yan was shaken! His flow of Soul Consciousness had had an astonishing discovery!

# Chapter 732: Zi Yao's Promise

---

Almost one hundred tiger shark war chariots were hiding behind a massive flaming meteorolite. They were all quiet like ferocious animals waiting for their preys, pretty much calm and persistent.

Many warriors with profound realms were standing on the tiger shark chariots. They didn't wear a uniform, but had the same cold and savage countenance.

Those warriors belonged to different races. Shi Yan recognized the leader was a bald-headed Dark Spirit Clan's member. He had a mighty build, accompanying a savage appearance.

Shi Yan's flow of Soul Consciousness was flying parallel to a sunbeam. With the flaming energy he had added to his Soul Consciousness, it was hard to detect his beam.

He secretly observed for a while. As he felt the situation wasn't so good, he retreated.

Standing on the main deck of the amethyst battleship, Princess Zi Yao was discussing the trip with Du Feng, Bergh, and the other warriors. They made the ship dodge the sunbeams as if they didn't have a fixed route.

All of them were soaked in sweat, as if they were lying in a steam pot. Their faces were reddened.

Shi Yan was the same. However, he had restated his calm manner, and he didn't peek at the beautiful disaster next to him anymore.

While Zi Yao was talking with Bergh's group, she would throw him a glance from time to time. Her beautiful eyes were smiling, as if she wanted to see more of his stealthy act, considering it cute and interesting.

When she found that Shi Yan had become calm, she started to concentrate more. As the princess found Shi Yan had released his



Soul Consciousness, she didn't notice him anymore and started to talk to Bergh's team about their next operations.

At this moment, Shi Yan's gloomy eyes, which just had no target, brightened.

While frowning, he turned to Zi Yao, his face turning more solemn. "Hold on."

Princess Zi Yao furrowed her brows as she was surprised. "Hold on? Why do you want to stop here? We are moving pretty slow. Why do you want to stop?"

Du Feng and Bergh looked at him with confused eyes.

If he hadn't shown his formidable potentials, Du Feng and Bergh would have mocked him by now. However, as they were all afraid of him, they didn't dare to babble, giving him the chance to explain his idea.

"Do you want to go to that area? Yeah, we will reach that area after fifty miles, I guess." As Shi Yan wasn't so sure. He considered his words more, extending one arm and pointing in a direction.

The others changed their visages.

Zi Yao nodded. "True. Although we're changing the direction constantly, we have to go through that area. That place will be safer for our battleship. It doesn't have many sunbeams, so we can reduce the danger." She paused for a while and then smiled at him. "You've surprised me as you can show the most appropriate direction when you've just been in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field for the first time. Tell me, how did you know we would have to go through that area?"

After she finished her explanation, Shi Yan could confirm his information. He then said resolutely, "We can't go there!" Everybody got surprised.

"What has happened?" Princess Zi Yao's visage was somber. His attitude made her anxious. "You've found something, perhaps?"

"I didn't know that you would have to go there. However, I recommend not to. There are almost one hundred tiger shark war chariots standing by. Also, I found several hundred warriors at different levels. They wear different clothes... And, the leader's a member of the Dark Spirit Clan, a bald headed one. His aura's really intimidating. I think he's stronger than you." Shi Yan took a deep breath. "I think they are the space pirates you've mentioned. And, our force isn't enough to counter them."

When he finished, Zi Yao, Du Feng, Bergh and the others had their countenances changed dramatically. They shuddered in thrill.

"How could you see them?" Du Feng screamed hoarsely. "Is it real? Soul Consciousness will meet obstacles in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, which makes its coverage shrink. How could you sense that area?"

Bergh and the other warriors also had a disbelieving look on their faces.

Zi Yao believed him.

Not only believing in him, she immediately ordered, "Stop!"

Bergh nodded and then screamed. Almost instantly, the amethyst battleship halted, hovering near some massive meteorolites. It didn't move anymore.

"Tiger shark chariots... The shiny bald headed Dark Spirit Clan's man... strong aura..." Zi Yao mumbled with a solemn countenance. Shortly, she became grimaced. "Ka Tuo! It's Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo!"

Du Feng and Bergh paled badly as if there was no blood running in their bodies.

"No, impossible. Is it a miscalculation?" Du Feng whined, scratching his head as he didn't want to believe in it. "Why is it that slaughtering star?"

"As Shi Yan has just arrived in the Raging Flame Star Area, if he didn't see him, he couldn't describe in detail like that!" Zi Yao took a deep breath and then determined herself resolutely. "Define a new direction! We must avoid that area. Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo rarely comes to this area. If he's prepared already, it's 90% sure we're his targets

"Ah!" Du Feng screamed in panic. "We have no grudges against him, right?"

Zi Yao's face grimaced. "Grudge? Did any of the ones he killed have a grudge against him? He's waiting there. It means someone has given him the information of our trip. Someone wants us to die!"

Du Feng suddenly got it. He discolored immediately. "Sis, you are saying that someone we know has sold us and asked him to kill us?"

"Yep, certainly. Otherwise, he couldn't make that correct timing." Zi Yao snorted impatiently. "At this moment, we shouldn't talk about this. First, we need to dodge Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo. When we're safe, we will figure out who wants to take our lives!"

Du Feng paled.

Zi Yao and Bergh quickly determined a new route and instantly changed the direction of the amethyst battleship.

"Shi Yan, help me. Keep an eye on them. When they have any commotion, report me immediately." Princess Zi Yao didn't smile anymore, talking to Shi Yan. "If we can dodge this disaster, you will be the hero. I will save that quota to the Extreme Purgatory Field for you."

"Sis, didn't you agree with Ao Gera?" Du Feng screamed in fright.

Bergh was astounded. "Your Highness, if you give it to Shi Yan, what should we do with Ao Gera? He's not easy to deal with."

"I will arrange his business. Don't worry, I'll handle it." Zi Yao knitted her brows as if she got a headache. To make Shi Yan fight for them, she had to use her initial capital.

Although Shi Yan didn't know what the Extreme Purgatory Field was, through his observation during this period, he could guess it was the best place for warriors to train their souls and spirit. Seeing Zi Yao promise to give him her only quota, he was secretly excited.

He immediately gathered his Soul Consciousness, extending towards the direction he had sensed earlier.

The amethyst battleship continued its journey. The massive bronze steamship was following neither slowly nor fast.

After fifteen minutes.

Shi Yan slightly paled, speaking up in a low tone. "Not good."

His eyes flared with strange light, looking at Zi Yao, Du Feng, and Bergh, then shifted his look towards the massive bronze steamship behind them. "Princess Zi Yao, can Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo sense our location with this far distance?"

"Ka Tuo's at the Third Sky of King God Realm. Although we have the same realm, he entered the realm earlier than me. His power should be much denser and richer than mine. Anyway, the Soul Consciousness's coverage is limited in this Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. I think he shouldn't be able to locate us." Zi Yao hesitated for a while and then added. "Anyway, if he's like you with many secrets, perhaps... he can do that."

Shi Yan was startled, squeezing a forced smile. "Then how could he know we've changed our direction? He also changed his location. Now, he has blockaded us again."

After he finished, Zi Yao, Du Feng, and Bergh became more grimaced.

"Is it possible that one of you has sent him the intelligence

stealthily?" Shi Yan considered his words, mumbling.

Zi Yao was ashen as she thought about this possibility. A gleam of panic crossed her eyes. She pondered for seconds and then said, "Bergh, Antrim, you two bring Prince Du Feng and leave. The amethyst battleship has big volume, so it will be slow in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. You guys take an amethyst chariot and cross the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. Go straight ahead, don't pause."

"Sister!"

"Your Highness!"

Du Feng and Bergh screamed in unison.

"Leave! Now!" Zi Yao's face was somber. "I'm sure they are not just targeting our goods. They want our lives! Even in our organization, I don't think we're safe. But I believe in Bergh and Antrim. You two have always followed me. You won't have other thoughts. Promise me, take Du Feng home safely!"

Bergh and another warrior were shaken. They kneeled down, talking with stooped heads. "We won't fail you!"

Then, Bergh and Antrim shouted. A war chariot flew out from the massive amethyst battleship. However, it was different from Zi Yao's chariot. It should be another one.

"Sis, I don't want to leave. I want to fight shoulder with shoulder with you! If we have to leave, we should go together!" Du Feng wasn't so frightened at this moment as he shouted, "Even if he's the Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo, we will make him pay!"

"Stop talking nonsense!" Zi Yao shouted ear-splittingly. As her thought flickered, she put her jade-like hand on Du Feng's shoulder to restrain his power. She didn't mind the painful struggling in his eyes as Zi Yao turned to Bergh and Antrim. "Take him immediately!"

Bergh nodded heavily. "Your Highness, don't worry. Even if we

have to die, we will deliver our Prince safely!"

Then, they took Du Feng to the amethyst chariot. Without any words, they turned into a bunch of purple light, zooming far away in just a blink.

"If we can survive this trap, don't worry, I will never mistreat you!" As Zi Yao could relax her nerves a bit, she looked at Shi Yan with great seriousness on her face and then smiled. "Glory and wealth, beautiful ladies and servants... Everything you want, it won't be too far from reach."

Shi Yan's countenance was indifferent. He smiled naturally, "Then, I have to thank you in advance."

He had been through so many deadly circumstances, in which he would have died for sure. He believed firmly that only putting him into the harshest and bloodiest battlefield could give him chances to break through.

He felt that an opportunity was waving at him!

# Chapter 733: Share the hardship

---

The other's speed was much faster than what they had thought.

Not long after Prince Du Feng, Bergh, and Antrim left, Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo and his space pirates changed their direction again.

At this moment, the other didn't try to block their way, using the wildest speed instead to storm towards them directly.

Since the volume of the war chariots was much smaller than the battleship, they were moving more agilely in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. In other words, the amethyst battleship and the massive bronze steamship couldn't be faster than the chariots. It was obvious that they would be caught soon.

When Shi Yan told her about their operations, Zi Yao became ashen. She knew she had a traitor on her battleship.

The amethyst battleship had almost one hundred warriors. They were all under her command. Some of them had been with her for so many years.

In such a short given time, she couldn't find out that traitor. And, she didn't dare to do anything rash, as she was afraid that she could dispirit the others. For the time being, she had no good solution, so she had to plan one step after she finished another.

As the battleship was still moving, Shi Yan was sitting neatly next to Zi Yao, his face calm and cold. He was using his soul consciousness to detect the direction of the pirates.

After a while, Shi Yan opened his eyes with a forced smile. Looking at Princess Zi Yao next to him, he said begrudgingly. "After two hours max, the others will catch up with us. If we don't have a way around, we can't dodge this battle inevitably."

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes were bewildered. She took a deep breath and then said, "Their targets should be my brother and me. The

cargo we are carrying is just the spoils of war."

Shi Yan kept silent, looking at her as he didn't know what to say in this situation.

"Da Jie!" shouted Zi Yao.

A King God Realm warrior slight bent his body toward her. "At your service, Your Highness."

"Arrange war chariots for all staff on the ship. Scatter. No one needs to stay on the ship," ordered Zi Yao.

The other King God Realm warrior nodded, then went to the lower deck to arrange everything.

Not long after that, many small war chariots started to detach from the battleship. Each chariot carried seven to ten warriors. Those warriors didn't have a high realm, and many of them were the Princess' servants, who were in charge of checking the materials on the battleship.

Shortly, warriors on the amethyst battleship left one after another. They scattered everywhere like bunches of purple light.

Still, three warriors were standing by Zi Yao, waiting for her orders. One of them was Da Jie.

"Inform the others to leave. No one needs to stay," Zi Yao continued to order with a serious look on her face.

Da Jie nodded, sending her order to the warriors on the bronze steamship behind them.

Shortly, many strangely shaped chariots flew out of the bronze steamship. They moved agilely like fish swimming and dodging the deadly sunbeams. Soon, they left this dangerous area.

"Your Highness, we can leave now." Seeing many people running away, Da Jie bowed to the Princess and spoke up with a solemn tone.

"I'm not sure those who leave could survive. I believe that half of



them would be killed by Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo's team." Zi Yao smiled miserably, sighing. "But when they scatter and escape, they can disorder the other's formation. They can buy more time for Du Feng to leave. Although many of them will die, some can still survive. It's still better than staying here. If they stay, they will all be killed inevitably."

Shi Yan looked at her but didn't understand her.

"Do you think I am cold-blooded?" Zi Yao turned, looking at Shi Yan with her complicated eyes.

Shaking his head, Shi Yan smiled calmly. "No. If you keep them here, they would surely die. Under given circumstances, they can have a way to survive."

"I didn't expect this situation. I didn't think that space pirates would wait for us here. This was my wrong strategy." Zi Yao smiled begrudgingly, then turned to Da Jie. "You guys should leave too. I'll stay."

"Your Highness!" Da Jie and the other warriors changed their countenance, shouting in unison in order to stop her.

"I have responsibilities that can't be shirked from. I stay to seize more time for you to leave." Zi Yao's eyes were resolute. "I'm their target. If they see me here, they won't chase after the others much. Then, many of us can survive. You don't need to convince me. You should leave right now... immediately! I want each one of us to survive, so we can meet each other again."

Da Jie's team was so sorrowful. They firmly shook their heads, not wanting to leave.

Shi Yan frowned, observing everything discreetly. Something strange glinted in his eyes.

Although Princess Zi Yao was a member of the royal family, at this critical moment, she had thought for her cortege. She wasn't a bad Princess.

Even though they knew what they were about to encounter, her warriors didn't want to leave. This spoke up the fact that she was trustworthy, and she had treated them well, which made them not afraid of death.

"You don't want to follow my words?" Zi Yao's eyes were cold. "I am at the Third Sky of King God Realm. Although the Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo's power is a little bit stronger than me, he can't kill me easily. Do you think that I have to die inevitably?"

Da Jie's group shook their heads, but they still didn't want to leave.

"I'm using my name and my title of a Princess to order you to leave! Immediately! If you can survive, help me save my force. Staying here is more dangerous for all than leaving. If you are all dead, my loss is going to be the biggest!" Zi Yao ordered with a cold face.

Under her advice, Da Jie's team nodded sorrowfully, using another amethyst chariot to leave.

"I say leave. You too. Why don't you leave?" Zi Yao frowned, looking at Shi Yan while the surroundings became strangely quiet. "Your time following me has been the shortest. You don't need to take risks with me. Just now, I meant for you to leave together with Da Jie's team."

Shi Yan smiled, talking deliberately. "Because I've spent the least amount of time with you, I don't know the others. And of course, I won't report your whereabouts to your enemy. Besides Bergh and Antrim, I think I'm the one who's worth your trust the most."

As he had observed, Shi Yan knew that although Zi Yao was talking big and brave, she didn't believe Da Jie's team wholeheartedly.

If they stayed, no matter how hard she tried to escape, the traitor would still be there. Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo still could track

her down. He would be like her shadow, and she would never escape.

Zi Yao was truly a kind woman. She wanted her people to survive. But, if saying that her goodwill didn't include herself, Shi Yan would never believe it.

Zi Yao was astounded for a while. She pondered, then talked with a strange countenance. "You're smart."

Shi Yan just smiled and didn't say anything further.

The reason why he stayed was the same. Besides Zi Yao, he didn't believe anyone else. At the Second Sky of True God Realm, his realm was too low. Once he detached from Zi Yao, the traitor would kill him as easily as flipping his hand.

Even though staying with Zi Yao was perilous, he didn't need to worry that she would attack him while he didn't notice.

And, through the hardship of strenuous battles, he could break through shortly by collecting Essence Qi of dead people to strengthen his power.

This was a rare chance he didn't want to miss.

"Well, you want to stay, so I have nothing to comment. We will fight shoulder to shoulder. Honestly, I did hope that you would stay. With you here, my chance of surviving would be bigger." Zi Yao smiled tenderly. After all members of her delegation had gone, she calmed down, and wasn't as anxious and tense as before.

"What do we have on this battleship and the bronze steamship?" Shi Yan asked naturally. He seemed not afraid of anything.

"Cultivated spiritual herbs and plants, precious mineral products, and many auxiliary materials for cultivation." Zi Yao looked painful, twisting her long hair that looked like a waterfall as she was listing the materials. "Thinking about destroying those things, I'm bleeding inside. Those are priceless, and essential to warriors for their cultivation. I don't want to do it."

Shi Yan was stunned.

"What's strange?" Zi Yao threw him a glance, smiling miserably. "I can't bring all of them with me. Should I leave them for Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo? If I can't have them, I have to destroy them. We must not let them benefit without paying anything."

"Why don't you use the Storage Rings to store them?" Shi Yan asked.

But he immediately realized how stupid his question was. If they could simply do that, why would Zi Yao need to use the battleship to stock those materials?

"If we put those spiritual herbs and plants inside the rings, without the heaven and earth spiritual Qi to nurture them, they will shrivel quickly. Many mineral products on the ship will counter the space inside the ring. If we can put them into the Storage Ring, why do we need to use the battleship to transport them?" Zi Yao burst out laughing and then continued, "And, some ores are incomparably heavy. A small piece can be as heavy as a giant meteorolite. The ring can't bear them."

Shi Yan smiled embarrassedly, nodding his head. "I understand."

"You go to the bronze steamship and destroy the spiritual grass there. I will destroy this place. We need to burn them completely. As for the mineral ores, sigh, just let Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo take them." Princess Zi Yao's jade-like finger pointed at the bronze steamship behind them.

Shi Yan didn't move. Magical light sparkled in his eyes as though he was thinking of some possibilities.

"What?" Zi Yao stopped, turning to him suspiciously.

"Don't you need them anymore? Do you want to obliterate them?" Shi Yan's eyes flared up while asking in a serious tone.

Zi Yao nodded painfully. "I can't bring them all. But I don't want to leave them to Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo. I have no choice."

"Then I will help you," Shi Yan's face trembled, then he suddenly grinned at Zi Yao. "Perhaps we can find them later."

Then, he sat down next to Zi Yao. Energy started to circulate massively in his body. An extremely swift and sharp aura appeared in front of him under his Soul Consciousness' guidance.

Zi Yao was astounded, looking at him bewildered, as she didn't know what he's doing.

# Chapter 734: Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo

---

Shi Yan sat neatly and nonchalantly. He appeared natural and calm, but the energy that rippled from him was extremely sharp!

That sharp energy shot to the area between the amethyst battleship and the bronze steamship, making it disorderly chaotic.

Slowly, a narrow space crack appeared little by little in that twisted, chaotic area.

It appeared as if a pair of invisible hands were pulling that crack, making it wider. Shortly, the crack had been elongated to dozens of meters. Beautiful lights were moving dazzlingly while space energies were pulling and tearing each other miraculously.

Flows of Soul Consciousness guided light from his body, which then changed the chaotic space over there into a massive space crack. Inside the crack was the chaotic space basin, with endless colorful beams of light that looked like a real wonder of the world.

Shi Yan slight opened his eyes, turning to Princess Zi Yao, who was still in a daze, smiling brightly. "My understanding of space power Upanishad isn't deep enough. But still, it's not hard to make a space crack. Anyway, after the two giant ships enter that space, it's hard to locate them in the unknown space, unless my understanding of space power could be upgraded."

Zi Yao was dumbstruck, as strange light rippled in her beautiful eyes. An obvious joy appeared on her charming face. "You know space power Upanishad too?"

Shi Yan touched his forehead, then nodded and smiled. "I have the space power Upanishad in my soul altar. Just like the Death Intent Domain, it has created a Seal of Upanishad."

Zi Yao's pretty eyes were brighter as she smiled more beautifully than the most attractive flower. "No wonder why you could locate Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo. Your Soul Consciousness can cover a

wider range than mine. Turns out you have some attainment of space power. Well, I did underestimate you."

Shi Yan burst out laughing. "Is it true that space power Upanishad is a rare power even in your Raging Flaming Star Area?"

Zi Yao rolled her eyes. She felt both funny and annoyed at the same time as she explained. "You don't know anything? In any high-level continent, space power is the Heaven Gate. Not only is it hard to obtain, but also so hard to advance. In our Raging Flame Star Area, people who make space power their main power to break through are really rare. I have never heard of anybody who has reached the level to be able to tear the space like you."

Shaking her head, Zi Yao pulled the purple hair draping in front of her forehead, speaking strangely. "You, buddy, you always make people surprised. Not only is there your Death Upanishad, which can create the Soul Burial Ground, but also your space power that you've used to rip the space. Ah, seriously... Are you really from a low-level continent? Are you always trying to be nice to deceive me?"

"No way," Shi Yan felt wronged. "If I came from a star area or a continent that is ranked higher, why wouldn't I know anything about your place? Moreover, I fell into a disadvantaged situation right at the beginning. You guys have threatened and detained me, and I've never gained the upper hand. If I came from a higher-level continent, would I still hold on to this humiliation?"

Zi Yao looked at him in the eyes seriously, as if she wanted to see through his mind.

Shi Yan still acted naturally. "So? Can I start now?"

"Do it. We can't bring them with us anyway. If we put them into the unknown space, perhaps when you break through again, we can find them later." Zi Yao smiled and nodded as she suddenly felt better. As long as Blood Slaughterer's group couldn't take her stuff, even if she actually lost them, it would be relatively easy to accept

it.

Getting her approval, Shi Yan didn't hesitate anymore. He distorted his space power, enlarging that space crack.

Zi Yao stood up and cooperated with him proactively. First, she drove the amethyst battleship into that crack. Then, she leaped up and landed on the giant steamship. Shi Yan didn't know what she had done. However, the bronze steamship started to move towards his space crack.

Shi Yan left a permanent soul seal of his Soul Consciousness on the two ships before retrieving his power. He felt tired, trying to recover his energy in silence.

His knowledge and perception of space power hadn't reached a profound level yet. The space crack he had created couldn't be moved. Otherwise, he could use the space cracks to swallow all of his enemies.

Shi Yan understood that Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo's team of space pirates were all people with profound realms. Once they detected the space cracks, they would disperse, giving him no chance to accomplish his goal.

Only when his understanding of space power advanced to another level could he make the space cracks appear from nowhere, and move it around to drag all of his enemies into this massive trap.

To create such massive space crack, Shi Yan had to consume a lot of his energy. He had used one-third of his Essence Qi, and his spirit also felt tired. He wanted to use the Divine Crystal to replenish it quickly.

"Using the Divine Crystal to recover your power is too slow. This Recovery Divine Pellet could make you restore your energy to your peak." Zi Yao generously took out a dark green pellet, which had many eyelets on its surface. A strange green energetic energy was



diffusing from those small holes.

Shi Yan didn't pretend to be polite. He reached his hand towards the Recovery God Pellet and swallowed it without any hesitation.

As soon as the pellet got into his mouth, it turned into a green stream, flowing into his stomach. Immediately, it dispersed into countless tiny pure energy streams, seeping through his vessels, muscles, and the Essence Qi ancient tree.

Energy stored in this Recovery God Pellet was thick beyond his imagination. With the support of the pellet, his consumed Essence Qi had been supplemented. Shi Yan felt comfortable and refreshed, as his spirit, soul, and Qi were benefited.

"This Recovery God Pellet's just a Level 7 Sacred Grade medicinal pellet. Since you haven't reached the King God Realm yet, you can't stand the other better pellets. This pill is suitable and enough for you to restore your power." Zi Yao smiled tenderly. She seemed to be in a good mood.

The two of them got in an amethyst war chariot, which had her crown marked on it. Until this moment, she didn't hasten to run away, as she was waiting for the enemy in silence.

Shi Yan didn't react, trying to digest the pellet and sending energy to his entire body to recover fast.

The battle would be up at any minute. And, his realm was too weak to compare to those space pirates. When they attacked, without being at his peak state, he would have to struggle hard to survive.

He didn't dare to waste even a minute.

However, Zi Yao let out a light shout before he had recovered fully. "Here they come."

Shi Yan was shaken. He stopped urging his digestion of the medicinal pellet, standing up and watching the space out here.

Gradually, light spots started to appear at the place where thick sunbeams were weaving. Those light spots were as big as a fingernail. As they were zooming over rapidly, they were getting bigger.

Shi Yan gathered his Soul Consciousness, his face grimaced.

Those who were heading towards them were the space pirates he had sensed. The tiger shark war chariots had been carved in his mind.

Soon, the luminescent spots became larger and larger. The tiger shark war chariots revealed their original shape, worming between the sunbeams, as agile and swift as fishes swimming in the ocean at fast speed.

Hissssss!

Grating hissing suddenly arose. It was so sharp that it could even tear people's eardrums, irritating them.

Standing on a tiger shark chariot was a muscular man from the Dark Spirit Clan. He looked so ferocious with a shiny bald head. Although he hadn't arrived yet, his angry roar echoed everywhere. "Damn it! Where's the cargo? Where are those two f\*cking battleships? Goddamn it!"

Besides Princess Zi Yao and Prince Du Feng, his other targets were the two ships carrying so many good things. He had crossed thousands of miles and waited for so long just to see those materials.

Today, getting here but seeing that his targets weren't there, he got enraged immediately. His ear-splitting voice was like a saber, constantly roaring and thundering.

Behind him were many space pirates that came from different races. They also put on cold and harsh faces, looking here and there to detect the preys that were supposed to be here.

Unfortunately, they found nothing.

"That shiny bald headed guy is Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo. Among the space pirates, he's a famous butcher. Even if his prey give him all their properties, they will be slaughtered. No one can escape him. Wherever he visits, blood will splash. That's why he got the title of Bloody Slaughterer." Zi Yao was still calm and natural. At this critical moment, she didn't forget to explain more to Shi Yan. "Encountering such butchers, we don't need to think about him coming in peace. If he doesn't die, we will be doomed. Of course, it's hard to kill him. Saving our lives is what we have to do."

Shi Yan nodded nonchalantly, his eyes calm. "Don't worry. I know what to do."

"Haha. Yeah, you don't need to do anything," Zi Yao looked at him, letting out a chuckle. "You... your realm's too low. If you fight face to face with a King God Realm warrior, you have no chance to win. Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo still has a brutal mate at the Second Sky of King God Realm in his gang. Don't act rashly."

Listening to her, Shi Yan couldn't help but beam a forced smile, nodding begrudgingly.

Zi Yao didn't hasten to leave. She stood serenely, looking at the incoming tiger shark chariots. When Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo, the leader, was around several thousand meters away from her, Zi Yao pitched her voice and shouted unpleasantly. "Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo, no matter who sends you here, you won't have a happy ending for sure if you have the guts to go against the Dark Firmament Divine Nation!"

"Haha, Your Highness, since I have the guts to come here, I'm not afraid of your Divine Nation's revenge!" The bald headed man grinned fiendishly, as a bloodthirsty gleam sparkled in his eyes. "Where are the two ships? If you can be honest and tell me where, I won't harass your body. You can die comfortably. Or else, not only you will die, I'll do you until you die!"

His space pirates all had their eyes brightened. Lust appeared visibly on their dirty faces. Some even stretched their bodies, posing vulgar postures.

Zi Yao paled, talking through her gritted teeth. "I will remember you."

"Muahahaha, you will remember me indeed, as I will make you not forget me for the rest of your life!" Ka Tuo was like a beast in its mating season. His breathing became heavy, and the flame of lust ignited in his eyes. Even his bald head reddened strangely.

He licked his lips. "Honestly, if it weren't because of your glamour, I wouldn't dare to take risks. Your beauty's fame has been spreading all over the Raging Flame Star Area. Having you is the last dream of every single man in this area. Ka Tuo's also a man, and I can't help it. Even if your Father kills me later, as long as I can taste you today, I won't regret it. Even if I have to die, it's worth!"

Princess Zi Yao felt disgusted as she snorted disdainfully. "Go."

A gloomy light hit the chariot. The amethyst war chariot flashed, then disappeared like a purple thunderbolt. Instantly, it used a speed much faster than the tiger shark chariots to lengthen the distance between them.

Now Shi Yan knew why she wasn't scared at all. Turned out that this amethyst chariot was much faster than the tiger shark ships of Ka Tuo's gang.

# Chapter 735: Lost

---

The amethyst war chariot flew away like a purple lightning strike. Shortly, it got out of the sight of Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo's space pirates.

Zi Yao sat neatly on her chariot, her visage calm. A cold intent hung on the corner of her mouth. Apparently, she was indignant due to Ka Tuo's dirty words.

Shi Yan sat down cross-legged. His face was like a stone, showing no emotion. He continued to urge and disperse the energy of the pellet in his entire body. He wanted to restore his peak status in the shortest time, so that he could be able to counter the battle that could happen at any minute.

The speed of this amethyst war chariot was much faster than the tiger shark war chariots. It moved like a shuttle between the fatal sunbeams of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. It flashed and then disappeared. Ka Tuo's space pirates couldn't locate their direction or chase after them. It was hard to use any effective countermeasures.

Seeing Zi Yao and Shi Yan disappear from their sight, the space pirates under Ka Tuo's command were enraged. They roared and thundered evilly, jumping like grasshoppers.

Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo, the leader, was quite calm. He just sneered continually, as if he had some other plans. He wasn't hot-tempered at all.

"Boss," The Human Clan's young man with lewd eyes laughed evilly. "Seems like Princess Zi Yao's famous beauty is real indeed. She's worth the best of the best women in the Raging Flame Star Area. If we can have her, your reputation will be spreading out all over the Raging Flame Star Area. The other men will jealous of you to death."

Ka Tuo grinned wickedly, as his shiny bald head sparkled. "I've crossed thousands of miles this time for this woman. As long as I can have her, even if I have to die in the future, it would be worth it."

The young man stooped his head, his face cold and cunning. "Then, I have to congrats you in advance."

The tiger shark war chariots were moving around, worming through the scorching sunbeams. They weren't in a hurry. The experts under Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo's command scattered, forming a big net formation. They started to move forward from different areas.

"We've been in this Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field for a long time. We understand this place better than that woman. Although her war chariot's called the Purple Lightning of the Raging Flame Star Area, she shouldn't dream about escaping us in this damned Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field." Ka Tuo rubbed his shiny head. "Just let her be contented for a while. Let's see how she can cut me off in this place."

"So wise, my boss," The young man flattered, causing Ka Tuo to grin.

...

The war chariot called the Purple Lightning moved swiftly and skillfully inside the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. It looked like a beam of electricity that would be hard to trace.

The Purple Lightning shot rapidly. It could move several thousand miles in just a blink. As it was flexibly gliding between the sunbeams, Shi Yan couldn't hold his compliments.

He believed that even if he used his max speed to fly with the power of the sun, moon, and stars, he would never be able to catch this Purple Lightning. Perhaps, only the King God Realm warriors flying at the max speed could catch up with her chariot.

Since Ka Tuo was at the Third Sky of King God Realm, Shi Yan guessed that he had to leave his tiger shark chariot and use his body to fly in outer space to chase after Zi Yao.

However, after Shi Yan had used his Soul Consciousness to sense, he was surprised.

The others didn't leave their chariots. The distance between their amethyst chariot and the pirates was getting further and further. They seemed to be giving up, not wanting to pursue them.

Frowning, he observed Zi Yao in silence. He found that Zi Yao was still solemn. Her eyes showed her panic instead of the lucky or relaxed feeling for escaping.

Shi Yan was astounded. He stopped urging the pellet's medicinal efficacy, lifted his head, and talked to the Princess. "We're pretty far from Ka Tuo's gang. Why are you still worried so much? From the difference between the speeds, it's tough for the others to reach us. Why are you still tense?"

Zi Yao was in a heavy mood. Listening to his query, she begrudgingly beamed a smile. "It's because you don't know the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field."

"Why do you say that?"

"The Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field is much larger than you think. At our speed, it will take at least half a month to get out of this place." She stooped to see Shi Yan sitting cross-legged, as a streak of struggle sparkled in her eyes. "And, that's in the ideal case, if we do not deviate from our direction. However, the most dangerous feature of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field is that it's hard to keep the direction. To those who are unfamiliar with this area, the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field is a complex labyrinth."

Shi Yan's eyes changed.

"To those who are unfamiliar with such a massive labyrinth,

funny results could be expected. Although we are flying rapidly to leave this place, perhaps we will find out that we've made a big circle and got back to our starting location." Zi Yao sighed grudgingly. "The faster we move, the bigger chance we have to get lost. It will happen because we are moving fast and don't have time to navigate. Usually, we would end up entering some perilous areas. At that time, we have to return and start all over again."

"You mean, we will possibly get lost in the center of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field?"

"It's not 'possibly'..." Zi Yao's face was grim. "We're lost."

Shi Yan was surprised.

"If we were still in the amethyst battleship and moving at a slow speed, I could figure the right direction. But if we accelerate, it's hard to locate. If we can't locate our own location, it's possible that we will make a big circle and return to the starting point."

Her smile faded. "Ka Tuo's gang is different. To space pirates, before every affair, the first thing they do is to get used to the area and topography. They will survey all corners of the dangerous area. After that, they will plan their operation."

"You mean, Ka Tuo's gang understands the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field as clear as the palm of their hands and won't deviate? So, even if we depart first, we won't escape their trap?"

"Yes, that's what I meant. Although we can get rid of them for a while, it doesn't mean that we can survive. Since Ka Tuo doesn't hasten to chase after us, I can confirm that he's confident. It also means that his gang has some members that understand the situation of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field thoroughly."

Shi Yan nodded, his mood heavy. "Seems like we can't escape easily this time."

"Well, it isn't certain," Zi Yao cracked a smile while her beautiful eyes sparkled. "I still have you on my side, right? It's also why I



dared to stay. Since you can sense the living fluctuation from an extremely far distance, even if we can't navigate the right direction to get out of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, we can always avoid Ka Tuo's gang. We can play hide-and-seek with them in this Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. When they find out that they can't catch us, they will abort their operation."

"Turns out you didn't want to let me go right from the beginning," Shi Yan smiled but didn't get angry.

"If you had left, I would be more passive at this moment. Maybe, I couldn't escape at all." Zi Yao smiled nonchalantly while a strange light rippled from her beautiful eyes. "See, my fortune isn't bad. I had never thought that I could meet a mysterious guy like you. Of course, Ka Tuo hasn't either. Or else, he wouldn't be that serene."

"Alright, I know what to do," Shi Yan contemplated for a while and then nodded. He slowly closed his eyes, urging the energy from the pellet.

In the next period, Shi Yan unceasingly released his Soul Consciousness, expanding its coverage. He carefully detected any energy fluctuating of living beings in the area.

Whenever he sensed streaks of life, he would report Zi Yao immediately, so that she could change the direction of the chariot accordingly.

Over the period of time, Zi Yao didn't hesitate even a moment. She always followed his reminders. They were flying without a fixed route, but still could escape the pursuers many times easily.

After this encounter, he did believe in what Zi Yao had told him. The others apparently understood the topography of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field pretty well. Although the tiger shark chariots were slow, they could navigate their locations precisely. Sometimes, they almost caught up with Shi Yan's team.

After several encounters, Zi Yao's confidence was boosted. Smiles

appeared on her face again, as she wasn't too worried and anxious.

Inside the blazing-red meteorolite sea, countless sunbeams weaved, creating a beautiful wonder of the universe. Putting aside the perilous features, this land was a dreamy, marvelous attraction.

For the time being, since Zi Yao and Shi Yan didn't encounter any lethal danger, they could relax for a while. They stood on the war chariot, watching the wonderful sight of outer space. They were stunned because of the unique glamour of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field.

Shi Yan was relaxed and happy, as he could have a chance to watch the mesmerizing attractions of the universe with so many blazing-red meteorolites, seeming like suns that illuminated the dark and cold outer space. And, he had a graceful woman, whose magnificence was unparalleled, as his company. Suddenly, Shi Yan felt that this dangerous journey had more colors than he could have expected.

In this hot ambiance, Zi Yao was wearing a thin and short dress. Her flawless porcelain-like body was illuminated by the fading sunbeams, revealing an appealing glamour that could disorder people's souls. Seeing her standing in the war chariot with her beautiful and innately noble bearing, others could feel their souls enchanted.

Although it was hard to impress Shi Yan with beauty, he couldn't help but feel dizzy on seeing her splendor. Usually, he couldn't control his burning look gazing at the beautiful woman standing next to him as if he wanted to melt her.

"Shi Yan, I think you were an outstanding warrior in your continent. Have you ever loved a woman in your whole life? Do you know what love tastes like?" As Zi Yao was watching the magnificent sight, her eyes suddenly became dreamy as if she were sleeping-talking. "Such taste, how magical it is, can you tell me?"

Shi Yan was panicked, as his mind was seething like a rising tide that flooded him immediately.

He quieted down, sinking in his sea of memory. Long afterward, he started slowly. "I have one woman like that. When I was weak, she had been with me through many difficult challenges. However, due to different reasons and struggles, she and I had to be apart. Even if we can meet later, I don't know how to deal with her."

"Why?" Zi Yao found it interesting. She turned to him, focusing her bright eyes at him. "People always say that nothing can stop love, right? You have a deep love for her. Does she love you the same way? Will she do anything for you?"

Shi Yan frowned, keeping silent for a long while. He didn't say anything else.

## Chapter 736: Do you have... mental problems?

---

"Why aren't you talking?" As Zi Yao's curious mind was stirred up, she laughed and pursued the topic. She didn't want to give up just yet.

"I don't know." After a while, Shi Yan beamed a forced smile and scratched his head. "Don't know why she and I have gradually walked on two different roads. We were trying our best for our distinctive families and relatives. We even had disputes. In the end, I won. Her family was smashed. They had to run and hideaway. She ran to the unknown outer space. I don't know whether she's alive or not. I don't know if she will hate me when we see each other again."

"You are cruel," Zi Yao was dumbstruck. "If you love her, why did you put her family into such pathetic situation? Weren't you able to give them an exit?"

"I couldn't," Shi Yan replied faintly, but his voice was resolute.

Zi Yao was astounded. She gazed at him for a while and then spoke up again. "You... sigh... I can tell that women aren't the main part of your life. Women who love you won't have a happy future, because you won't give up your dream or goal for a woman. You will never give up what you want for her."

Shi Yan thinned his lips. A gleam of sorrow sparkled in his eyes. "You're right. I won't give up my life goal or things that belong to me for a woman. Perhaps... I haven't met a woman who is enough for me to give up and forget everything else."

"If I like you, will you give up all of your desires and hold my hands forever?"

Zi Yao smiled casually and enchantingly. She spun in front of him, revealing her total glamour.

"I won't."

"Why won't you?"

"Will you like me?" Shi Yan smiled, "You are the Princess of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, the bright Pearl of the Raging Flame Star Area. You have all kinds of favors you want. You are the Goddess in men's hearts and their dreams. I'm just a weak warrior from a low-level continent with no status. Will you consider me?"

"Who can tell exactly?" Zi Yao parted her lips, forming a smile. "If you can continue to break through, or if you are really related to that man, perhaps... my Father will agree."

"Unfortunately, I'm not. I have no relation to that man." Shi Yan smiled miserably.

"If it happens like that and I fall in love with you... So... will you give up your pursuits for me? Will you stop your pursuit of the martial path to make me happy and pleased every day?" Strange light dots sparked from Zi Yao's beautiful eyes. She didn't blink, gazing at him. "Will you?"

Shi Yan suddenly quieted down. After a while, he shook his head. "I won't."

Anger sparked in Zi Yao's eyes. "Such a cold-hearted man!"

Shi Yan just smiled, but he didn't reply.

"Why? Why won't you do it for me?" Zi Yao still wanted an answer. She patiently continued as embarrassment filled her charming face. "Am I not pretty enough?"

"Quite the opposite!" Shi Yan looked at her seriously. "You are too beautiful, so beautiful that you can't be true. You are like the most exquisite masterpiece of art. Before I met you, I had never thought that I could meet a flawless woman like you in this world."

"Are you complimenting me?" Zi Yao smiled, her eyes as beautiful

as the new moon. She seemed not angry anymore. "So, why won't you love me?"

"Ah," Pausing for a while with an odd face, Shi Yan continued, "Your glamour could arouse the deep desire in a man's heart, making him crazy. However, this beauty will give me an absolute desire for possession. I want to occupy you, making you my unique belonging. I will not let anyone touch you. It's like when a man gets a divine weapon he has yearned for a long time. It's his favorite masterpiece of art. Your charming bearing will surpass all the love you deserve. It will make my desire replace everything. Thus, it's hard to love you, you know."

"You will never love me? Are you sure?" Zi Yao clenched her teeth as she was resentful. She felt really annoyed.

"Yeah, I will not love you. I'm sure I will never love you," Shi Yan nodded affirmatively.

Zi Yao became more hostile. She gritted her teeth, almost unable to prevent herself from strangling Shi Yan to force him to change his mind.

In her life, she had met so many men who vowed to love her for the rest of his life, and to never forget her. Until this moment, she had never met anyone like Shi Yan, a man who told her he would never love her.

She suddenly had a feeling of a big loser. She started to doubt her charm, which infuriated her, making her stubbornly want to force Shi Yan to admit his wrong assumption.

"Why do you need to hold on to it?" Shi Yan beamed a faint smile. "I think, the ones who want to be with you can fill this whole area, and you, you should have someone you love, right? Why do you need to get mad at a low realm, low-status warrior like me? It isn't worth your time."

"My pursuers are indeed many, much more than you have

imagined." Zi Yao snorted, lifting her head arrogantly. "But, I haven't fallen in love yet. I don't know why I haven't found someone who could make me wholeheartedly give up everything for him. I think... I should try... But it's too hard to choose a man. I'm still looking for him."

After she had finished, Shi Yan was dumbstruck, his face odd. "You... do you have any mental problems? For example, you're obsessed with cleanliness. You know, you need treatment. It's a kind of sickness."

"You are the one who has mental problems!" Zi Yao was enraged, rolling her eyes at him angrily. "Such an a\*shole. I don't know why I feel so irritated looking at you now. Tell me, why do I want to punch you so much? Well, this thought is becoming stronger over time!" She spoke through her gritted teeth eventually.

Shi Yan was surprised. He smiled gingerly and rubbed his nose. He kept his mouth shut, not daring to talk more.

No kidding! This woman was at the Third Sky of King God Realm. If she wanted to teach him a lesson, he would have no power to resist. If he got beaten, he couldn't complain, and could only blame himself for being unlucky. At the same time, Shi Yan didn't want to make this woman mad at this moment.

"I do want to punch you, really." Zi Yao's pretty eyes flared as she was about to attack him. She rubbed her jade-like hands energetically, her face bright with enthusiasm.

Shi Yan was musing when he said suddenly, "I want to cultivate more. I don't have time to play with you." Then, he sat down again, closed his eyes, and accumulated his energy.

Zi Yao gazed at him, her beautiful eyes sparkling with a strange light. After a while, she held her flat tummy, cracking up with laughter charmingly. Her laughter was so cheerful; her body was shaking as if she were greatly amused. All of her sorrows seemed to be washed away. She felt refreshed and comfortable right now.

"Interesting..."

Zi Yao muttered as she was quite delighted. Her eyes that were as bright as diamonds were sparkling cunningly. No one knows what plan she had just made.

...

Under a massive burning meteorolite in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, around ten tiger shark war chariots were floating.

The bald headed Ka Tuo was bold and ferocious as he continually thundered in anger. "F\*ck it! Why can't we blockade them? Impossible! That woman can't be familiar with the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field's outline, as she has just come here. How can she be able to dodge us from time to time?"

The space pirates in his gang kept their mouths shut. No one dared to answer.

Even the young human man, who liked to interrupt him, had to stoop miserably. He didn't dare to provoke his boss at this moment. When Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo was infuriated, he would be extremely wild. He could even slash the one standing in front of him to vent his rage.

Everybody knew this bad behavior of his, so no one dared to provoke him when he was angry. If he killed them, it would be their super bad luck.

After Ka Tuo had thundered alone for a while, seeing no response from his henchmen, he stopped eventually, calming himself down. Then, he spoke up, "I think we have a problem. That woman can't be much familiar with the situation here. Otherwise, she would have escaped already. As she can always run one step ahead of us, she must have something else to depend on. The biggest possibility is... she can detect us before our operation. She can use Soul Consciousness to locate us and our direction."

"My wise boss," Seeing him restore his manners, the young



human man flattered. "If we can avoid their Soul Consciousness detection, we can catch up with her. They won't be able to run beforehand."

Ka Tuo grinned then nodded. "Yeah, we will do that way! Muahahaha... As we earn a living in outer space, what we know best is to conceal our living energy fluctuation. Well, let that woman widen her knowledge of our tricks then."

"Boss, what do you plan to do?" the young man asked.

"There are some areas in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field where sunbeams interlace, and Soul Consciousness can't survey those areas. Although those areas are extremely hazardous, our tiger shark war chariots can still stand for a short time." Ka Tuo's eyes rolled. "To get that woman, we have to damage our tiger sharks a little bit. From now on bros, you have to pay more attention. Every time we move, we will hide in those areas. If we don't see her, we will move to another place."

"Yes, Sir!" The young man answered, then took out a Sound Stone to deliver Ka Tuo's order.

...

"Something's wrong!"

Shi Yan woke up from his cultivation, his face solemn.

"What?" Zi Yao furrowed her dark brows. She couldn't help but feel tired. "Recently, we haven't needed to dodge them much. I can sense something wrong too. Maybe, they gave us up?"

"It's not that they gave us up. They have changed their tactics certainly."

Shi Yan stood up, looking at countless flaming meteorolites in front of him. "I don't know why I can't sense their life magnetic field anymore. I can't locate them."

"Are you sure they aren't too far from us?" Zi Yao was somber.

"It's impossible that we can cut them off. Those pirates seem to have disappeared into thin air. If we had lengthened the distance with them, it should have been gradual, not abruptly like right now." Shi Yan shook his head, "I think that the others are trying to dodge my Soul Consciousness sensing."

Panic crossed Zi Yao's eyes as she seemed to remember something. "I heard that at the areas where sunbeams are interlacing. There are many places they can use to hide away from the Soul Consciousness sensing. Some warriors who have been pursued would come to the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field and hide there. They would rather consume their energy to resist the lethal sunbeams than being detected."

"It's obvious that Ka Tuo's gang has done the same." Shi Yan suddenly felt a headache. "It's tough now. Seems like our nice days have to end here."

Zi Yao discolored.

# Chapter 737: Outer Space God Light

---

The Purple Lightning was still moving in an unknown direction. But right now, Shi Yan and Zi Yao weren't as relaxed as before. They both released their Soul Consciousness to sense, as dangers could appear at any minute.

As they knew the others had changed their method of chasing into waiting and ambushing, they started to get nervous and tense.

They didn't talk much. Their hearts were still hung up, as they couldn't relax for even a minute.

Alas, dangers came faster than they had thought.

This day, as their amethyst war chariot was passing a place full of sunbeams, Zi Yao discolored while using an amethyst ball to sense. She shouted, "Watch out!"

Shi Yan looked like he was about to meet his archenemy.

Boom!

From the place where sunbeams were interlacing in front of them, a torrential, surging flame swept over like a mad dragon. It was so fast that they couldn't react timely.

A flow of surging energy burst out from Zi Yao's tender body as she released her God Domain instantly. Seven-colored halos appeared in so many water-like layers, covering both of them entirely.

The fire dragon was approaching wildly. But as soon as it impacted her God Domain, its special dazzling halo dispersed, as if it were torn apart.

Zi Yao's face was serious. Her tender body slightly shivered as she touched a point in the void.

An orange-red light was generated from inside her God Domain. That light shot forward, dashing one hundred miles in just a blink.

Under the piercing power of the orange-red light, a tremor occurred at the interweaving point of the lethal sunbeam. Gradually, a tiger shark war chariot came into their sight.

More than ten warriors from different races stood on the tiger shark chariot. They were laughing wickedly and oddly. Their auras were all massive. Under their formidable energies, different kinds of energy attacks and seals combined, turning into an energy wave that naked eye could observe, washing towards Zi Yao.

Zi Yao was covered tightly in the seven-colored halo, orange-red, cyan, purple, blue, white, green, and yellow in color. Each halo seemed to have different magical effects, and the energy they carried was tremendous. Zi Yao touched her forehead, and her soul altar started to move in her Sea of Consciousness.

Seven-colored light twirled around her body. They became denser and purer like the rainbow in the sky, covering her soft body.

Standing inside her magnificent God Domain, Zi Yao put on the solemn countenance as she was circulating the formidable energy in her body according to a special power Upanishad.

The seven-colored light turned into seven ribbons that looked exactly like a real rainbow. They then shot towards the furious oncoming energies and seal attacks.

When those energy attacks touched the ribbons made of seven-colored light, they became sluggish and powerless. Their massive energy was drained quickly.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. Looking at Zi Yao covered in the seven-colored nimbus like a Goddess, he was stunned.

The main power Upanishad Zi Yao had been cultivating was the Magical Light. When she diffused her God Domain, the light power would change miraculously like she wanted, bringing out magical effects.

From some discussions he had with Du Feng, Shi Yan knew that there were some miracle bunches of light in this world. Some were so sharp that they could pierce through any kind of matter. Some were as soft and tenacious as cotton, that could tie anything. And, he also knew that there was kind of light that could melt things into a puddle.

Magical light, also called the Outer Space God Light, could run freely in outer space. Sometimes, they flashed brightly, while it was hard to see them at the other times.

Warriors who could understand the mysteries of those lights could receive the God Light Upanishad. If they continued to cultivate it, they would receive tremendous supernatural powers.

Outer Space God Light was always in motion. It was rare to see them, let alone have a chance to comprehend them.

As Zi Yao's main power was the God Light, it spoke for the fact that she had a great luck to approach the endless God Light and comprehend its mysteries, which would help create the Seal of Upanishad imprinted in her soul altar.

As it was hard to cultivate, it was indeed powerful. The God Light Upanishad was rare in the Raging Flame Star Area as well. Warriors who could cultivate this power and create the Seal of Upanishad were all the warriors with an extreme fortune. At the same time, their learning competence was really prominent.

Zi Yao was that kind of a warrior.

The seven-colored God Light turned into seven beautiful ribbons under her control, entangling with the incoming energies and using them up.

She was still calm, concentrating on the space in front of her eyes. The seven-colored light still radiated from her body constantly, as if she were carefully searching something.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

A strange noise arose behind her!

A flow of fiercely seething soul zoomed over from the interweaving place of the sunbeams. Right after that, Blood Slaughterer Ka Tuo appeared with a fiendish grin, roaring and thundering madly. Just like a metal mountain, he didn't care about the brutal sunbeams and dashed in the flaming sea towards her.

Obviously, bald headed Ka Tuo also had a God Domain which was very special. His God Domain seemed to be able to absorb bits of remnants of outer space energy. While he was swarming forward, he rolled with him so many tiny pieces of burning rock and remnants of outer space energy, illuminating the whole space.

In that fragment of a second, a chaotic energy field appeared around Ka Tuo, including all kinds of energy remnants, meteorolites, fragments of bodies, and shattered beast crystals.

Countless tiny pieces of rock, dark materials, metals, bones, and wood, floated around Ka Tuo, making his aura earth-shakingly tremendous.

Ka Tuo grinned villainously while both his hands pulled and tore the void to condense the debris in his God Domain, creating a furious gray energy flood. Just like a whip, it flogged towards Zi Yao and Shi Yan.

Zi Yao turned immediately, as if she had known of his attack beforehand. Her jade-like hand pointed to a place far away. Flows of Outer Space God Light bloomed from her fingers, fiercely thrusting towards the gray flood current.

Boom Boom Boom!

Ear-piercing explosions reverberated from the impact of the God Light and the gray flood current. Wisps of furious energy shot out like sabers, which made many flaming meteorolites burst off.

A dense burning fluid that looked like molten fire oozed out of the flaming meteorolites, showering like a heavy rain.

Zi Yao became solemn, as the seven-colored God Light twirled around her body, diffusing the God Domain and covering the entire amethyst war chariot. When the flaming fluid fell on her halo, the seven-colored God Light would sizzle and shrink.

"Your Highness, Ka Tuo sends his regards to you! Haha!" The Blood Slaughterer grinned fiendishly. Inside the chaotic flow of outer space, he was like a big magnet, constantly drawing remnants of energy in the universe. Just like a mountain made of debris, he burst out furiously and started to attack her.

At the same time, more and more tiger shark war chariots appeared amidst the weaving sunbeams.

Space pirates laughed wickedly and loudly on their chariot. Their eyes were blazing like hungry wolves, gazing fixedly on Zi Yao's charming body. Their breathing was heavy, as they hated that they couldn't just swarm over and put her on her back.

In this Raging Flame Star Area, Princess Zi Yao was famous for her extraordinary glamour. Any male who had met her fell for her. She was the most beautiful woman in their dreams, who stayed deep in their souls.

Those space pirates were the ones who had a life of licking blood from their swords and sabers. They were used to slaughtering, and being licentious and immoral. They could rape the others to satisfy themselves. Many of them were lewd devils.

Zi Yao was the ultimate dream of a man. As she was standing in front of them, she had stirred up the deepest desire in their hearts. It was like they had received a dose of stimulant. They all were madly excited, trying their best to reach near her right when they had arrived.

Although Shi Yan's face was icy cold, having a storm raging in his heart.

Among the pirate group, there were around ten King God Realm

warriors, and the others were at the Second and the Third Sky of True God Realm. Such a force wasn't something Shi Yan dared to dream of in the Grace Mainland.

Compared to those wicked devils, his realm was too low. It was tough for him to give his company a hand.

The pirates started to release their God Domains one by one, having magical energy waves rippling from their bodies. Inside the God Domain, their energy was boosted. Under the control of power Upanishad, they could create the best martial techniques at any time, striking out with the most lethal attack.

And, among those brutal attacks was Blood Slaughterer Ka Tuo's mighty power, which was much stronger than Zi Yao's.

Shi Yan suddenly realized that he was useless in this situation. He didn't know how to help her at all.

Seeing different kinds of energy and martial techniques rumblingly attacking them, Shi Yan contemplated and then sat down all of a sudden. He forced himself to quiet down, accumulating all the energy in his body.

Zi Yao didn't have time to mind his action. Seeing the crazy crowd storming towards them, Zi Yao touched her glabella, her beautiful eyes as bright as stars.

Her soul altar appeared at her glabella, spinning and floating above her head. Powers Upanishad on the second tier seethed fiercely, releasing incredible energy fluctuations. Then, beams of seven-colored light shot out like meteors, gathering inside her God Domain.

The God Domain, which was condensed and developed from her God Light, expanded rapidly. Shortly, it had covered the area of one hundred meters around her.

Many beams of seven-colored God Light shot out everywhere, as fast as lightning. They tyrannically thrust into the God Domains of



the King God Realm warriors. The God Light pierced through the bodies of the warriors who didn't have a God Domain, dispersing their soul altar.

King God Realm warriors who had their own God Domain captured the intruding God Light using the features of their God Domain. Then, they used their power to dissolve the God Light with different methods, preventing it from dispersing their God Domain and damaging their bodies.

The huge number of God Light beams attacked Blood Slaughterer Ka Tuo's God Domain, which reduced the intensity and coverage of his Domain. The chaotic energy made Ka Tuo pause to stabilize his God Domain.

Zi Yao's attack had killed at least ten pirates on the spot and damaged some God Domains. Without the protection of the God Domain, those who had their God Domains dispersed had been wounded severely. Eventually, they had no power left, so they could only curse Zi Yao with dirty words and ruthless faces.

"Ptui!"

Zi Yao spat out mouthful blood, and her charming face paled suddenly. This attack also wounded her. So, she couldn't launch another attack for the time being.

At this moment, Shi Yan suddenly opened his eyes, with a freezing cold gleam sparkling in them.

# Chapter 738: Sun Brilliance!

---

The Bloody Slaughterer, Ka Tuo, couldn't hide his excitement. He laughed crazily as pieces of rock and debris of outer space spinning rapidly around him. They moved like a tornado, sweeping away all the God Light.

As those space pirates saw their boss attacking, their bloodthirsty nature was aroused. They expanded their God Domains again. They wanted to seize the chance when Zi Yao hadn't recovered yet to destroy her protection magnetic field.

Nobody cared about Shi Yan.

No one even gave him a glance.

They all just ignored his existence.

King God Realm warriors just needed a glance to see his real realm. A feeble warrior at the Second Sky of True God Realm was nothing in their eyes. He wouldn't be important at all in this situation.

Zi Yao paled, as blood trickled from the corner of her mouth. Seeing the pirates striking wildly, she felt hopeless and desperate.

She had to urge her soul altar to make the previous strike. Although her attack was formidable, the backfire she received was almost of the same magnitude. At this moment, energy in her body was disturbingly turbulent. She needed to steady her power to launch the second strike.

Apparently, the opponent had seized this opportunity. They wouldn't give her any moment. They wanted to subdue her, taking her as a captive.

Thinking about this tragic fate, Zi Yao hated that she couldn't kill herself to save her from falling into their hands and experiencing the most horrible torture in the world.

Zi Yao clenched her teeth as she had made up her mind. Once things went wrong, she would make them die altogether. With the big price of her soul altar collapse, she would give them a bloody lesson that they would never forget.

But at this very moment, Zi Yao suddenly felt a sharp energy fluctuation, making her glance at Shi Yan in bewilderment.

The young man, who had been sitting neatly on the war chariot like a rock hadn't spoken anything from the beginning, just opened his eyes. His calm countenance made her feel weird.

Zi Yao felt sorry, thinning her lips as she sighed. She didn't know how this man could maintain his calmness until this moment. Wasn't he scared? Did he not see the whole picture here? Or, was he petrified?"

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

Dazzling cracks appeared one by one outside her God Domain's coverage, each crack being dozens of meters long. They looked like extremely sharp blades moving and accelerating under some kind of urge.

Zi Yao's gloomy beautiful eyes sparkled with the light of hope. As she was moved, she temporarily put aside her negative intention.

She wanted to see if he could cause a miracle to happen.

Shi Yan had many secrets. She understood this better than anyone else.

A warrior from a low-level continent who knew how to use the Death Intent Domain and also had the space power, no one could tell how many other wicked tricks he must have hidden.

She realized that she had never seen through Shi Yan. Zi Yao wanted to see how mysterious and magical Shi Yan was before she died.

The space blades were dangerously shiny. They appeared in

dozens and became faster and agiler shortly. They were like the sharpest weapons that could cut and slash everything, expanding outside her God Domain.

Shi Yan stood up next to her, as a cruel, bloody scent diffused from his body. Instantly, his eyes became blood-red, which could send shivers down people's spines.

The space pirates hadn't approached Zi Yao's God Domain, yet they found something strange, screaming in panic.

The space blades curved and then thrust into their God Domains. Shortly, the different God Domains were split apart! The warriors hit by the space blades had their bodies cut off without bleeding, dying on the spot.

Even the King God Realm warriors got their limbs cut off if they couldn't dodge those brutal space blades on time. Their armor and secret treasures were all ineffective.

Zi Yao's eyes brightened. She was excited as light bloomed gloriously on her face.

"Sun Brilliance!"

Shi Yan touched his glabella, and the Star power Upanishad turned into a flood current, gushing out of his soul altar.

Wherever his power Upanishad passed through, sunbeams shot faster, and the flaming meteorolites seemed to be revived!

The massive meteorolites were manipulated by an unknown force!

It took only one second to move the giant objects that had been still for tens of thousands of years!

In that second, dozens of giant burning meteorolites rolled towards Ka Tuo under the control of a magical, unknown force!

Colossal burning meteorolites that were as big as an island or a basketball court, full of flaming energy of the sun, brought with

them an unimaginable heat as they stormed into Ka Tuo's God Domain.

Rumble Rumble Rumble!

Earth-shaking explosions echoed inside Ka Tuo's God Domain. Ka Tuo was struggling; his vulgar laughter ceased, as he was clumsily urging his energy to avoid the impact from the burning flame meteorolite.

Bunches of sunlight suddenly became incomparably sharp, becoming wild and hysterical from the originally quiet state. They meandered and slithered like spiritual snakes, darting towards the space pirates.

Shortly, all pirates who came to attack them were troubled by the burning meteorolites and sunbeams. They moved and dodged here and there, shouting crazily and indignantly.

The fiery fluid from the burning meteorolites poured on the pirates, melting their blood and flesh.

The sunbeams were everywhere, and as soon as the pirates got hit, they would screech painfully while their bodies were pierced through. It was like a ghost nibbling their bodies while they were still alive.

Shi Yan's energy drained rapidly, which was clearly visible from his eyes. His Essence Qi ancient tree shriveled quickly.

As soon as he sensed this danger, he immediately sat down and used his Star power Upanishad to connect with the flaming meteorolites in this area.

As his Star Upanishad had been fused with the sunlight once, he could use this feeble connection to control the meteorolites, making them move in this Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field.

In that short moment, Shi Yan had a magical feeling, as though he had turned into the core of the sun, and the flaming meteorolites in this place had become part of his body.

He just needed to flicker his Soul Consciousness together with his energy to manipulate the flaming meteorolites.

This discovery cheered him up. While Zi Yao was having a bloody fight with the enemies, he had created the connection with dozens of meteorolites around them. At the moment Zi Yao couldn't endure any longer, he controlled the burning meteorolites, launching a strike that demanded a big price from the others.

However, it also required an enormous consumption.

In a matter of several seconds, the Essence Qi ancient tree in his body shriveled, as it had no beam of energy left. Also, the large amount of flaming energy from the sun his Star Martial Spirit had absorbed was all burned.

Now, Shi Yan had only his Soul Consciousness to endure. He begrudgingly controlled the meteorolites to attack here and dare, messing up the God Domains of the pirates.

The flaming meteorolites were like steel punches pounding the God Domains, while the sunbeams were as agile as spiritual snakes, worming and attacking the space pirates. They seemed to be afraid of nothing.

The space blades, which had been created first, took the chance and destroyed the pirates' God Domain.

Space power and Star power were urged at the same time, creating a scene of catastrophe. On the other side, Shi Yan's energy was used up, and his spirit was exhausted completely.

Aaaaaaaahhhh!

Painful screams and cries constantly echoed, as almost one hundred space pirates were besieged by the scorching meteorolites. They were struck hard, while the other lower-realm pirates were all killed.

Only the King God Realm warriors, who had achieved the God Body, could resist. Although they weren't melted by the sunbeams

and the meteorolites, they still had to run madly for their lives.

Ka Tuo was as savage as an enraged beast. His eyes gazed at Shi Yan, noticing this low warrior for the first time. While he was panting and dealing with the flaming meteorolites, he hissed and roared to threaten Shi Yan. "Kid! I will detain your soul! I will make you taste all kinds of torture until you die! I swear, I will make you rather die than to live!"

Shi Yan was quiet, his face dangerously ashen. Only his blood-red eyes sparkled with a gleam of cold and evil intention.

He didn't care about Ka Tuo, still using his Soul Consciousness to control the meteorolites which he had activated, creating a meteorolite sea to subdue all the pirates.

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes flashed with a strange light, as thrill filled her charming face. Her succulent lips parted, but she didn't say anything. She immediately focused on stabilizing her energy to prepare for the next attack.

"Cough cough!"

Shi Yan coughed out blood, and his eyes became gloomy shortly. His body shivered, and the flow of his energy was interrupted.

The Essence Qi ancient tree was drained, and so was the flaming energy his Star Martial Spirit had absorbed. There was nothing left. His Soul Consciousness was also consumed greatly. Shi Yan's soul altar was trembling from the damage.

"I can't hold on anymore." He smiled bitterly, begrudgingly looking at the bundle of glamor standing next to him. "If you don't have any solution, we will have to die here for sure."

Actually, Shi Yan had some other kinds of energies besides those draining ones. He could use the energy from his blood and flesh, and, of course, the negative energy.

However, those energies couldn't supplement his Space Upanishad and Star Upanishad. So, he couldn't continue using the

sunbeams and flaming meteorolites to slaughter the others.

It was not because of his profound realm that he could create this situation. Shi Yan had just borrowed the external forces.

This magnificent Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field had so many pieces of the fragmented pieces of the sun scattered here and there. Since Shi Yan's power Upanishad had the Sun Essence, he could control the solar fragments in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field and create the current situation.

If they had been in another region, he would have had no means.

If he couldn't use the meteorolites to attack anymore, his other energies weren't of much help. Thus, it wasn't that he was trying to save some energy or being modest; he truly had no other options.

Zi Yao didn't say anything, squinting as the chaotic energy in her body gradually calmed down.

When there was no energy controlling them, the massive flaming meteorolites stopped moving, and the violent sunbeams started to calm down.

After Ka Tuo's team had adjusted their powers after this savage attack, they stormed over again, much wilder and harsher.

Zi Yao waved her hand, and the ring on her jade-like finger flashed. Crystals that looked like volcanoes shot out from her ring, moving outward.

"You've done enough," Zi Yao smiled tenderly after releasing the crystals. A fragrant breeze brushed his cheek as her moist, succulent red lips smacked his left cheek. "I'm sure we can leave this place alive."



# Chapter 739: Volcano crystal nucleus

---

Shi Yan felt as if he had received an electric shock. He looked at her with a dumbstruck visage, rubbing his cheek instinctively as he wore an odd expression.

He had never estimated that Princess Zi Yao would act like that in their tragic situation. She...kissed him?

Was it a reward?

He couldn't explain her deed. With a dull and amazed face, he didn't know how to react.

Anyway, this feeling... was so good!

Zi Yao didn't have the time to talk to him. Her beautiful eyes were bright, looking at the farther area while her Soul Consciousness was controlling the volcano-shaped crystals to attack Ka Tuo's team furiously.

Waves of magical energy rippled from those volcano crystals.

Ka Tuo felt something suddenly.

"Scatter!" He shouted all of a sudden. "It's the Volcano Crystal Nucleus!"

While they were furiously swarming over their target, the space pirates paled on hearing their leader as if they had seen ghosts, hastening to retreat.

Boom Boom Boom!

The volcano crystal that was as big as a fist burst off fiercely. The energy it generated was not different from an erupting volcano, brutal to the acme!

Those people who couldn't dodge the explosion would be turned into ashes. Their soul altar was shattered, leaving nothing intact.

Zi Yao had collected the Volcano Crystal Nucleus at a magical

volcano range in the Raging Flame Star Area. After so many years of condensing and accumulating, each erupting volcano would have a crystal nucleus.

The crystal, which had preserved the fiercest power of the volcano, was urged at the critical time. It was like triggering the volcano to burst off at a set time, creating an intimidating attack power.

A Volcano Crystal Nucleus was as mighty as a real volcano when it exploded. Even a King God Realm warrior couldn't endure such a blast.

Shortly, more than ten King God Realm pirates were crushed into pulp. Their flesh and bones were smashed, scattering everywhere in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field.

This attack scared the space pirates. Even Ka Tuo, the wildest man, was frightened, not daring to move forward again.

Shi Yan also discolored in fright. Looking at the exploding Volcano Crystal Nucleus, a cold current arose in his soul.

Too frightening!

The Volcano Crystal Nucleus' explosion had created a tremendous shockwave, which was much more terrible than the impact of the solar fragments.

In the second when the explosion happened, many flaming meteorolites were shattered, while smaller pieces of meteorolites shot out lethally.

"Ah!"

He sighed, his face strange.

The Earth Flame had stormed out of his soul altar without any prior notification. Just like an excited flame, it flew towards the center of the fierce explosion created by the Volcano Crystal Nucleus.

He was bewildered, then turned more excited.

The Earth Flame was the most brilliant flame created in a ten thousand years old volcano. After a long period of taking in the power of the volcano, it gradually gained intellect. This kind of a creature was rare and peculiar.

Before it had formed intellect, it seemed like it used to be... a Volcano Crystal Nucleus. To the flame, the surging flaming energy in this area was the best nutrient, much better than any other medicines and pellets.

The Volcano Crystal Nucleus exploded one by one. Waves of flaming energy rolled furiously, creating a vast burning sea that blocked Ka Tuo's team. It troubled them from moving forward.

Zi Yao sneered, talking with full confidence. "Let's go.

Her jade-like hand knocked on the amethyst war chariot, which then shot out like lightning.

"Wait a minute!" Shi Yan couldn't help but cry.

As Zi Yao was busy with the enemies, she didn't notice the Earth Flame flying out of Shi Yan's body. She didn't know that the Earth Flame was taking in the exploding energy of her Volcano Crystal Nucleus. That was why she wanted to leave hurriedly.

"Why?" Although she was full of suspicion, she paused, frowning at Shi Yan. "If we don't leave now, it will be more troublesome later."

"Wait a minute," Shi Yan didn't explain. He begrudgingly condensed a flow of Soul Consciousness to contact the Earth Flame.

But that b\*stard didn't answer!

It seemed the flame was wholeheartedly taking in the energy of the Volcano Crystal Nucleus, so it wasn't free to answer Shi Yan. The massive energy generated from the volcano crystals was what

it had been yearning for the most. He would never let this chance slide away at any cost.

Shi Yan suddenly had a headache, cursing the flame for being so greedy that it didn't even care about its life.

"What's going on?" Zi Yao was worried. "It's hard to seize the chance to escape, you know? If we don't take this opportunity, we can't break the siege and escape later."

"I'm sorry, we just need to wait for a while." Shi Yan gritted his teeth. His Soul Consciousness moved like a light arrow, entering the exploding area where the Volcano Crystal Nucleus was still bursting off. "Spoiled kid, you come back now or take all these things with you. Or else, I won't care about you anymore."

When Shi Yan shot his flow of Soul Consciousness, Zi Yao could finally feel something. She shouted with astonishment. "Who are you communicating with?"

Shi Yan kept silent, while one hand of his was pressed on his forehead. With an ashen face, he tried to extend his Soul Consciousness.

The seething flaming sea in front of them changed suddenly. It started to move, and then accelerated towards them.

The Earth Flame finally responded, and Shi Yan exhaled in relief.

Right at this moment, a magical jade token suddenly appeared from an interlacing place of sunbeams not far from them. This token had been carved with a miraculous formation, which was releasing surging energy waves. Shortly, it could almost reach Zi Yao.

Zi Yao's soft body shivered as a gleam of deep fear sparkled in her eyes. She hastened to urge all the energy she had left. God Light bloomed out from her entire body, condensing into a seven-colored light column and striking towards that jade token.

BOOM!

The jade token trembled. The shockwave emitted from it had smashed the massive flaming meteorolites into pieces.

The jade token was stopped, and it couldn't storm over the second time.

Blood gushed out from Zi Yao's mouth as she closed her eyes exhaustedly. Her breathing was feeble while her soft body lost control.

Shi Yan was scared. At this moment, he didn't care about anything else, shouting hoarsely. "Go!"

A purple light appeared from Zi Yao's fingertip, then fell onto the war chariot. Then, the amethyst war chariot buzzed and glided swiftly over the sunbeams, moving forward quickly.

Shi Yan tried to use his last beam of energy to pulled around ten bodies floating nearest to them to the chariot on the way out.

Essence Qi emitted from those corpses rolled massively into his body, like a furious flood breaking the dike. The acupuncture points from his entire body swelled instantly, causing him a paralyzing pain.

Since the Earth Flame had absorbed the power of the volcano fire sea behind them, it started to shrink. Eventually, the entire sea shrank into some floating flames, which could pierce through the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field easily without being afraid of the sunbeams. That was why they could fly rapidly and catch up with Shi Yan, who was using the amethyst battleship.

Those flames then lined up and combined with each other, turning into a windmill-sized flame that disappeared into Shi Yan's glabella.

After the Earth Flame got into the heaven flame soul altar, it calmed down and sent Shi Yan an exciting thought. "It's so good! I can ascend this time. Haha, wait until I wake up. I can evolve to another level!"

Shi Yan was surprised.

The amethyst war chariot continued to accelerate crazily. Besides Zhi Yao, who was fainted next to Shi Yan, there were nine corpses of the space pirates. Those people were killed by Zi Yao's God Light not too long ago. Shi Yan could tell it from the holes on their bodies.

They included eight people at the Second and Third Sky of True God Realm, and one at the King God Realm!

The massive Essence Qi from that King God Realm warrior was equal to the amount Shi Yan could get from the other eight warriors. It was so abundant that it surprised Shi Yan a lot.

The amethyst war chariot was running wildly, agilely, and swiftly, worming through the sunbeams like lightning.

Behind him, the space pirates were shouting and cursing. Their eyes were bloodshot as they still wanted to storm over and kill them all. However, their tiger shark chariots weren't as fast as the amethyst chariot. No matter how hard they tried, they couldn't catch up with it.

Shi Yan concentrated on the jade token that appeared the last.

That jade token had appeared at the most critical time. With only one strike, it had hurt Zi Yao badly, directly putting her into a coma. Shi Yan knew that jade token was the fatal attack. Perhaps, the one who controlled that jade token had a stronger cultivation base than Ka Tuo's.

The one who controlled that jade token must have been hiding in the place where the sunbeams were interlacing for a long time for that fatal strike.

That person was the most dangerous factor of this hunting operation... Perhaps, he knew Zi Yao personally. Otherwise, he wouldn't have hidden from the beginning. He clearly didn't dare to show his face.

He had been waiting persistently, depending on the magical and dangerous feature of the sunbeam interlacing area to avoid people's Soul Consciousness from sensing. This person was much more dangerous than those space pirates!

When Shi Yan turned around to check it, the jade token had disappeared into thin air, leaving no trace. It was possible that the owner had retrieved it.

That person was still hiding on his spot. If he didn't show up, he seemed to be afraid of something.

The war chariot flew forward at max speed.

Shi Yan gradually pulled himself together. While absorbing the enormous Essence Qi, Shi Yan checked Zi Yao's wounds with a solemn countenance.

She was still breathing, and her soul altar still existed. However, Shi Yan found an unknown force, which was constantly destroying her vitality, fighting against the energies inside her body.

After Shi Yan had sensed it for a while, he paled, his eyes full of cold intent.

That unknown energy flow seemed to be taking the upper hand. During its battle with the energies inside Zi Yao's body, it could drain her energy continually. When Zi Yao's energy was emptied out, that flow of energy would cut off all of her vitality. At least, it would be able to destroy her God Body.

But that was not what scared him the most.

Shi Yan could sense a soul destroying power within that unknown energy as well. In other words, after it destroyed Zi Yao's God Body, it would storm into her Sea of Consciousness and smash down her soul sacrificial altar!

The one who had cast this technique truly wanted to take Zi Yao's life, leaving her no hope or way to revive!

# Chapter 740: Can't choose the right way because of the flurry

---

Ka Tuo's space pirates strode angrily, but the amethyst war chariot had soon disappeared from their sight. Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo stopped and gritted his teeth, his face gloomy and cruel as he stood on the tiger shark war chariot.

Many tiger shark chariots came over. The young human guy said with a bitter face. "Boss, what should we do now?"

"What should we do?" Ka Tuo grinned, madness sparkling clearly in his eyes. "Do you need me to teach you what to do next? Scatter and block them! We're familiar with this area. If we can block them once, we can do it the second time!"

The young man was shaken, nodding his head continually. "I got it!"

"Get the f\*ck out there! Move! Now!" Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo cursed, but he didn't move to chase the others. Quite the contrary, he flew back to the place where the battle was the fiercest.

Those space pirates didn't dare to discuss more. They continued their operation once they confirmed what to do next.

Soon, Ka Tuo went to the area where the jade token appeared. He pulled himself together, hesitated for a while, then bowed slightly. "Don't worry, I will fulfill what I've agreed with you. Although they can run away now, it doesn't mean they can leave the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field alive! I assure you that!"

A soul thought was sent to him from where the sunbeams were interweaving. "Don't fail me."

Ka Tuo bent his body, continually assuring the other.

"Yeah, I know the reputation of the name Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo. I know that you won't skirt what you have agreed upon



midway."

That voice was icy cold and evil. "You will receive your payment fully. Go chase them. When you can locate them, tell me before you try to attack them."

"Got it," Ka Tuo replied solemnly.

"It's good that you understand. I don't require many things... I'm waiting for your good news. Now go!"

"Alright," Ka Tuo didn't linger. He turned around and left, disappearing from this area.

A light flashed in that area where the fatal sunbeams were interweaving. That light flickered once and then disappeared into the void.

...

Shi Yan sat neatly on the amethyst war chariot. His face was cold, but there was a gleam of hurry in his eyes.

Zi Yao's breathing was becoming weaker. The unknown force in her body had dominated her own energies, and was about to dissolve all of her energies.

When the energy in her body disappeared completely, her God Body would be damaged totally. At that time, that unknown energy would storm into her Sea of Consciousness and destroy her soul altar, which would result in the death of her both God Body and God Soul.

It wasn't the result he wanted to see.

He wanted to help Zi Yao destroy that flow of energy. However, his situation wasn't different from hers.

The Essence Qi of his entire body had been emptied out. And, since his negative energy had the evil effect of destroying vitality, he didn't dare to use it. So, Shi Yan had no solution for her.

As soon as he had taken in the massive Essence Qi, it surged

madly in the acupuncture points of his entire body, making him hot and agitated. Under this state, he was in danger as well.

They needed to get to a safe area first!

Only when he could covert the Essence Qi and restore his power could he help Zi Yao and heal her wounds. During the conversion process, he would be exhausted, powerless, and pretty uncomfortable.

At this moment, if some warriors came to kill them, Shi Yan wouldn't be able to do anything.

He thought and thought. Different ideas flashed in his head, as he was trying to solve this problem.

If Ka Tuo could block them once, he could always do it again. The first thing to do was to escape Ka Tuo's gang, even if for just a while. He needed time to recover his power.

The first place that popped up in his mind was the center area of the sunbeam field.

Pondering for a while, Shi Yan prepared to move.

Zi Yao had told him how to control the amethyst war chariot. As long as the chariot accepted him, he could drive the chariot with only a flow of Soul Consciousness.

Zi Yao's Soul Consciousness left in the chariot was drained fast. Gradually, the war chariot didn't move under the set direction. Shi Yan understood that Zi Yao was in a critical moment, and couldn't control the chariot any longer.

Hesitating for a while, he pressed a corner of the chariot, releasing his Soul Consciousness.

A flow of pure Soul Consciousness was poured into the chariot. In the next moment, he became the owner of the chariot. From this moment, he could drive it easily.

His Soul Consciousness showed the way, and the chariot flew in

the direction he wanted. It was magical and so convenient.

The war chariot immediately changed its direction, heading towards a bunch of sunbeams. Shortly, he appeared in a sea of light.

The dense flaming energy here had magical energy waves that pulsed continually. The scorching, piercing power covered the war chariot entirely, including Zi Yao and Shi Yan.

Inside the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, Shi Yan had a glimpse of the Sun's mysteries. Immersing in this sea of sunbeams, he had used the Solar Essence in his soul altar to make a resonating movement with the solar energy around him.

Under that magical energy ripple, he felt warm instead of feeling annoyed, as his Star Martial Spirit quickly absorbed the flaming energy of the sun, which refreshed him a lot.

The power Upanishad he had learned was marvelous. The Star and Sun energy would fuse into one kind of energy in his body. As long as he could understand all the mysteries of the sun and stars, he could freely use these two powers, storing them in his body and then turning them into his formidable attacks.

In a short while, he felt much better. His Star Martial Spirit became calm, slowly taking in the flaming energy of the sun.

However, Zi Yao wasn't so comfortable.

Many bubbles appeared on her appealing, perfect body. Her body had activated the seven-colored God Light automatically to resist the scorching energy from the sun.

Thus, the unknown force wreaking havoc in her body became more furious.

The corpses he had dragged into the chariot were melted into puddles of blood.

Even the amethyst war chariot was melted bit by bit. It seemed

like it couldn't withstand the Sun Essence at the place where the sunbeams were gathering for a long time.

After being astounded for a while, he decided to leave. He urged the amethyst for the second time. From this place, he had used his Soul Consciousness to find the perilous areas.

As he couldn't stay for a long time in the area of the sunbeams, it was a headache for him. This meant that he had no moment of safety to restore his energy. Also, it meant that the space pirates would come for them at any minute.

He had to move nonstop, finding a new area, an area that was safe for him and Zi Yao, where they didn't need to worry about the space pirates.

His Soul Consciousness was patrolling in the area which had the most sunbeams gathering. He was interested in the dangerous areas. The more dangerous it was, the relatively safer it would be for them for the time being. So, Shi Yan was driving the amethyst chariot while seeking the particularly perilous areas.

The information of a mysteriously wicked energy field was sent to his Sea of Consciousness. Energy waves rippled and surged vehemently in that area, creating many energy storms. They ushered chaos everywhere, as if they could devour everything that was alive.

It was the place every warrior who came to this Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field wanted to dodge proactively. No one would dare to intrude.

But he was different. In such dangerous circumstances, Shi Yan wanted to go to the place people were afraid of the most!

Shortly, Shi Yan made up his mind. He drove the war chariot, discreetly heading towards the scorching center.

The war chariot slowed down in that area, as it had to move carefully to avoid the energy fluctuations that could even destroy

his God Soul. Shi Yan didn't dare to relax his nerves, controlling the amethyst war chariot while inching forward.

Crack Crack!

A clear cracking echoed from his chariot. The chariot was more than ten meters long. Once it came into contact with those furious energy storms, it was cracked, as if it were hacked by sharp weapons.

Shi Yan was frightened, and became more cautious.

He had heard from Zi Yao that the amethyst used to build this war chariot was an especially rigid material that even a King God Realm warrior couldn't break with only his muscle strength.

When the energy storm in this area touched the amethyst chariot, the chariot cracked to a significant extent. It was enough to prove how intense those energy waves were.

He was struggling hard to move forward in this hazardous area. From time to time, Shi Yan threw a few corpses of the space pirates to the most dangerous area that his Soul Consciousness could sense to check the power there.

As soon as those bodies fell into that area, they turned into a puddle of blood and then dispersed completely.

Shi Yan wore a bitter smile while feeling a serious headache. Looking at Zi Yao, who couldn't endure any longer, and the extreme danger in front of his eyes, he had a feeling that they were at a dead end.

Crack Crack Crack!

When he still had a worried frown, an energy storm which was still all this while, suddenly moved and collided with the amethyst chariot. Loud shattering noises resounded, as countless pieces of amethyst shot out from the war chariot.

Shortly, the amethyst war chariot, which was inching like a

turtle, was destroyed just like that.

A turbulent energy tornado was still moving towards Shi Yan and Zi Yao.

Shi Yan discolored in fright. He hadn't had the time to think, pulling Zi Yao into his embrace. The flaming energy he had just absorbed expanded like giant fire sphere, covering him as they were flying into the unpredictable outer space.

Although he had the soft body of a beautiful woman next to his chest, he had no gleam of joy on his face. Quite the contrary, he felt his heart get heavy.

The war chariot called the Purple Lightning had been destroyed completely. In the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, their journey would be even more strenuous now. If they met Ka Tuo's gang the second time, they wouldn't be able to escape using the quick speed like they just did. They would become the others' prey for sure.

While his mind was like a mess, a surging energy came from the safe area they were taking shelter in temporarily.

Shi Yan was frightened, as he didn't know what was going on. He could feel an invisible force cover them and drag them towards the center of a massive vortex.

He wanted to struggle, but he then helplessly found that his power was nothing under the Heavenly Might. Holding Zi Yao, Shi Yan sank, falling into the core of the vortex while feeling dizzy without realizing why.

Translator's Thoughts

Sigma Sigma

Hello All!

I just started translating new series and created my own website :smiley: Feel free to pass by and take a look.

[sigmanovel.com/novels/above-the-skies/ats-chapter-1/](http://sigmanovel.com/novels/above-the-skies/ats-chapter-1/)

Gos chat group: [discord.gg/fwuet4f](https://discord.gg/fwuet4f)

Support me at: [patreon.com/Sigma\\_Sama](https://patreon.com/Sigma_Sama)

Vote vote vote for weekly rank

Oh hail Sig-sama

# Chapter 741: New comprehension!

---

Shi Yan woke up and opened his eyes.

The first thing he saw was the endless dark cloud covering the entire sky above his head. Looking at the further area, he found that he was in an icy cold, desolate land. The soil here was brownish-black, without a single energy fluctuation of living beings in the area. Ahead of him was a tall mountain range with so many corpses buried there.

Those corpses belonged to beasts and different races. They were all so decayed that they could disperse with the slightest wind.

Shi Yan stood up and observed, finding corpses everywhere. This place looked like a sea of corpses, of which Shi Yan couldn't see the other end. This place gave him a bleak sensation.

'Where is this place?' As his mind flickered, Shi Yan frowned while rubbing his head as he had a headache. He could only remember that he was besieged in an extraordinarily furious energy area in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field before he got here.

In that area, their amethyst war chariot was destroyed. He could only bring Zi Yao and leave. Then, a force dragged him into a tremendous energy vortex, and he fainted afterward.

Shi Yan remembered Zi Yao, so he immediately searched for her.

Shortly, he found Zi Yao lying in the shade of a beast skull, which had a body that was almost one thousand meters long, not too far from him. Her breathing was as feeble as a filament that couldn't be traced easily. His visage changed slightly, flying out quickly. Instantly, Shi Yan found that the gravity in this place was extremely formidable. It was like he was bearing a massive mountain on his shoulder. His running speed became sluggish.

Essence Qi was still being converted madly in his acupuncture



points, making them annoyingly swollen. Shi Yan understood that the time he had fainted for was short. It shouldn't be more than one hour. Otherwise, his acupuncture points should have finished converting the Essence Qi.

At a speed dozens of times slower than normal, he walked towards Zi Yao. Putting his hand on her, Shi Yan found that the unknown force was still breaking her body from the inside. Zi Yao had lost all of her resistance.

With an extremely grimaced face, he sat down, pulling Zi Yao into his embrace. His both hands were placed on her chest and abdomen.

Although the Essence Qi in his body was still being converted, he was hurriedly waiting for the first flow of mysterious energy, as if a fire was burning him.

Time suddenly became lethargic while Shi Yan was getting so agitated and restless that he had to try his best to calm down his soul to prevent himself from falling into bedevilment.

At this moment, once he lost his consciousness, it would be tough to restore himself shortly. And, he wouldn't be able to help Zi Yao heal her wounds. He temporarily put Zi Yao's wounds aside to quieten down his body, sitting motionlessly like a stone.

A long time afterward, while he felt the pain spreading all over his body, his acupuncture points started to generate energy.

The mysterious energy flooded out from his acupuncture points, circulating in his entire body and then pouring into his Essence Qi ancient tree. The shriveled Essence Qi ancient tree received abundant energy and became translucent little by little as its energy was refilled.

Shi Yan was shaken. He then focused wholeheartedly on his lower abdomen to refine the Essence Qi and pour it into Zi Yao's body. He wanted to destroy the unknown flow of energy in her

body.

However, the flow of energy from that jade token seemed to strangely have its own consciousness. As soon as Shi Yan sent his energy into her body, that flow started to run and hide in unpredictable directions. It could dodge his pursuit and still wreck Zi Yao's vitality.

Wicked!

Shi Yan's visage changed dramatically. It was the first time he had encountered such spooky thing. That flow of energy seemed to have intellect. It could dodge him easily. What the f\*ck was going on?

He gathered his Essence Qi. His Soul Consciousness moved rapidly inside Zi Yao's body to capture that flow of cunning energy.

However, that energy was swift and agile. No matter how hard he tried, he couldn't catch it. It was like Shi Yan and that energy were playing seek-and-hide in Zi Yao's body. That energy had never decreased while his Essence Qi was running out during this pursuit.

His face became grimaced. Seeing Zi Yao's life fading away, he had a powerless feeling.

Pausing temporarily, he felt the surging mysterious energy in his body. Shi Yan pondered for a while and then made a new decision.

'Use the negative energy!'

The negative energy would go with his Death Intent Domain, which might deprive Zi Yao's vitality faster, but still could aim at that flow of energy.

As he was about to take action, he suddenly understood something. His face was astounded.

Death and Life Intent Domain.

Not only did he understand the Death Upanishad, but he also he

had some knowledge of the Life mysteries. Perhaps, he could release a life magnetic field that was similar to the Soul Burial Ground?

When this thought appeared, it started to snowball, and he couldn't dismiss it from his mind.

Pondering for a while, he decided to give it a try.

When this thought popped up in his head, it turned into an electric current, strongly flooding the deep place in his God Soul. It seemed to have a magical connection with his Seal of Upanishad. All of a sudden, a vague but marvelous idea arose in his head.

Flows of mysterious energy in his acupuncture points seemed to be stimulated, becoming more vigorous. Such a powerful life energy made him shudder. He couldn't help but release the energy as per what he had in his vague mind.

Magically, a wonderful feeling appeared in his eyes. One of them was gloomy and tranquil like Death that could destroy everything. There was no mercy, just an unpredictable wickedness. His other eye had a vigorous life energy, with great affection and yearning for lives.

His pair of eyes had two distinctively different energy fluctuations, and totally opposite emotions.

While his eyes had a bizarre change, seals appeared in his palms.

Death Seal and Life Seal!

Two different seals applied on Zi Yao's body at the same time, as a Death Intent Domain and a Life Intent Domain were both generated.

Flows of mysterious energy were scattering from his acupuncture points together with the evil negative energy, which was corresponding with the emotions in his eyes and the opposite energies in his left hand and right hand. The mysterious energy then flooded the Life Seal, giving him the supernatural power of

living beings.

On the other hand, the negative energy had contacted his gloomy eye, pouring massively into the Death Seal and fusing perfectly with the Death Intent Domain, turning it into a Sacred level evil energy that could kill everything. Then, it entered into Zi Yao's body.

At this moment, Shi Yan seemed to become a God who held life and death in his hands. He could kill a life instantly, depriving its vitality. Or, he could give the breath of life to a still rock, giving it intellect.

Negative energy and mysterious energy fused in the Life Intent Domain and the Death Intent Domain urged by his Soul, pouring into Zi Yao's body.

The vigorous life energy moved inside Zi Yao's body, stimulating her vitality and making her pale skin blush again. At the same time, the Death Upanishad was fused in the negative energy that was destroying Zi Yao's vitality.

Shi Yan observed the beauty in his embrace for a while, and he felt he had gotten it.

The Life Intent Domain expanded, covering Zi Yao's soul altar, brain, limbs, and the organs that were wounded. The Death Intent Domain was storming furiously in Zi Yao's chest, finding that cunning flow of energy to destroy it.

That flow of energy with its own consciousness was moving unceasingly. As though it could find the strange situation, it was trying to counterattack.

The coverage of the Death Intent Domain was getting larger. Under the urge of the negative energy, it created a mini Soul Burial Ground, which also covered half of Zi Yao's body.

The Soul Burial Ground was marvelous. It could absorb all life energy and destroy all vitality. Even that flow of wicked energy

couldn't resist.

Under the miraculous yet brutal Soul Burial Ground, that flow of energy was weakened little by little.

Shi Yan was cheered up, a strange light sparkling in his eyes. While he was destroying the unknown force in Zi Yao's body, he felt a new perception of the power of Death and Life Upanishad.

He didn't think much, trying to condense his spirit, soul, and Essence Qi. With the bleak energy on one side and the vigorous energy on the other side, he used Zi Yao's body to test his comprehension.

Shortly, the flow of cunning energy in Zi Yao's body was smashed into nothingness.

Then, Shi Yan's thought flickered, retrieving the Death Intent Domain. His negative energy stopped supplementing the energy. The mysterious energy filled his body, turning into his vigorous vitality, flooding his Life Intent Domain while covering Zi Yao's dying body.

Zi Yao was sinking into the sea of life, as her pale body was refilled with new vitality. Her dysfunctional body was recovering fast.

Her face glowed again, and her stagnant soul altar started to move again.

Shi Yan studied her face. After a while, he could confirm she was alright, and only then did he calm down.

He continued releasing the Life Domain. Closing his eyes, he started to sink into the Life Upanishad, wholeheartedly learning the newest knowledge he had sensed.

In a mysterious, bleak place with so many corpses and no beam of living energy fluctuation, a young man was holding a glamorous figure, who was truly a beautiful disaster, in his embrace. He sat nonchalantly while the Death and Life, the magical, contrastive

energy fluctuations, were constantly diffusing from his body.

He was trying to comprehend the power Upanishad, making an effort for the acme of the martial path.

...

In the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, a flow of dark light shot rapidly, carefully dodging each fatal sunbeam. A vague, skinny figure stayed inside that dark light, as a cold and wicked aura came from that light.

While moving forward quickly, the bunch of dark light suddenly shook as if it had received a serious hit. It then slowed down.

The silhouette covered by the dark light distorted for a while, seeming to have gotten hurt. He sat inside the dark light, as if he were trying to recover something. Long after that, he started to breathe normally again.

A cold and wicked aura that nothing could compare with diffused from the silhouette inside the dark light. He seemed to be enraged, trying to carry out something.

Translator's Thoughts

Sigma Sigma

Hello All!

I just started translating new series and created my own website :smiley: Feel free to pass by and take a look.

[sigmanovel.com/novels/above-the-skies/ats-chapter-1/](http://sigmanovel.com/novels/above-the-skies/ats-chapter-1/)

Gos chat group: [discord.gg/fwuet4f](https://discord.gg/fwuet4f)

Support me at: [patreon.com/Sigma\\_Sama](https://patreon.com/Sigma_Sama)

Vote vote vote for weekly rank

Oh hail Sig-sama

# Chapter 742: Compensate

---

Zi Yao felt as if she had just awakened from the deepest nightmare. She felt fatigued, acting dully as if she was still under the effect of some anesthesia.

In her heavy dizziness, she could feel an icy cold murderous intention moving in her brain, attempting to kill her.

This feeling scared her a lot. She was trying hopelessly to resist it. However, like in an endless nightmare, she eventually became powerless. She felt as if Death was near.

Right when she wanted to give up, a warm Soul Consciousness embraced her. In that robust sea, she suddenly felt safe and cozy. Gradually, she forgot the fear in her heart.

After that flow of warm Soul Consciousness appeared, her nightmare turned into a nice dream. She felt relaxed and comfortable. The worries and fear in her heart were swept away. Her dull God Soul also received a new flow of power, as she gradually regained her consciousness.

The power that wanted to cut off her vitality was covered by another wicked energy in her body, then dissolved slowly. After that energy disappeared, the flow of wicked but familiar energy also retreated from her body.

All of a sudden, she had no worries or fear. It was so comfortable, as if she were enjoying a wonderful bath, feeling the vigorous energy rolling in her body. An unknown force was nurturing her little by little.

Her consciousness was restored, as the soul altar was moving slowly in her Sea of Consciousness. Her exhausted body became lighter and refreshed.

After an unknown period, she remembered all the things that happened before she was put into a coma. She remembered

everything...

She opened her eyes. Her dreamy eyes suddenly sparkled as she saw the one in front of her eyes.

Shi Yan's face was pretty close to her. His face was cold and somber, with his eyes closed. He stayed still like a rock, as two opposing auras were diffusing from him.

One aura was cold and deadly silent, while the other was vigorous. These two auras were opposite to each other, but they could co-exist magically in his body, which gave Zi Yao a strange illusion.

In the next moment, she found herself laying in the other's embrace. Shi Yan was holding her with one arm while she lied feebly on his legs.

Zi Yao was flurried. As she was about to wiggle, she felt something astounding.

A flow of marvelous energy was poured into her body through Shi Yan's arm which was holding her. That energy flowed with vigorous vitality, covering her like a sea of life.

Under the effect of that strange energy, her damaged body was filled with power. Her exhausted body gradually restored.

The mysterious energy had turned into so many streams, spreading and refilling every corner in her body. The biggest stream among them was moving and pouring into her Essence Qi ancient tree in her low abdomen.

The shriveled Essence Qi ancient tree became shining with the supplemented amount of energy.

She was sensitive enough to see how great the benefit that mysterious energy was bringing to her. Thus, she stopped, maintaining her position while looking at Shi Yan quietly.

She studied the cold face within her reach.



'This man... isn't bad!'

Zi Yao's pale face glowed, as a magical light sparkled in her beautiful eyes. She pressed her succulent red lips as the quiet lake in her heart was having some ripples.

Shi Yan hadn't realized that Zi Yao had woken up. He seemed to immerse in some dreams. His breath was steady, and his soul was calm with his eyes closed.

However, the Death and Life Intent Domains on his body were like two different sharp swords. One hand of his was pouring the vigorous energy of life into Zi Yao's body while the other hand, which could kill all kinds of creatures, was placed on the freezing cold ground.

The Death Intent Domain and Life Intent Domain were totally opposite. Both of them continually appeared layers upon layers on him.

Shortly, he seemed to become Death, who wanted to kill all creatures, while in the next moment, he gave people a warm feeling like the spring breeze, as if he wanted to give life to all living beings

'He's comprehending the knowledge of his realm.'

Zi Yao observed for a while and then got it. Her pretty eyes became brighter. She couldn't move her eyes from him even just to blink.

'He has the Life Intent Domain as well?'

An impossible thought popped up in her head. Now she knew that it was because of Shi Yan that she could keep her life.

When she woke up, she remembered how tremendous and cruel the flow of energy intruding her body was. In her previous condition, she had no means to resist it. While she was half-conscious, she knew her vitality was damaged severely.

If Shi Yan hadn't helped her, she knew that at this moment, even her soul altar would have been destroyed.

The vague memories of her nightmare became clearer bit by bit. Although her eyes were still as beautiful as stars in the sky, the quiet lake in her heart was rippling. Her countenance was strangely unclear.

She was dazed, looking at the young man who was holding her tight and learning his power Upanishad at the same time. At this moment, she felt a little bit confused...

The mysterious energy pouring into her body weakened until it stopped. It woke her up from her tangible thoughts.

She sensed her body condition as a gleam of begrudging sorrow appeared on her charming face.

Although her life was saved, her energy had been consumed greatly. The amount of mysterious energy Shi Yan had given her was like a pinch of salt in the sea. She still needed a lot to recover.

As she was at the Third Sky of King God Realm, she needed the amount of energy as much as the water in a vast sea to restore her power. Depending only on the refined energy from Shi Yan's acupuncture points, who was just at the Second Sky of True God Realm, wasn't enough to help her recover.

While she was upset, she just recalled something, her face frightened.

Shi Yan's power Upanishad could heal her wounds? That vigorous vitality seemed to carry the mysteries of Life, which could heal her damaged vitality, helping it shine healthily. Such power Upanishad could appear on the man who has the Death Upanishad?

This discovery astounded her!

Impossible!

When she looked at Shi Yan, she felt that this man was like a riddle. No one knew how many secrets he was keeping.

Time flew hurriedly.

After an unknown period of time, Shi Yan woke up from his realm comprehension. When he opened his eyes, he was startled. An enchanting face was not more than half a meter from him. The sweet fragrance of hers permeated his nostrils and mouth, entering his body.

It should be a wonderful thing. However, as he had just woken up from his realm comprehension, so he couldn't react timely. Quite the contrary, he was a little bit bewildered.

He felt awkward as he hurried to loosen his arm around Zi Yao. He smiled shyly and stood up.

Zi Yao's face was still normal, still the flower-like smiling visage. She was half lying and half sitting on the ground, revealing her charming curves. A strange light flared in her beautiful eyes. "I feel great after a good nap. But, I haven't slept enough. Still feeling a little tired."

Shi Yan was dull, smiling. "It's alright. You can continue to sleep. We aren't hurried."

He knew Zi Yao understood what had happened. Since the other didn't mention anything, he didn't want to explain further.

"While I was sleeping, why did you take me here? Where the heck is this place?" Zi Yao rubbed her jade-like neck. She shook her head as if she were pulling herself together. Her beautiful eyes gazed here and there at the surroundings.

Shi Yan's face was stiff. "Ghost knows. Our war chariot was destroyed in a furious energy storm. I brought you and tried to escape, but we were dragged into a massive vortex, sinking into its core. When I woke up, we were here already. I've surveyed this area. There are no living beings here. I found only rotten corpses

here, which belonged to beasts and other races." He pointed at the area above their heads.

Zi Yao lifted her head, looking at the hundred-meters-long beast skeleton. She wasn't so surprised, as if she had seen it before. She laughed cheerily. "Why did you bring me to this strange place? You've planned some dark things, right? Why did you hug me? You... Did you do anything to me?"

Shi Yan was surprised. He was bewildered for a while and then said calmly. "I've never done anything to you. But hey, before we got here, you bullied me when we were in the war chariot."

He pointed a finger at the place Zi Yao kissed him, talking seriously. "No woman has ever disgraced me like this. How will you compensate me?"

Zi Yao couldn't hold her laughter anymore. She laughed until her body shook, her eyes watery. The pressure and the harsh situation they were bearing were suddenly swept away a little bit.

She squinted while laughing, licking her seducing red lips. Her naturally charming voice arose. "I'm sorry. My bad! I shouldn't have disgraced you. Tell me, what do you want for compensation? I'm a little bit slow. You have to teach me..."

Shi Yan felt hot, as if a volcano was activated inside him.

"Just make it up," He was shaken, approaching Zi Yao all of a sudden. He licked his lips, trying to place a smack on her cheek.

Zi Yao laughed cheerily. When his lips were about to touch her cheek, she rose a finger, placing on his wide mouth, then continued laughing. She didn't say anything, her eyes bearing something deep.

Facing her for a few seconds, Shi Yan was embarrassed. He admitted his defeat first, giving a wry smile and then stepping backward. He faked a cough and then stood up with a solemn face, looking at the further distance. "We should know where we are

first. We should check this area to know the situation."

Zi Yao beamed a smile. She looked at him for a while and then stooped, whining. "Thick-skinned."

Shi Yan was emotionless, talking naturally. "The gravity here's formidable. As your wounds haven't recovered fully, I'll help you. Yeah, I won't calculate our debt this time."

Then, Shi Yan didn't wait for Zi Yao to object to his idea, hastening towards her like lightning. He held her hand while looking forward, urging his power to pull her with him while running at a fast pace.

At the moment he held her hand, Zi Yao's eyes had a clear gleam of fear. However, she calmed down quickly and didn't struggle, just letting Shi Yan hold it. She didn't urge her power as she let Shi Yan take the lead and leap up.

# Chapter 743: Vermilion Bird - the Sacred Beast

---

Shi Yan and Zi Yao were moving aimlessly in the mysterious and perilous land. Anyway, their speed was just one-third compared to their normal speed.

The gravity of this place was horrifying. Once warriors stepped on this land, they had to bear a massive pressure that hindered them whenever they moved or flew. Above their heads were the thick, ink-like clouds that blocked their view to outer space.

There was neither sunlight nor the energy from sun, moon, or stars. This gloomy land only had rotten corpses lying here and there. They couldn't find a single way of energy from living beings.

This place was spacious. Even after moving for a long time, they didn't see where it ended. However, Shi Yan and Zi Yao all felt tired. They had to slow down, using their Soul Consciousness to sense begrudgingly.

"How do you feel now?" Shi Yan held her hand tightly, his face serious. "The energy that intruded your body was frightening. It had consciousness, and it could avoid my pursuit. If I hadn't reacted correctly using the Death Intent Domain to surround it, perhaps, you couldn't have resisted it..."

"The one who attacked me is at the Peak of King God Realm. He's just one step away from the Original God Realm. A flow of Soul Consciousness with power could ascend into life... This is the mystery of the heaven and earth a warrior at the Original God Realm can perceive. That one... I think he's still a little bit weak, so he couldn't cross a further distance or pour more energy into the living being ascended from his Soul Consciousness. Otherwise, even if you helped me, I would have been killed."

Zi Yao's eyes were distressed. She contemplated for a while and

then turned to him. "If you hadn't helped me, I would have died already."

"A wisp of Soul Consciousness could evolve into a living creature? Do the Original God Realm warriors have that kind of supernatural attainment?" Shi Yan was frightened.

In his eyes, it was unimaginable. A flow of Soul Consciousness could have its own intellect, as if it could become a clone of the user? Such a tremendous and marvelous technique was too spooky.

"Experts at the Original God Realm have supernatural power Upanishads, and it's not that simple." Zi Yao smiled begrudgingly, her face longing. "I'm always making efforts to reach this realm. Until now, I still think it's too far away for me to ever reach. Experts at this realm are the real characters in the Raging Flame Star Area. They are all the freak elders that have almost become monsters."

"Your wounds..."

"Can't die yet, but it's not easy to recover fully. Don't worry! I have so many medicines and pellets, so I can gradually recover my powers. I just need time," Zi Yao said casually.

Shi Yan nodded, "It's good then. This place is strange, and somehow evil. My Soul Consciousness can't get out, and the others can't detect us either. Even if they can come here, they won't dare to intrude. So, we still have time."

"How about you?" Zi Yao's beautiful eyes brightened. "When I woke up, I saw you were comprehending power Upanishads. How was it? Did you get a big harvest? Is it still far from reaching the Third Sky of True God Realm? I think the Essence Qi in your body is enough..."

The last part of her words wasn't clear.

Before the battle with Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo, she had

checked Shi Yan's Essence Qi condition. She knew his situation at that time. However, when she woke up and sensed his body's conditions again, she found that his Essence Qi had tripled!

This was something she had never dared to imagine!

Zi Yao didn't know what had happened to Shi Yan that had tripled his Essence Qi while she was in a coma.

Shi Yan suddenly smiled.

"What? Did you get something good?" As she was moved, Zi Yao couldn't help but ask.

Shi Yan nodded relaxedly. "It's true. I gained a big harvest. If nothing unexpected happens, I can break through shortly. I think... just a little bit later."

It was not small indeed, as he had made a tremendous harvest this time!

Not only was his Essence Qi ancient tree filled with pure energy, but he also gained a brand new perception of the mysteries of Life and Death.

Among the three powers of Star, Space, and Death and Life, his Death and Life Intent Domain had always been lagging behind the others. Shi Yan didn't know how to continue advancing this power. This time, when he was aiding Zi Yao in healing her wounds, he magically fell into the state of comprehension. Afterward, he had a new knowledge, which could be considered a whole new world to him.

He vaguely felt that he would be able to enter the Third Sky of True God Realm not long afterward, gaining a greater achievement.

"Congratulations!" Zi Yao told him seriously. "It's hard to predict things, indeed. I can't recover my wounds in a short time, but you have gained big benefits, as your realm and powers are all improved. I should be distressed, but I don't know why I feel it's



alright. At least... I can relax for a while, and I don't need to plan or calculate anything, just putting that terrible mess aside."

Shi Yan was surprised. He knew she had to bear a lot of pressure. He sighed inwardly. "You know the one who attacked you at the last moment?"

Zi Yao's smiling face changed. Her eyes became freezing cold, sparkling with a bone-deep resentment. "I have some idea, but I'm not sure. I will investigate it. I hope it wouldn't be like I've thought."

"Who do you suspect?" Shi Yan contemplated while frowning.

Zi Yao gave him a deep look. Pondering for a few seconds, she replied, "You don't need to know, because you can't help me even if you know, and it will only increase your pressure. Moreover... I'm not certain about it yet. We should talk about it later."

"Okay then," nodded Shi Yan.

"The gravity here is massive. Your realm can't help you with the terrible gravity here. We can't escape this place." Zi Yao lifted up her head, looking at the sky and muttered, "If my power is recovered, we can wiggle and get rid of the gravity. Anyway, we can't do that right now. Seems we have to stay there for a while."

"You are from the Raging Flame Star Area, so have you ever heard about this strange land inside the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field?"

"The Raging Flame Star Area is much bigger than what you've imagined. The Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field doesn't simply have some hidden areas like this. I'm not familiar with this place. Or else, we wouldn't have been lost," Zi Yao shook her head. "I don't know where we are. There are many mysterious places in the Raging Flame Star Area. Many unsolved riddles, too. There are some places even the Original God Realm warriors don't dare to trespass."

Shi Yan shuddered inwardly, secretly putting up his guard.

"Alright, you can loosen my hand. We shall move." Zi Yao suddenly smiled, as bright as a blooming flower. She pulled herself together and shook the negative mood off.

Shi Yan didn't change his visage as he let off her hand. "Okay. We should continue to search."

Seeing him deliberate like nothing had happened, Zi Yao was resentful. She clenched her teeth and let out a light snort.

Shi Yan acted as if he didn't notice her move. He dashed forward with a sigh. "Too bad! So many skeletons here have been corroded with time, without any energy remaining. Otherwise, I could have made some toys with them."

"You can forge secret treasures, too?" Zi Yao was surprised as she exclaimed behind his back.

"I know a little bit." Shi Yan didn't turn his head to look at her as he continued to move ahead. "I made the three Bone Thorns I used in the fight with Da Meng. Sigh! Unfortunately, I don't have many good materials. Otherwise, I can try to forge Divine weapons."

Zi Yao was stunned.

Shi Yan didn't care about her. He released his Soul Consciousness and urged his energy to get rid of the massive gravity, flying forward quickly.

Beast skeletons passed under his body. Those skeletons showed no wounds, making Shi Yan curious as to how they died.

Far, far from him, Shi Yan could see the skeletons of many experts from different races. All of them were grayish-brown, without a single beam of energy left. He couldn't use them to forge any weapons.

Barren hills appeared in his view, only to be left behind shortly. Shi Yan didn't know how long he had been flying. But on this day,

while he felt a little tired, a beam of weak, hidden energy suddenly appeared in his Soul Consciousness.

That flow of energy was feeble, as if something was covering it. If Shi Yan didn't understand the Sun Upanishad, he would never have sensed it.

It was the flaming energy of the Sun!

Shi Yan was cheered up. He didn't care about his exhausted spirit and continued to fly forward at a slower speed.

Arid hills and mountains glided under his body. After a long time, his view was suddenly widened. Lying deep in a massive hole drilled into the earth was a giant beast skeleton.

That skeleton looked like a giant bird without flesh. All the bones were scarlet, around ten thousand meters long. It looked more like a collapsed mountain fallen into the center of that deep hole.

A beam of flaming energy of the sun came from this giant bird. However, it was concealed. If Shi Yan didn't have a special power Upanishad, he would never have felt it.

He approached the hole slowly, floating quietly above the giant bird and observing. Shi Yan condensed his Soul Consciousness into a beam and sent it toward the bird's forehead, where he had sensed the energy.

The feeble wisp of flaming sun energy came from there.

"Wait a minute!" At this moment, Zi Yao's frightened call arose behind him.

A purple light flashed. In the next minute, Zi Yao was next to him, watching the giant bird skeleton with fear. "Don't do anything rash."

Shi Yan immediately retrieved his sensing Soul Consciousness. He frowned, looking at her unknowingly. "Do you know what kind of a bird is that?"

"If I'm right, I think I know what it is." Zi Yao's eyes flared, but she didn't say anything in detail, as though she wasn't so sure.

"What?"

"Sacred Beast Vermilion Bird!"

Shi Yan was scared. "What? What did you just say?"

"It's the Sacred Beast Vermilion Bird!" Zi Yao repeated. "Long time ago, this Sacred Beast came here from nowhere. It suddenly appeared in the Raging Flame Star Area. It caused the solar suns in the area to lose their light. This so-called Sacred Beast Vermilion Bird seemed to be able to absorb the power of the sun to ascend. Since the Solar Stars were ineffective, floras on many life stars shriveled and died. So many spiritual herbs and plants on Herbal Stars died, which enraged experts at that time. They united to hunt that bird down."

"What was the result?" A vehement storm rolled in Shi Yan's heart, but his voice was still calm.

"Result?" Zi Yao beamed a forced smile "I don't know the result, because the warriors hunting the Sacred Beast Vermilion Bird and the bird itself all disappeared into thin air all of a sudden. But now, I know it..."

She pointed at the giant bird skeleton under their feet and countless skeletons of beasts and experts of different races far from them. "I think this is the result."

"The Vermilion Bird True Flame's here."

Suddenly, the heaven flames from Shi Yan's soul altar sent him their thoughts. Shortly, Shi Yan could feel the energy fluctuations from the skeleton of the giant bird.

# Chapter 744: Original Magnetic Field

---

Legends of the Vermilion Bird True Flame had been told in the Grace Mainland, and each of them was related to the Sacred Beast Vermilion Bird.

The Sacred Beast Vermilion Bird was a mighty existence in the Immemorial Epoch. It was gifted with the ability to use fire. As the Sacred Beast of Fire class, its supernatural power was eternal. It was one of the most powerful existences of that era.

Another legend, which got approval from many people, was said to be the nearest to the truth.

Rumors had it that when one of the four Sacred Beasts, Vermilion Bird, left the Grace Mainland, as it didn't know whether or not it could survive in the outer space, it left a wisp of its soul.

That wisp of soul had its flaming energy, but it didn't have an entity. As time went by, it gradually cut off the connection with Vermilion Bird and gained its own intellect, becoming one of the heaven flames. The Vermilion Bird True Flame had the comprehension of Vermilion Bird's principles. Weapons forged by Vermilion Bird True Flame would be added with the divine power of the Bird. This heaven flame was ranked seventh on the list.

There were many tales about the Vermilion Bird True Flame, but this one was the most famous. In the Grace Mainland, Vermilion Bird True Flame was the most mysterious heaven flame, as it rarely showed up.

After the Immemorial Epoch, the Ancient Time, and the Antiquity Era, no warrior had ever met this heaven flame. It seemed to have disappeared into thin air, or it had left the Grace Mainland somehow.

Heaven flames could sense each other. That was why Shi Yan's heaven flames in his soul altar could detect the feeble fluctuation

on the forehead of that giant bird. They all reacted and sent the thoughts to Shi Yan.

Thus, Shi Yan didn't dare to act rashly.

"What?" Zi Yao felt something. "Did you find anything?"

Shi Yan mused. He didn't release his Soul Consciousness, just frowning and assessing the giant bird skeleton as he was contacting the heaven flames in his soul altar discreetly.

"Very powerful! He's certainly at level five. His ascension's more complete than ours, and his power's immense." The Ice Cold Flame sent him its message first. "You should be careful. Heaven flames can detect and swallow each other to increase their power. Just like the World Extinguishing Thunder Flame, if he can detect us, perhaps he will want to occupy us."

Shi Yan slightly changed his face. "Level five? What does it mean?"

"We are similar to the warriors, and we can evolve. Heaven flames have 9 levels to achieve. Each time we ascend, we can break through one level, during which, we will improve our intelligence and power, and the living form will become more perfect. The ranking of 9 levels appears at the time we gain intellect, and then stays deep inside our souls. It will never fade away. I don't know why we have such ranking. However, to have a more perfect living form, we have always headed to level 9," said the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the heaven flame that was ranked number 3.

"I had ascended to level 4. However, due to a long time of captivity, my realm has degraded. Now, I'm only at level 3. Among the heaven flames here, only the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame's at level 4. The Ice Cold Flame and I are the same, at level 3. The Earth Flame's at level 2, but he seems ready to break through soon. He should be at level 3 later."

"In other words, his ascension is much more perfect than yours?" frowned Shi Yan.

"It's true. His realm is similar to the World Extinguishing Thunder Flame, level 5. Although he is ranked number 7, his ascension's much better than us. We, perhaps, are not his opponents. And, this is his territory. Once we engage in a battle, he can gain more energy support. It would be much strenuous to deal with him." The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame seemed to be begrudged. "If I hadn't been confined for so many years, I think, not only would my realm have not been degraded, I would have also broken through to level 5. It's so unfortunate."

"Are you talking with someone?" Zi Yao's beautiful eyes sparkled as she could sense his Soul Consciousness change. "Before I got fainted, I could feel you were talking to someone. Who is that one? Where is he?"

The soul sacrificial altar was the most precious and fundamental treasure of a warrior. It was the most forbidden and private place. Since the heaven flames were taking shelter in his soul altar, even Zi Yao couldn't detect them.

"Have you ever heard about heaven flames?" Musing for a while, Shi Yan took a deep breath then focused on Zi Yao.

Since Zi Yao was the princess of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation in the Raging Flame Star Area, her knowledge was profound. Shi Yan thought that if they could find the heaven flames on the Grace Mainland, the Raging Flame Star Area might have some as well.

"Heaven flames?" Zi Yao was shaken, apparently astounded. "How do you know these things?"

Shi Yan was moved. "You know them? Tell me, what are those strange living beings?"

"How do you know them?" Zi Yao didn't answer but asked.

"Of course, I know them. Our continent has heaven flames." Shi Yan frowned as he was filled with suspicions towards Zi Yao's attitude.

"And you told me you come from a low-level continent! How long do you want to deceive me furthermore?" Zi Yao was so angry that her face paled. "I knew it. You have the Death Upanishad and space Upanishad. You're absolutely not from a low-level continent."

Shi Yan beamed a forced smile. "I didn't fool you. In my continent, the strongest warriors have only the Peak of True God Realm cultivation base."

"You have never seen a stronger warrior in your continent?" Zi Yao glared at him.

Shi Yan was astounded. "It seems... Yeah, a long time ago. But that's too long ago. Currently, the energy cycle of our continent is coming to an end. We don't have even the King God Realm warriors. That's why I told you I belong to a low-level continent."

"No, you're wrong." Zi Yao's face was better after listening to him. "The continent you lived should have been rich before. In the time you didn't know of, the invincible experts must have appeared. However, as their realms were extreme, the heaven and earth energy in your continent must have been drained fast. They had to leave to find a better place for their cultivation."

"Yeah, I guess," nodded Shi Yan.

"As far as I know, only the oldest continents could have these magical creatures called heaven flames." Zi Yao looked at him with a serious countenance and explained slowly. "Those mysterious and old continents have original magnetic fields, which absorb the energy of the star sea for billions of years. The original magnetic field stays in the deepest place in those continents, just like the marvelous soul altar of warriors. The heaven flames are the kinds of strange creatures created by the original energy of the original magnetic field. Each kind of heaven flames have coincidentally or



accidentally gained a flow of Original Energy, and gradually formed their beings. Those flames don't have a real entity. Their living form is mysterious and magical. They are constantly completing and ascending."

Not only Shi Yan, but his heaven flames in the soul altar had also quieted down, using Shi Yan's perception to listen to her description.

Heaven flames themselves didn't have a clear information of their origin and existence. Nobody had ever told them how they were created or developed. As they were listening to her, they were all attentive, as if they were afraid that they would miss some of her words.

"The Original Energy is the most supernatural power in the world. Only the oldest continents could have the Original Magnetic Field. Of course, this flow of energy will drain together with the prosperity of lives on that continent. You said that your continent is about to reach its end of the energy cycle. I think it has lost the Original Magnetic Field and the Original Energy."

Pausing for a while, Zi Yao arranged her ideas and then continued. "Anyway, I can tell you that every continent that used to have the Original Magnetic Field is one of the oldest continents, and they aren't the low-level ones. At least, in our Raging Flame Star Area, we have never had that kind of a continent."

"What is the Original Magnetic Field good for?" Shi Yan exclaimed inwardly. His eyes showed his astonishment.

"The ancient continents have the Original Magnetic Field, which could give birth to and nurture powerful lives. It could make the creatures on that continent learn faster and gain more of the heaven and earth's energies. Lives born on continents with Original Magnetic Field are all high-grade living beings. From the primitive times, they could level up pretty fast using the enormous energy on the continent. Their realms were really profound and

unpredictable." Zi Yao took a deep breath and pointed at the Sacred Beast Vermilion Bird under their feet. "Take this giant creature for example. No continent in the Raging Flame Star Area can give birth to such life. I'm sure it came from an ancient continent with Original Magnetic Field."

Nodding instinctively, Shi Yan's eyes were complicated. "Yeah, I think this dude came from our Grace Mainland. Because, in our place, legends of it have been told for so many generations."

Zi Yao's eyes sparkled. She confirmed immediately. "Then it's true! Heaven Flames are the strange creatures that evolved from a flow of Original Energy. I heard that when a warrior could combine all kinds of heaven flames in a mysterious ancient continent, he could fuse those Original Energies into one, bringing an unimaginable benefit to his soul altar. Of course, I don't know the details, because our Raging Flame Star Area has never had such a lucky b\*stard who could have all kinds of heaven flames from the continent with Original Magnetic Field. I think no one knows about it."

Shi Yan was struck, as his eyes brightened.

He remembered that he had obtained a technique called 'Heaven Flame Refining Divine Technique' from the ring.

This secret technique told people how to fuse all kinds of heaven flames to create the Fire Life, which could burn the soul and create the Original Soul. Heaven Flame Refining Divine Technique required three main materials, including the Thunder Witch Wood, Blood Soul Divine Water, Five Elements Crystal Marrow, and so many auxiliary materials. The process to combine the flames was quite complicated and exquisite.

Because it was too difficult to find all the heaven flames, Shi Yan didn't pay much attention to this technique. But, as he was listening to Zi Yao, he jolted as he finally understood how magical and precious that technique was.

Shi Yan calculated, and he could confirm what kind of a great chance he could have when he gathered all heaven flames on the Grace Mainland.

# Chapter 745: Sun Original Essence!

---

Among the known ten heaven flames on the Grace Mainland, he had the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, the Corpse Vanishing Flame, and the Earth Flame. The Purgatory True Flame was in Ye Chang Feng's body. If he could return to the Grace Mainland, perhaps he could exchange that heaven flame with a good price. It seemed not really difficult to take that heaven flame.

The World Extinguishing Thunder Flame was smashed and banished into another space. When his Space power could be improved further one day, he could make that space appear again to gather the World Extinguishing Thunder Flame and conquer it.

So, among the ten heaven flames, only the Primal Chaos Sacred Flame, Immemorial Demonic Flame, and the Vermilion Bird True Flame remained unknown.

Today, the Vermilion Bird True Flame was right under his feet.

All of a sudden, Shi Yan felt that the time he could gather all the heaven flames of the Grace Mainland was near.

While frowning, he was stunned thinking about one thing.

If what Zi Yao said were true, that each of heaven flame would need a flow of Original Energy, should the Earth Flame have one when it had ascended too?

Original Energy was the root of an ancient continent. Without the Original Energy, a continent would lose its heaven and earth energy faster.

No wonder why the energy of the Grace Mainland had nearly come to the end of its cycle. Turned out it was related to the Earth Flame, more or less.

"Why did you ask about the Heaven Flames?" As Zi Yao was watching him, she recognized he sometimes furrowed his brows

and then shifted to a more relaxed posture

"Because, the one who's been talking to me is a heaven flame," Shi Yan smiled.

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes rippled with a strange light. She was astounded, looking at him stunned. After a while, she beamed a forced smile. "Your luck is too good, you know? You got a heaven flame!"

A heaven flame?

Shi Yan felt funny, shaking his head. However, he didn't explain.

"Something's underground. Watch out!" All of a sudden, the Ice Cold Flame sent Shi Yan a message. "That energy's too hot. I don't like it at all."

In the next moment, Shi Yan felt it as well. His sword-like eyes gazed at the skull of the Vermilion Bird.

The feeble flow of energy became clearer. Soon, an orange-red flame appeared. The flame enlarged gradually, and in just a blink, it became an exquisite Vermilion Bird, floating above the skull of the giant bird.

A scorching, flaming energy bloomed from that Vermilion Bird. It was like a change of heaven and earth energy. Waves of flame rippled unceasingly, covering Shi Yan and Zi Yao.

"He wants to start a fight!" The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was totally enraged. "Although he's at level 5, we aren't alone. Such an arrogant b\*stard!"

"This fight's between the heaven flames, just like the battle with the World Extinguishing Thunder Flame. You can't participate in it easily." The Ice Cold Flame told him.

In the next moment, strange flames flew out one by one from Shi Yan's Soul Altar.

Four great heaven flames, including the Nine Serenities Soul

Devouring Flame, the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, and the Corpse Vanishing Flame got out and stormed towards the Vermilion Bird created by the Vermilion Bird True Flame.

Zi Yao gawked, muttering as if she were sleep-talking. "One, two, three, four! Four! My God!"

Shi Yan frowned, touching his forehead. He found that the Earth Flame was still dormant. Seemed like it was still in the process of ascension. The Earth Flame wouldn't join this battle.

Shortly, the silver Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the blue Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, the green Corpse Vanishing Flame, and the jade white Ice Cold Flame flashed and then disappeared, swarming towards the Vermilion Bird True Flame.

Four energies of different attributes were activated, stirring up this whole world and shaking it turbulently.

The Corpse Vanishing Flame came the last, floating silently. In just a flash, a magical magnetic field expanded from its green flame.

Suddenly, countless spooky, green colored phosphorescent lights slowly flew up from the barren land. They looked like snowflakes moving upward to the sky, gathering into the flame.

A faint corpse Qi was found in those spooky green lights. It seemed the flame had dragged the last beam of energy in those experts and beasts' skeletons.

So many spooky green flames gathered and congregated in the Corpse Vanishing Flame. At the same time, the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame seemed to have sensed something, as a wave of energy rippled from it. Then, a gossamer-like energy that naked eyes couldn't see diffused from the dark cotton clouds in the sky, moving towards the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame.

At this moment, Shi Yan could clearly feel how joyful the Corpse Vanishing Flame and the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame were. This area

could supply them a powerful energy.

The Corpse Vanishing Flame could gain energy from the corpses. Although Shi Yan didn't see any beam of energy in the countless corpses and skeletons here, it didn't mean that there was nothing usable. The strange and evil Corpse Vanishing Flame was able to take the Corpse Qi from corpses to grow its power.

And, the thick cotton clouds in the sky seemed to contain the remnants of the spooky souls, which the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame could take in.

It looked like these flames had been prepared. As soon as they flew out, they acted immediately, taking the power that benefited them to increase their auras.

Countless green phosphorescent flames and a large amount of energy from soul remnants made the Corpse Vanishing Flame and the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame overjoyed, especially the latter. He was a level 4 heaven flame. After receiving this kind of energy, the energy fluctuation it released had frightened even Shi Yan.

So powerful!

Zi Yao suddenly groaned, even though she had no wounds. She supported her forehead in tiredness, gazing at him with a bizarre countenance. "You... How many tricks do you have? Why do I feel that you always have many mysteries that people will never fully discover?"

Rubbing his nose, Shi Yan shrugged. "What do you mean?"

"Didn't you say that you have only one heaven flame? Why are there four over there?" Zi Yao clenched her teeth, thinking that she was fooled the second time. Her young soul was enraged.

Shi Yan was surprised. "When did I say I have only one kind of heaven flame? Didn't you think like that yourself?"

"Then, why didn't you explain?" Zi Yao screamed indignantly, her charming face angry.

"I forgot," Shi Yan smiled. "I think I don't need to explain these things. It's not worth the time. You've seen them, right?"

"I've told you everything. But you are hiding things from me. You're too ungrateful!" Zi Yao was enraged, speaking through her gritted white teeth. "Remember it! Women are always narrow-minded. I will make you see what you will receive for bullying women!"

"Bullied you?" Shi Yan forced a smile. He felt that he sometimes couldn't reason when talking to her. He shook his head and didn't try to explain further, shifting his focus to the furious fight of the heaven flames.

It was similar to the previous time. The heaven flames had created a separate world that would hinder the outsiders, keeping them from getting involved in their fight.

He looked at the sky. So many layers of flames covered the entire sky, just like a massive cluster of light. Seeing this kind of scorching heat and fierce atmosphere, Shi Yan didn't know how or when to support them.

Shortly, the light disappeared, leaving some auras that even the Soul Consciousness couldn't catch. Without the connection with heaven flames, Shi Yan couldn't feel those auras.

Shi Yan didn't want to hover in the sky anymore. Getting rid of the formidable gravity wasn't an easy task, after all.

He landed, standing near the thousand-meters-long skeleton of the Vermilion Bird. He faced the sky, gathering his Soul Consciousness. "I know you guys can borrow my soul energy. This is the only thing I can help you with. If you need it, remember to tell me."

"No need! He and I have taken the Corpse Qi in this area. We've gained big this time. It won't be too harsh dealing with him." The Yin Spirit Ghost Flame sent him a message. Among the heaven



flames, this was the only level 4 flame.

In this area, he seemed to be more relaxed. While fighting with the Vermilion Bird True Flame, he still had time to talk to Shi Yan.

Hearing him, Shi Yan felt at ease. He smiled and then relaxed, walking around the Vermilion Bird's skeleton, admiring the ancient creature from the Grace Mainland.

The Sacred Beast Vermilion Bird was born in the Immemorial Epoch in the Grace Mainland. It had left the Grace Mainland a long time ago. A mighty sacred beast like it had fallen in the outer space, under the siege of so many experts. Ultimately, it had paid a big price of having its God Soul dispersed to kill all of the enemies.

The outer space was too dangerous, indeed.

The Vermilion Bird's skeleton was ten thousand meters tall. Its bones were ash gray and rotten. It seemed to have no energy remaining in it.

However, when Shi Yan knocked a leg bone, he heard the echoing sound of metal. This astounded him for a while, his face solemn.

He gathered energy, urging his power to make a strike.

"Ding!"

That skeleton resounded a loud echo, but his attack left nothing on the bone.

His face changed, looking at Zi Yao who had just landed. "This thing has been dead for countless years. Look, its bones are all decayed. Why haven't they turned into dust? Aren't they too rigid?"

He still remembered when he stepped on the skeleton of a beast on the way there, it would disperse like a mass of bone dust. It was unimaginably weak.

Even though it appeared to be decayed, this Vermilion Bird's

skeleton was still so rigid. Shi Yan was amazed.

"This beast isn't some kind of creature our Raging Flame Star Area could nurture. Its might has been carved in the minds of many people of the Raging Flame Star Area. According to the legends, we had to mobilize almost all of the peak experts of the Raging Flame Star Area at that time to kill him. That beast was able to kill all of them! I don't know how he could do that." Zi Yao seemed to respect the beast. "It's fortunate that your continent is going to see the end of its energy cycle. Otherwise, I can't imagine how frightening it would be. Creatures from that continent are too powerful. They are all beyond my knowledge."

"Crack Crack Crack!"

Suddenly, fierce cracking sounds echoed under the skeleton of the Sacred Beast Vermilion Bird.

Shi Yan was scared, oddly looking at the finger he had just touched. "Oh sh\*t, did I just activate any restriction?"

Zi Yao was dumbstruck, looking at the ground under her feet.

The ground was torn apart, revealing a large hole. A massive crystal that was as big as a football court emerged slowly. Countless beams of sunlight were radiating from that crystal, as the flaming energy of the sun was surging vehemently. A burning liquid was moving on the surface of the crystal.

"Sun Original Essence!"

Zi Yao couldn't help but cry hoarsely.

# Chapter 746: Power Upanishad Sublimated!

---

The flaming crystal slowly emerged from the ground, releasing a lot of sunbeams. At that moment, the icy cold, barren land was filled with a scorching energy.

Numerous skeletons of warriors and beasts were melted under those sunbeams. The gray sky was illuminated by the flaming light, as the colored light extended everywhere.

The aura of the Vermilion Bird True Flame inside the sky suddenly rocketed!

Right after the flaming crystal appeared, he seemed to gain more power. In the battle with the other heaven flames, he seemed to be gaining the upper hand thanks to the supplementation from the crystal.

In the fierce fight between the heaven flames, outsiders couldn't participate. Even Shi Yan, the one with the heaven flame tier in his soul altar, could only use his soul energy to aid his flames.

He couldn't pour his energy directly to support the heaven flames to deal with the Vermilion Bird True Flame. The fight between heaven flames seemed to have some binding principles.

Every time the heaven flames fought, they would be covered by an invisible force, which hindered outsiders from sensing or interfering in their fight.

The flaming crystal slowly emerged, as if some force was guiding it to fly up from underground. The terrible gravity of this place seemed to not affect the crystal at all, as it could slowly float up to the sky.

Countless sunbeams shone like spotlights and illuminated the ground. Far from the lighting source, skeletons were melted and dissolved, while all energy remnants were squeezed out.

Fear appeared on Zi Yao's charming face as sweat dampened her

neck. A seven-colored God Light twirled around her to resist the eroding sunbeams. Her cheeks blushed like ripe apples, looking extremely inviting, making people want to bite her to ease their hunger.

Shi Yan faced up the sky, his visage frightened. However, he didn't know why he was so happy inwardly.

The Sun Original Essence looked like a burning crystal, just like the Star Original Essence he had seen. It was the essence of the Sun Heart, the fountain of the flaming energy of the sun.

Shi Yan wasn't sure if this massive Essence Crystal was the entire core of the Sun that had exploded. However, he could confirm that the core of this Sun Original Essence must store some principles of the beginning and ascension of the sun!

He suddenly woke up. With a bright look in his eyes, he touched the glabella on his forehead.

A flame bloomed in his palm, running into the soul altar in his head. The soul altar then spun in his Sea of Consciousness. The Star Martial Spirit's mysterious Intent Domain suddenly sparkled in the second tier of the soul altar.

A scorching flame appeared in his soul altar. In the next moment, his entire body was covered in a frightening red flame. Shi Yan closed his eyes, as his body shook.

Shi Yan's host soul swayed in the highest tier of his soul altar. It seemed to become a large mirror that reflected that massive Sun Original Essence. The flaming sunbeam of the Sun Original Essence appeared in his soul. Each beam seemed to be transforming magically, as his God Soul swiftly marked them all.

Instinctively, he sat down cross-legged, not noticing Zi Yao's changed appearance. He held his breath and concentrated, using his God Soul to be the tentacles to touch the Sun Original Essence to transfer the mysteries hidden in the crystal.

His God Soul seemed to enter a scorching space where so many flaming crystals were moving swiftly. Between the crystals were many narrow gaps. They looked like a giant formation carved by God, which stimulated the energy of the crystals. They layered up and created a natural spiritual formation, which hid certain principles of Nature.

He had tested the magical connection between his Star Upanishad in the God Soul and the Sun when he was in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. When he was in the Grace Mainland, he used to fuse the power of the sun with the Star Martial Spirit. From that time, he hadn't been able to improve the Sun power. However, today, he was going to have a big opportunity!

The Star Upanishad included all the stars in the sky. The Sun was a Solar Star, and the Moon was a Moon Star; they were all considered stars. If he wanted to advance his Star Martial Spirit, understanding the mysteries and principles of the Solar Star and Moon Star was a step he needed to take.

This Upanishad contained the vast starry sky, with all stars in the sky being his objects to study. Since the Solar Star and the Moon Star were the two most important parts of the sky, they were the critical subjects he needed to comprehend little by little.

As his God Soul was reflecting the Sun Original Essence, his Soul Consciousness had unknowingly flooded to the Essence Crystal and explored it.

The Sun Original Essence was the core power of the Sun. This fountain of energy had been there, carrying the mysteries when the Sun was born and whenever it changed. If he could get just a bit of it, he could make his understanding of the Solar energy more profound, which would level up his Star Martial Spirit the second time.

Of course, he wouldn't let this chance slip away.

His Soul Consciousness flew inside the Sun Original Essence as Shi Yan concentrated to comprehend something. He looked at so many different sized crystals moving according to the principles of heaven and earth, creating a natural formation.

The crystals were constantly releasing an enormous energy. It was just like the heart of a fire; even if the crystals were draining out, it was still scorching hot!

In the sea of crystals, he could feel the power of fire and the heat of the Sun in his consciousness. This Sun Original Essence seemed to have a magical life. It liked and hated all creatures at the same time, which was very complicated.

He forgot the fierce battle of the heaven flames and his condition. He even forgot his goals and his Star Martial Spirit.

Shi Yan stayed in the Sun Original Essence and felt its emotions, its stories. He could feel the Sun's sorrow and feelings, its contribution to the world, and all it had done for the world. This world of emotions was something ordinary people would never be able to touch.

Zi Yao's perfect body was covered in a luxurious seven-colored God Light. Her glamour was too mesmerizing for all men. She was like a Goddess descending into this mortal world, floating in her sea of God Light.

However, her eyes were sparkling with astonishment at this moment.

Looking at the Sun Original Essence slowly floating up, she stooped to see Shi Yan sitting peacefully. Her dark brows furrowed. It felt like someone had thrown a stone into the tranquil lake in her heart, causing so many ripples to be generated.

She could feel a flow of soul aura belonging to him inside the Sun Original Essence after Shi Yan sat down and closed his eyes. At that moment, Zi Yao understood that Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness had

gotten into the Sun Original Essence, which made it have his aura. He was acquiring the mysteries of the sun in the Sun Original Essence.

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes were lit up; she was blushing from astonishment.

Shi Yan had so many mysteries that she hadn't discovered yet. The more she wanted to know about him, the more mysterious she found he was.

It was like a puzzling mist was covering Shi Yan all the time. This mist was dark and thick, blanketing his soul. It seemed that no one would ever be able to touch his soul and understand everything about him.

Zi Yao had a beam of anguish in her heart. She shook her head instinctively, thinking that this man from an unknown continent would rise the high tide in the Raging Flame Star Area in the near future, or, maybe he would even stir up some earth-shaking events.

This thought had no basis at all. In her eyes, was even a little funny.

After all, as of today, Shi Yan was still a True God Realm warrior, a low-status, pathetic warrior. Generally, he couldn't make any great change in the Raging Flame Star Area.

However, she still had this thought. With his arrival, Shi Yan would make this Raging Flame Star Area turn over tremendously. He could even change the entire Raging Flame Star Area's general picture. At the same time, he could make so many experts excited or...fearful!

A scarlet flame quietly flew out from Shi Yan's pupils unknowingly.

When that flame appeared, it released a magical energy wave, as if it had a miraculous connection with the Sun Original Essence

which was floating in the sky. All of a sudden, the Sun Original Essence in the sky started to tremble.

In the next moment, the Sun Original Essence shot out the purest and scorching sunbeams, pouring them into the center of that flame.

The flame then twisted, turning into a wonderful red flame. Inside that red flame, she could see the energy fluctuations of the remnants of Volcano Crystal Nucleus.

Zi Yao was shaken. A brilliant light sparkled in her beautiful eyes as they locked at that flame. After a while, she beamed a forced smile and then cursed in a low voice. "B\*stard! Still wanna fool me? Turns out you have another heaven flame!"

Soon, she was shaken again, her eyes getting dizzy.

The Sun Original Essence sent out two other flows of energy which spun round and round.

Two beams of refined sunlight were shot to the sky and the ground. One flung to the deep place in the sky, creating the connection with the Vermilion Bird True Flame, while the other descended from the sky, not aiming at the scarlet flame but Shi Yan, entering his heart.

Princess Zi Yao exclaimed in shock. She knew that Shi Yan had entered the Sun Original Essence and gotten a little of the sun's mysteries. That was why he could draw the solar energy to nurture his body.

After being stunned for a while, Zi Yao mumbled, "Can't let you guys get all the good things..."

She touched her forehead, as her soul altar rose. The second tier of her soul altar had the rainbow-colored light. It was so beautiful that it made all the other attractive sights pale in comparison. It was her main power Upanishad: The God Light Upanishad.

A small flame was dancing in the core of the rainbow. It seemed



to have a living energy fluctuation resonating with her Soul Consciousness. It was then guided towards the Sun Original Essence hovering in the sky.

Zi Yao's God Soul distorted, continually releasing the Soul Consciousness. Gradually, a flow of pure flaming energy shot out and combined with many sunbeams that descended slowly, pouring into her rainbow-colored soul altar.

The Outer Space Upanishad had a similar effect on the heaven flames. God Light that moved unceasingly year around in outer space could eventually gain intellect as well.

Zi Yao used to collect a flow of similar God Light. Thanks to that God Light, she could comprehend the God Light Upanishad and create the soul sacrificial altar, along with the Seals of Upanishad in her God Soul.

Right now, she was using that flow of God Light to draw the blazing sunbeam to shine on her soul altar. Together with Shi Yan, the Earth Flame, and the Vermilion Bird True Flame, she was taking in the enormous power of the Sun Original Essence. This would improve her power and strengthen her soul altar.

Throwing a glance to Shi Yan sitting next to her, her beautiful eyes sparkled with a complicated thought, her lips shivering.

An idea popped up in her head.

A new 'Solar Star' was rising in the Raging Flame Star Area. Its dazzling light would outshine all other people. They would be happy with his happiness. They would be sorrowful because of his sorrows. They would be excited because of his might!

# Chapter 747: The Third Sky of True God Realm

---

## Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field...

Floating in the center of a group of massive meteorolites were around one hundred tiger shark war chariots, trying to dodge the sunbeams there.

Energy storms were moving and slaughtering everywhere. Strong, distorted energy wandered about, threatening the space pirates on the war chariots. They didn't dare to intrude, as they just stayed and waited cautiously near the edge.

Standing on the leading war chariot was Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo, glaring at the space in front of them with bloodshot eyes. Suddenly, he pointed. "Tie Lei, you guys go there and check it out.

The space pirate who was called out changed his face, shivering, and crying hoarsely. "Boss, it's the Solar Star Forbidden Area!"

"Stop your f\*cking rubbish talk!" Ka Tuo activated his God Domain. A seething energy wave flooded everywhere shortly. People in his God Domain's coverage were all shivering. "Will ya get you're a\*s there?" He glared at that space pirate.

Under his infuriated roar, the warrior named Tie Lei changed his visage dramatically. He constantly nodded with a wry smile. The man didn't say anything else, dashing towards the place.

Ka Tuo snorted, his brutal eyes sweeping through his henchmen. He suddenly got angry, but he didn't know why.

Crack Crack!

Cracking and explosion arose from the Solar Star Forbidden Area. The tiger shark war chariot Tie Lei riding was broken into pieces. Tie Lei screamed painfully as he was sitting in the chariot. His body was cut off into countless cubes, as if so many blades were

slashing him.

The onlookers all felt a shiver sent down their spines. Deep anxiety arose in their hearts. They bowed their heads, no one daring to look at Ka Tuo.

Tie Lei's death wasn't beyond their estimation. However, they were petrified because it happened too fast!

This event had proven the terrifying features of the Solar Star Forbidden Area. Indeed, it could slaughter anything. Any life would be shattered on entering this place.

Ka Tuo's eyes raked through his men again and again. No one dared to look at him. They all stooped their heads, pretending they had seen nothing.

Wearing a dark face, Ka Tuo didn't continue to push more pressure. He understood that if he continued to urge them, he would make their hearts cold.

Then, this force, which he had been struggling hard to gather, would collapse.

It wasn't something he wanted to see.

Ka Tuo waved his hand impatiently and gave a dry instruction. "Scatter and watch this area. Do not relax."

Those space pirates felt like they just got amnesty, answering their boss as they scattered quickly.

In just a blink, there was no tiger shark war chariot next to him.

A flow of living energy was sent to him from a place where the sunbeams were interlacing. However, this energy fluctuation was so cold it could chill people.

"Haven't found anything yet?" A cold, gentle, and reserved voice arose. "Ka Tuo, you've ensured me that they won't leave the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field alive. I hope you can fulfill your promise! Otherwise, I think you know what your consequences

will be!"

Ka Tuo slightly stooped his head, as a gleam of fear sparkled in his bloodshot eyes. "Don't worry! I will achieve what I've promised you. The Solar Star Forbidden Area has buried so many creatures. Any war chariot that enters that area will be ground into powder. I think they aren't an exception. Perhaps they are all dead now."

"Even if they are dead, I want to see their bodies."

"I got it. I will watch this place until I can be sure that they are all dead."

"Alright, I don't have much time to linger here. You should open your eyes wider. If you get anything, tell me immediately."

"Got it."

That living energy fluctuation faded out in the area where the sunbeams were interweaving. Eventually, it disappeared.

Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo lifted his head, looking at that place savagely while spitting. "Damn it! What kind of toy is that! If I weren't greedy for your stuff, your daddy here would flee away. F\*ck it! It's too bad this time. I haven't gotten anything but humiliation this time! F\*CK!"

Then, he left this place, approaching the edge of the Solar Star Forbidden Area. He contemplated, then released his Soul Consciousness further little by little.

After an unknown period, once he felt his Soul Consciousness was weakened, he vaguely felt a scorching aura.

Ka Tuo was shaken. He continued to gather his Soul Consciousness and push it further persistently despite his exhausted spirit and consumed Soul Consciousness.

Boom!

A tremendous vibration shot out from a deep place inside, as powerful as the explosion of the Solar Star.

Ka Tuo's flow of Soul Consciousness was cut off instantly, his face pale.

However, he wasn't dispirited. It was quite weird that he seemed to be moved. A fiendish grin hung on the corner of his mouth. "Still in there, indeed! I'll play big with you this time. I don't believe you won't get out!"

...

The entire place inside was filled with fire.

The massive chunk of Sun Original Essence was spinning in the air. The flaming power accumulated inside that crystal was divided into four parts, pouring into Shi Yan, the Earth Flame, the Vermilion Bird True Flame, and Zi Yao respectively, turning into their blazing energies.

The flaming halo moving on that Sun Original Essence was getting dimmer gradually. The burning fluid on the crystal had also lost its energy slowly, turning into ordinary drops of water, falling from the sky.

Shi Yan and Zi Yao were sitting neatly on the ground, calmly taking in the hot power.

After an unknown period of time, Zi Yao woke up first and instinctively looked at the sky.

The Sun Original Essence wasn't so blazing anymore. It turned to look more like an ordinary meteorolite that could be seen anywhere in outer space. Seemed like its energy had been drawn out completely.

The Earth Flame had enlarged to a big flame floating in front of Shi Yan. The energy of the Volcano Crystal Nucleus was rippling from him, covering him with so many layers of flaming solar energy.

He was still digesting energy!

Some weak auras came from the sky, one of them belonging to the Vermilion Bird True Flame. Due to the similar aura she had, Zi Yao could feel it now. She faced the sky, astounded for a while, then turned to Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was still motionless like a log of wood. No energy waves rippled from him. Even his aura was concealed.

However, as Zi Yao was using her Soul Consciousness to explore his soul, she could feel his soul altar moving unceasingly in a deep place in his soul.

She understood that Shi Yan was still trying to understand the solar mysteries. This magical encounter wasn't something he could simply wish for to encounter. Zi Yao was sure he would advance one step further after this event.

A triangular jade arose from her ring. She frowned while glaring at it, then muttered. "It has been half a year. Time flies so fast. I didn't recognize it has been a long time."

After that, she quieted down, taking out a Divine Crystal. Then, she closed her eyes and started to absorb the pure energy from it, together with some medicinal pellets she had. This would refill the energy she had consumed in the previous battle.

It was followed by another period of perpetual quietness.

On this day, flames sparked insanely in the sky above her head. The sky was the location of a tremendous event. Heaven flames appeared one by one, entangling and fighting against each other.

Zi Yao was surprised. She pulled herself together, frowning while looking at the sky.

Shortly, her eyes brightened. She hastened to walk to Shi Yan.

The Earth Flame had disappeared, staying silently inside Shi Yan's head. A soul energy was felt rippling from Shi Yan at this moment.

It seemed there were some filaments of soul energy that flew out of his head to support the heaven flames. Still, Shi Yan hadn't had any changes. He knitted his brows while a scorching flow of energy gushed out of his chest, which astounded Zi Yao.

"The battle's about to end," Shi Yan suddenly muttered after a long period of silence. He opened his eyes, smiling brightly at her. "You look good."

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes brightened. She smiled dazzlingly. "Not as good as you though. My wounds are all healed, but my power hasn't been filled fully. And you, you've entered the Third Sky of True God Realm. You're not far from the King God Realm, I see."

Shi Yan slowly got up, looking at the sky. "Honestly, I've got a big harvest this time. Also, this experience has helped me understand the mysteries of the stars better. Turns out that the Star Upanishad includes the entire sky. The Solar Star and the Moon Star are two kinds of Star Upanishads. The flaming energy also brought me huge benefits. The understanding I've got from the Sun will be useful for the rest of my life."

"How about the feeling of breaking through?" Zi Yao smiled. She stood up, walking her slender body for one round and revealing heart appealing posture.

With a calm and relaxed countenance, and no heated gaze on his face, Shi Yan smiled. "You are so appealing, such a beautiful disaster of this world." His face was calm and relaxed. "I know so many men of the Raging Flame Star Area would love to have you in their dreams. Being with you for days and nights like this is truly my honor. I don't know how many people would risk their lives just for a moment like this."

Zi Yao's eyes lit up, her smile unchanged. "Cut it off. Too many people have praised me, so I'm immune to it. Yeah, don't change the topic. How does it feel?"

He opened his arms, causing clusters of flaming energy to appear.

A flow of fiercely hot aura diffused from his body. Shi Yan faced the sky while laughing crazily. "Of course, not bad at all! Each time I break through a new realm, it's the time my soul altar and body are both quenched. Breaking through a new realm means rocketing my power. I think I've earned a lot this time."

"I'm sure," Zi Yao's beautiful eyes gazed at his body. "This time, you've earned more energy than normal people! Due to the excessive energy you've taken from the Sun Original Essence, you've understood how the Sun moves. This will be a big help for you in the future. I'm sure that with your condition, once you start to condense your God Body, it will be unimaginably smooth. Your God Body will be much stronger than any warrior I've known."

"Haha," Shi Yan just smiled but neither affirmed nor denied anything. He continued to look at the sky. "Almost done. My buddies will come back successfully. Oh, right, how long have we been bewildered here?"

"From the time I got fainted, it's been one and a half year. Too fast, right?"

"One and a half year? Ah, too long! Anyway, it's okay. We didn't waste this period."

"I found that even though I was a little bit unlucky going with you, I've got my share of miraculous encounters." Zi Yao smiled sincerely. "Although you are a disaster, you're also a lucky star. It depends on the point of view. Shi Yan, you must be famous in your continent, right? Otherwise, you can't have so many heaven flames like that. Tell me, how many sweethearts you've had?"

Shi Yan was astounded, looking at her with a weird face. Then, he held ten fingers in front of her face. "Too many, so I don't remember clearly. So? Do you want to be my beloved one too? Oh yeah, if you are persistent, and taking the fact that we've been through dangers together into account, I can accept you begrudgingly."



Zi Yao was stunned. She angrily glared at him, gritting her teeth.  
"A\*shole!"

"Ha ha ha!" Shi Yan laughed crazily, his laughter shooting up to the sky.

# Chapter 748: Soul Nirvana

---

Amidst his laughter, flames appeared one by one in the sky, descending slowly.

The four heaven flames staying in his soul altar, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame, the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, the Ice Cold Flame, and Corpse Vanishing Flame, appeared while flying towards him.

What appeared the last was an orange-red flame, as shy as a maiden. It looked like a bashful flaming bird, and couldn't act naturally. After the four heaven flames showed up in front of Shi Yan, it started to move towards him with great reluctance.

A toxic smile appeared on Shi Yan's face. He gazed at the flame and asked. "What's up? Still shy? Weren't you so loud and savage?"

"Harrumph! I'm the most magical creature in this world. I'm much more aristocratic than you lowly humans. If they didn't subdue me, I would never depend on you!" The Vermilion Bird True Flame talked begrudgingly. "Too bad, I didn't succeed but get tied with you. Too bad!"

This flame's intelligence was higher than the other flames. It had emotions! This surprised Shi Yan.

Anyway, he got surprised for a short while and then smiled. "Aristocratic? The aristocratic class flames like you are hiding in my soul altar. They won't leave even if I ask them to leave. If you are truly noble, you won't get here."

The Vermilion Bird True Flame seemed to be enraged. "I know you are a fair host. That's why I agreed to put my feet in your soul altar. If you insult me, I won't get in there."

"Your character is quite impressive," Shi Yan grinned, not caring about the flame's anger. "Alright, you stay right here. The Sun Original Essence is gone. After I get out, I will spread the news that

there's a heaven flame in this area. People will come and play with you then."

"B\*stard!" The Vermilion Bird True Flame thundered.

Waving his hand lazily, Shi Yan spoke impatiently. "Don't talk nonsense. I don't care if you want to stay here. Anyway, my soul altar doesn't just only one heaven flame."

"Stupid! What do you get angry for? Afraid that you will be mistreated?" The Ice Cold Flame said. "We reserved a slot for you because of the inheritance. If you met a guy like the World Extinguishing Thunder Flame, he would swallow you for sure."

"Don't babble and be proactive. When you get into the soul altar, you will know how you'll benefit." The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame was a little discontented. "Battling with you has drained our energy. We have to restore our power as fast as possible. If you aren't satisfied with your lot, harrumph, I'm not afraid of devouring you. Muahaha... You can help me ascend fast!"

Hearing that, the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame also revealed its strong desire.

The lonely Vermilion Bird True Flame was besieged by the four flames. As its energy was consumed tremendously, it became anxious. "Four on one! Don't you feel any shame?"

"Well, it's not bad. Have you seen five on one yet?" The Corpse Vanishing Flame sparkled. "We still have another one. He's in his evolution process. Otherwise, you would be over earlier."

The Vermilion Bird True Flame suddenly behaved as if it had finally accepted its destiny, keeping silent. After swaying in the air for a while, it flew towards Shi Yan's head.

"Hold on," Shi Yan held up his hand. His flickered his thought, retrieving his soul altar. "I want to make it clear first."

Zi Yao frowned, eyeing the five heaven flames. She could feel the soul fluctuations of Shi Yan and the heaven flames, but she

couldn't know what they were walking about. As she was so curious, she released more of her Soul Consciousness. But still, she got nothing.

The communication between Shi Yan and his heaven flames were conducted using their souls. Unless Shi Yan and the heaven flames agreed to open their souls to her, she would never know the contents of their conversation.

"What do you want?" Vermilion Bird True Flame put up it guard, trying to urge a beam of energy. Swaying in front of Shi Yan, it released the burning energy.

"Why are you here?" asked Shi Yan.

"I sensed the Vermilion Bird's aura, so I had crossed a lot of obstacles to get here from my hometown." The Vermilion Bird True Flame hesitated for a long time before answering reluctantly.

"What attracted you here? And, the Vermilion Bird buried here, did it die completely?"

"I came here for the Sacred Body of the Vermilion Bird, which could help me advance further. However, when I arrived here, I found that his Sacred Body had no energy left. I couldn't fuse with him. I hid the Sun Original Essence under the Vermilion Bird's skeleton in the hope that his Sacred Body could gain the energy from the crystal. But, it was of no use."

"You ascended after you got here?"

"One level. The condition here is suitable for me. Also, I could use the Sun Original Essence to increase my power. If I could have the Vermilion Bird's Sacred Body, I could become the Vermilion Bird and replace him. At that time, my living form would be more complete."

"Aren't you him?"

"I used to be., but not anymore. At the moment I gained my consciousness, my way became different from his. I don't want to

become a part of his soul. I want to make efforts for myself. I want to live for me, not for him. Moreover, he has died already."

"Died already?"

"To existences like him, it's hard to die completely. He destroyed all the attackers, created the forbidden area in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, and built a tremendous energy restriction to protect his skeleton from people's discovery."

"Why?"

"Because when his soul scattered, it divided into several flows. No one knows which space they've gone to. However, any creature who could have the remnants of his soul could understand the power of the Vermilion Bird. One day, if it could reach a certain level, it could be reborn. As long as he could get his skeleton, he would be reborn using a different method."

Shi Yan knitted his brows tightly in surprise.

"At the level of the Sacred Beast Vermilion Bird, the soul would never be completely destroyed. At the moment it exploded, it would divide into so many flows of remnant souls, wandering in different spaces. If a creature captured one of those flows, it could always evolve and get stronger. After that, the sacred bird would gain a new life one more time. If he could get his skeleton, when he was reborn, he would be himself once again. Perhaps, he could recover his full energy. Moreover, he could advance one more step to understand the mysteries of earth and heaven deeper."

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame sent its thought. It seemed this flame had some knowledge of creatures in the Immemorial Epoch. Shi Yan was dumbstruck. He felt fear as he was shaken by the might of the creatures in the Immemorial Epoch.

"Oh right, the little girl you've met in the Perpetual Night Forest, the one called Zuo Shi, if nothing unexpected happens, she

certainly has a soul remnant of the Sacred Beast Black Tortoise. If she can continue to progress and get stronger, she can become the Sacred Beast Black Tortoise one day. Perhaps, she will be stronger than the Black Tortoise himself!" The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame suddenly recalled something. It pondered for a while and then continued.

Shi Yan was shaken, shouting. "Why didn't you tell me earlier?"

"I know it from the talk with the Vermilion Bird True Flame. This method of rebirth is called the Soul Nirvana of the sacred beast," said the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame.

Shi Yan's eyes sparkled with light in astonishment. He got dumbstruck for a while, then finally understood why Old Xuan Ming wanted to take care of Zuo Shi. For Zuo Shi's welfare, he had done his best.

Xuan Ming was the descendant of that bloodline. The Sacred Beast Black Tortoise was his ancestor. As Zuo Shi had a flow of his ancestor's soul remnant, she could be considered his ancestor. As he had put forth everything to help her, did he know the Soul Nirvana technique which he would use Zuo Shi to make the Sacred Beast Black Tortoise be reborn?

Before Sacred Beast Black Tortoise left the Grace Mainland, it was one of the strongest existences. Like the Vermilion Bird, why did he have to experience the Soul Nirvana?

Did they encounter a more intimidating existence?

Shi Yan sighed with inexplicable emotion. Suddenly, he had a respect and fear for the unpredictable mysteries of outer space.

There were so many experts in outer space. Although he'd reached the Third Sky of True God Realm, it wasn't enough to counter anything. As his thought flickered, his eyes sparkled with amazement.

He suddenly walked to the Vermilion Bird's skeleton. He knocked

the bones, turning to Zi Yao while smiling. "Do you have any way to bring the Vermilion Bird's skeleton with us?"

"What do you want to do?" Zi Yao was surprised.

"Make weapons!" Shi Yan was excited, gesturing. "This bird should have a profound realm. If we can make weapons using its bones, they will be Divine weapons! I've lost my three Bone Thorns. Perhaps, I can use this skeleton to create a better weapon."

"No!" Vermilion Bird True Flame suddenly screamed, its soul sounding sorrowful. "That's my body! My body! You can't break it! Absolutely, you must not break it!"

"Didn't you say that you and he are totally different?" Shi Yan glared at the flame. "The Vermilion Bird is dead. Leaving the skeleton here is just a waste of good materials. I'd better take it."

"No! If you do that, I will risk my life against you! Even if I have to die completely, I will stop you!" the Vermilion Bird True Flame cried loudly. "Leave the skeleton. One day, he can have a new life and mightier power. Even if I'm not him, I don't want him to vanish completely. Agree with me. If you give up this skeleton, I will follow you honestly. I will never resist!"

Pausing for a while, the Vermilion Bird True Flame desperately begged him. "Please, show mercy. I've been in outer space for so many years. I know some places with similarly mighty skeletons. I promise you, I will definitely find them for you! I'm sure!"

Rubbing his chin, Shi Yan contemplated for a while. Eventually, he gave up his intentions, then nodded and talked to the flame. "Forget it! As we will stay together for a long time and you've begged me that much, I'll give you face."

The Vermilion Bird True Flame sighed in relief. This time, it wasn't arrogant or stubborn. The flame flew into his Sea of Consciousness without waiting for Shi Yan to urge it.

Shi Yan didn't continue to trouble the flame either. He smiled,

then opened his soul altar, letting the five heaven flames enter.

Shi Yan sensed for a while and felt like his soul getting sublimated. A flow of warm and cozy energy flooded his entire body as he smiled happily. "I think we should leave."

Zi Yao nodded, scanning the area with a little yearning in her eyes. "Yeah, it's time to go. Although this place is barren and isolated, I will never forget it."

"Let's go." Shi Yan shouted, soaring into the sky and heading to the thick, gray clouds.

Zi Yao followed him as she smiled charmingly and swayed her appealing body. Just like a deity returning home, she looked indescribably beautiful.



# Chapter 749: Chaos Upanishad

---

Layers of thick, dark clouds had created a magical, heavenly barrier. The gravity increased dozens of times. The closer they got to the sky, the stronger the gravity became.

Zi Yao's power had been recovered well, so it was easy for her to get through the clouds using her God Domain. However, it was tough for Shi Yan. Every step he made to move in the sky had consumed a lot of energy.

At this moment, Vermilion Bird True Flame in his soul altar suddenly emitted a magical energy wave. That energy wave contacted the thick clouds in the sky. In the next moment, the tremendous gravity that covered the entire place was reduced by several times.

Shi Yan soared up to the sky even faster than Zi Yao. When he got to outer space, a magical vortex appeared atop his head. It was the vortex that had dragged him into that bleak land.

The Vermilion Bird True Flame flew out. Right when it fell into the eye of the vortex, the latter stopped moving. It didn't generate a strong suction force anymore.

As the flame and the Vermilion Bird used to be one, it was familiar with the barriers and restrictions the bird had set up. Under the flame's power, all the energy barriers and vortexes ceased.

Shi Yan could fly smoothly out of the eye of the vortex. Shortly, he appeared in the forbidden area of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. He didn't hasten to leave as he hovered and waited in the sky. Slowly, Zi Yao appeared and flew towards him, floating shoulder to shoulder with him.

Energy vortexes and storms screamed around them. However, the Vermilion Bird True Flame had made them all cease, unable to

move around and wreak havoc anymore.

That was why they didn't meet any obstacles on the way out of the land. With the Vermilion Bird True Flame's aid, they got out of the Solar Star Forbidden Area, flying between the burning meteorolites.

Those burning meteorolites were the pieces of the sun after it exploded. They still had a little bit of the Sun Original Essence. However, due to absorbing so many pieces of chipped rock and debris in outer space, the energy had been polluted. Shi Yan couldn't absorb this dirty energy. He could only use the Star Upanishad to create a feeble contact with them.

However, even though this connect was feeble, it was enough for him as long as it could bring him support when he was in need.

"Be careful!" Zi Yao tenderly called him. Her face became cold immediately. "Ka Tuo's still here."

Shi Yan frowned, instinctively releasing his Soul Consciousness. Flows of Soul Consciousness scattered, pouring into the burning meteorolites around them.

Meteorolites connected to him moved slowly, congregating towards him.

Tiger shark war chariots appeared from different corners. Ka Tuo with his shiny bald head was standing on the leading chariot. He couldn't hold his laughter. "You two have finally come out. I knew it. It's impossible to hide in there for a long time."

"So wise, my Boss!" Many space pirates faced the sky and laughed out loud. They were all excited thinking that their wait wasn't wasted.

"Ka Tuo, you're a haunting ghost that never vanishes." Zi Yao spoke with a dark face and a pair of cold eyes. "What is it that the other has promised you which makes you wait here for so long? Ka Tuo, why do you suddenly have plenty of time like that?"

"Your Highness, you've become smarter. I like you even more." Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo's grin seemed to last forever. "Oh yeah, the benefit the other has promised me is something I can hardly deny. Otherwise, I wouldn't need to keep my eye on you guys. I hope you would be smarter. Your amethyst war chariot is broken, so you can't escape today. You should be honest and follow me. As long as you can satisfy me, muahaha, perhaps I will keep you alive."

"If you dare to keep me alive, the other will kill you. Ka Tuo, making up such a thing in front of me, don't you feel it's too boring?" Zi Yao snorted, looking here and there. "I think you guys better leave earlier. Or else, you will regret taking this business."

"Ha ha ha!" Ka Tuo laughed crazily. "Your Highness, you're too innocent. If I dare to walk on this way, I have never thought that I can die naturally. If I can live one day, I want to earn more for that day. To me, even if my fate is set, I will strongly resist and find a way to survive."

Pausing for a while, Ka Tuo shouted, "Kill them! Whoever dares to show them mercy, Daddy will bury him altogether!"

After he finished, the crowd of space pirates became crazy, wildly storming forward.

Zi Yao didn't talk more, releasing her God Domain, her eyes turning serious. Seven-colored rainbow bloomed from her soft body, covering the whole area.

Shi Yan stood firmly. Suddenly, he grinned while talking to her. "Just pay attention to Ka Tuo. Leave the rest to me."

"You?" Zi Yao was stunned as her beautiful eyes gazed at him. "Are you sure? Although you've reached the Third Sky of True God Realm, do you think that you can gain the upper hand against King God Realm warriors?"

"If we don't try, we won't know," Shi Yan smiled, "Your

Highness, have you ever heard about a method called 'Four ounces yield one thousand catties'?"

"Never," Zi Yao shook her head.

"Then, I'll show you."

Shi Yan stopped smiling. He gathered himself together, touching his forehead. Scorching flames diffused from him like countless rapid meteors dashing towards the burning meteorolites around him.

Instantly, the flaming meteorolites were revived, turning into fireballs, flying and colliding everywhere. They rumblingly rushed towards the space pirates.

Each burning meteorolite was extremely massive. Some of them still had bits of the Sun Original Essence. After absorbing numerous pieces of rock and debris, they became quite intimidating, moving in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field.

Burning meteorolites moved by some principles of Nature. With the vivid red hue, they looked like dancing red lanterns, furiously attacking the space pirates.

Ka Tuo's subordinates pitched their voices and cursed. Once the flaming meteorolites collided with them, the flaming fluid on the menacing meteorolite would splash on them. They cried painfully while smoke fumed and sizzled on their God Bodies.

Floating quietly in the cold outer space, Shi Yan wore a cold, dark face. Flows of pure flaming solar energy shot out rapidly between his fingers, creating the connection with the meteorolites around him.

It seemed like invisible gossamers were connecting his fingers and the meteorolites, which could manipulate the massive, burning rock to stir and wreak havoc in the middle of the crowd of pirates.

Many pirates at the True God Realm, who hadn't gained a God

Body yet, and had a realm that wasn't profound enough, had to spit out blood when the meteorolites hit them. Their blood was then burned into ashes by the flaming fluid, as their living aura vanished shortly.

Only warriors at the King God Realm could dodge in distress. When the flaming fluid touched them, they could resist for a while, using their tough God Bodies.

Shi Yan had used the power of only one warrior and the unique situation of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field to manipulate the flaming meteorolites by his Star Martial Spirit, creating a magical sea of meteorolites, which torrentially crushed the space pirates.

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes sparkled as she looked at him deeply. After a long moment, she smiled. "Turns out it's what you call 'four ounces yield one thousand catties.' I can understand it now. As you've comprehended the Sun Upanishad, you used the energy taken from the Sun Original Essence to connect with the meteorolites. You're excellent! I didn't misjudge you."

Under Shi Yan's soul control, the meteorolite sea was unbreakable. A part of the pirate group was killed by the flaming meteorolites, while the other King God Realm warriors were flying around like flies. They couldn't pose a threat to Shi Yan.

His defense seemed to be indestructible.

Zi Yao could ease her mind. As she took a deep breath, the God Light twirled and expanded gradually from her body. A burning flame also extended from her God Domain. Added with her Soul Consciousness, this wisp of flame vaguely locked Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo.

Ka Tuo wore a savage countenance. He had released his God Domain for a long time. Remnants of energies, debris, and pieces of corpses were dragged into his God Domain while chaotic energy fluctuations appeared.

A chaotic aura emitted from Ka Tuo's God Body in the middle of his God Domain. His eyes became bloodshot. He roared as he was ready to storm forward.

Shi Yan's eyes shrank. He became tense and cautious.

However, right at this moment, a rainbow light sparked on his Blood Vein Ring. It flashed then disappeared, as if it had intruded Ka Tuo's God Domain.

The rainbow was like a small rope, taking a walk inside Ka Tuo's God Domain as if it were surveying something. A moment later, a feeble thought was sent to Shi Yan from the ring. "It's the Upanishad inherited from Ge Lu. Subdue him and make him your first Cortège. His Upanishad isn't pure enough. Detour... I'm going to impart you the earlier period of Ge Lu's Upanishad. You should entice him and make him follow you."

The aura of the Ring Spirit in the Blood Vein Ring was too feeble. If Shi Yan weren't cautious, he couldn't have felt it.

"Who is Ge Lu?" Shi Yan was surprised. He hastened to send his thought to the ring. "How are you? How have you restored?"

"It's tough to recover. I can only send you a bit of consciousness. Every time I talk to you, I have to consume energy. Don't talk about the irrelevant topics. I will impart you Ge Lu's Upanishad inheritance. Use it to entice him, and make him follow you. This inherited Upanishad can help him get back on the right path. However, if he wants to break through to the Original God Realm, I need to adjust the power one more time. Imparting the Upanishad to you will harm me. I will be quiet for a long time. Be careful. Don't let the others kill you."

A thought of the Ring Spirit flashed. In the next moment, a magical soul fluctuation flew directly to Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness. "Ge Lu is one of the Bloodthirsty's Cortège of Eight. Chaos Upanishad is his main Upanishad. Use your negative energy to cover it and hand it to the other..."

Imparting Unpanishad seemed to consume a lot of energy. The Ring Spirit's aura became weaker and weaker. Even though it hadn't explained clearly, it disappeared. Shi Yan couldn't sense it again, no matter how hard he tried.

Shi Yan was startled. He didn't have the time to think more, urging the negative energy in his acupuncture points and guiding it to his Sea of Consciousness. He had to use the negative energy to cover that flow of soul fluctuation to preserve it.

That flow of soul fluctuation seemed to have the aura of a magical Upanishad. It was like a strange soul sacrificial altar. After the negative energy had covered it, looked like it had a veil that made Shi Yan unable to see things clearly.

One of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight... Chaos Upanishad...

Thoughts appeared one by one in his head. Shi Yan was dumbstruck. Shortly, he seemed to get something as his eyes lit up.

# Chapter 750: Call me senior!

---

Shi Yan suddenly turned around and shouted to Zi Yao. "You should leave first. I will catch up with you later. I will make all the burning meteorolites explode. It will create a formidable shockwave. Except for me who understands the Sun Upanishad, all people here will be affected. You will not be an exception."

Zi Yao was frightened. "You want to fight face to face with Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo? Impossible! You will never be able to hurt him!"

"I know. He's at the Third Sky of King God Realm. I'm a whole realm behind him. I know I'm not his rival." Shi Yan didn't have the mood to joke. "I will stop him for a while and show him how dangerous I am. Once the shockwave's over, you can return and help me. But, you have to leave now!"

Zi Yao's eyes were complicated. She looked at him deeply in astonishment for seconds. Then, she nodded. "Shi Yan, promise me that you'll be safe. I don't want anything unexpected to happen to you. Really, I want you to be safe."

Shi Yan smiled and said, "Move. I'll be alright. Give me more time. Perhaps... I can bring you a big surprise."

Zi Yao exhaled. "Alright, I will leave. Be careful."

She wasn't an indecisive woman. As she was able to hold a high position of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, the generation with the most outstanding fame that her nimbus could subdue many princes, it was enough to prove her competency and characteristics.

Zi Yao retreated, turning into a flow of seven-colored light. Shortly, she had moved pretty far away.

At this moment, the other space pirates didn't dare to approach. Only Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo was still storming towards Shi



Yan like crazy with his God Domain. He wanted to kill Shi Yan and then chase after Zi Yao.

Seeing Ka Tuo stride angrily and get closer to him, Shi Yan had so many thoughts moving in his head. He was discreetly nervous, as he didn't know if what the Ring Spirit had told him was true or not. Would he be able to wake Ka Tuo up using the Upanishad inheritance?

Gradually, Ka Tuo was only one thousand meters away from him.

Shi Yan's thought flickered, and countless flaming meteorolites abruptly congregated around him. Shortly, the area around him was filled with flaming meteorolites, blocking Shi Yan and Ka Tuo in the middle. The others couldn't see them right now.

Ka Tuo's God Domain was special. It didn't seem to be weakened by the tremendous impacts of the burning meteorolites. Moreover, the fragments of meteorolites were dragged into his God Domain, becoming a beam of scattered energy Ka Tuo could use, which boosted his aura formidably.

"Kid, my God Domain's the most special one in the Raging Flame Star Area. Do you think you can stop me?" Ka Tuo roared indignantly with a pair of blood-red eyes. His aura was both brutal and savage, that sent shivers down to people's spines.

"Ka Tuo, the power Upanishad you've been cultivating has diverged from the right path. The inheritance you got isn't complete. Your inheritance is called 'Chaos Upanishad,' do you know that?" Shi Yan calmly looked at him and then smiled. "I asked Zi Yao to leave and kept your people away so that we can talk."

Ka Tuo discolored as if he had seen a ghost, looking at Shi Yan with fright. "What did you just say? Repeat it. What's my Upanishad called? Repeat it!"

"Chaos Upanishad," Shi Yan repeated faintly.

Ka Tuo's eyes sparkled disbelievingly. His savage aura silently reduced as he still maintained a certain distance with Shi Yan. He shivered in thrill. "You... How did you know the name of my Upanishad? Who are you? How are you related to that man?"

Shi Yan was dumbstruck. However, he felt cheered up. "Ka Tuo, the power Upanishad you've been cultivating is related to me. If you are cultivating the Upanishad you received from him, we are going on the same way. Relax, then we'll talk."

Ka Tuo was still shaking. His eyes were filled with extreme surprise and fear. "My Upanishad has never appeared in the Raging Flame Star Area. How did you know about it? I took this Upanishad from the Lonesome Dead Territory outside the Raging Flame Star Area. Have you ever been there? How did you know!"

His mood wasn't calm, as if he had encountered a frightening surprise. His voice became louder.

"Quiet down," Shi Yan frowned and snorted.

Ka Tuo was startled. He had to adjust his breath to calm down. A long time later, a strange light sparkled in his eyes, looking at Shi Yan with a great surprise. "Who are you? Where are you from?"

"Whenever you urge your Upanishad, your eyes will turn blood-red, right?" An idea popped up in his head. Shi Yan asked the other all of a sudden.

Ka Tuo was shaken and became more frightened. "You also know that?"

Shi Yan curled his lips and urged his Rampage. His eyes immediately changed to the fearful blood-red hue.

Ka Tuo was dumbstruck, and his boiling mood settled down. He looked at Shi Yan deeply and then nodded. "Perhaps, you and I share the same root. However, I'm not that man's disciple. I just got his inheritance. He was dead a long time ago, so my inheritance isn't complete."

When he was still young, he was just a Sky Realm space pirate. He had followed his boss to run to the Lonesome Dead Territory outside the Raging Flame Star Area, where he had a fortunate encounter.

A strange force had guided him to a mysterious and bizarre area. He found a decayed skeleton there. This skeleton was so old that its soul altar had just a beam of faint light, with a thought of a broken Upanishad.

He then merged that broken thought of Upanishad into his soul and put forth everything to study. It took him a lot of time to understand the mysteries of the Upanishad. However, this Upanishad had never appeared in the Raging Flame Star Area before.

Although this Upanishad was incomplete, he took this chance and made it his main power to cultivate to the True God Realm. Also, he had created the Seal of Upanishad to continue advancing his realm.

It'd been so many years. He had used this incomplete Upanishad to shine in the Raging Flame Star Area and replace his Boss, becoming the new leader of the space pirates.

Although it was a broken Upanishad, he had treasured it a lot. Through many years of learning and comprehending, he had found that this Upanishad was so profound that it was almost one of the most dangerous powers Upanishad in the universe. It was even more advanced and exquisite than the powers Upanishad of the other leaders in the Raging Flame Star Area.

This was Ka Tuo's biggest secret, which he had never revealed to anyone. This power Upanishad had made him a leader from a low pirate, giving him his today's attainments.

However, as his realm had become more profound, the incomplete features of the power Upanishad became clearer. Gradually, it had affected his mentality and soul. Everything was

getting chaotic.

He became worried. Up till recently, he had been looking for a solution. However, since it was a power Upanishad that had never existed in the Raging Flame Star Area, no matter how hard he had searched, he couldn't find the way out.

As he had entered the Third Sky of King God Realm, the incomplete power Upanishad would trouble him a lot when he entered the Original God Realm. His soul altar could be shattered while he was breaking through his new realm!

As he knew it would be dangerous, he didn't dare to break through or dig deeper about his Upanishad.

"Your power Upanishad isn't complete. Also, you've diverged. If you can't have a complete Upanishad, you will never be able to break through the Original God Realm. You shouldn't go against the Nature's Order, which will destroy your soul." Shi Yan looked at him, suddenly beamed a smile. "However, if you can have a complete Upanishad after you enter the new realm, you will be one of the small number of strongest warriors of the Raging Flame Star Area. If you and the others have the same realm, you can trounce them easily. You don't know how lucky you are. Encountering me is the luckiest event in your whole life."

Shi Yan talked as if he were a hoax medium, guiding the other step by step. He threatened and then showed the big benefits to entice the other.

Looking at Ka Tuo's visage, Shi Yan believed that he wouldn't pose any threat to him anymore, since he had something Ka Tuo couldn't resist.

"Who was he? Who are you?" Ka Tuo's breath became short and heavy. He panted, trying to calm down.

Since he had cultivated this broken Upanishad for so many years, he knew the formidable features of this Upanishad more than

anyone else. He believed that the complete version of this Upanishad would be the most fearful thing in the Raging Flame Star Area. He craved for it! This heated thought filled his brain, burning his rationality.

"He's my precursor. I'm the apprentice of one line. The Upanishad you've been cultivating, I have the complete one," Shi Yan said smilingly.

Ka Tuo suddenly grinned fiendishly. "Then, it's good. If I kill you, I'll get the complete Upanishad. When I use it and break through to the Original God Realm, I will fear no one in this Raging Flame Star Area. Hahaha!"

"You think it's that simple?" Shi Yan soon knew how this sort of people worked. "If you could kill me to get what you want, would I stay here and babble with you?"

Pausing for a while, Shi Yan continued deliberately. "Sorry, mate. Even if you kill me, you can't have the complete inheritance. Because... it stays in my Sea of Consciousness. If I die, it will vanish. Only my energy could preserve it."

Ka Tuo mused. He also knew it wouldn't be simple. He said that just to see Shi Yan's reaction. If Shi Yan showed he was scared, he could do that. If Shi Yan didn't react, it meant the other wasn't afraid of him or losing his life.

He observed for a while and made a new assumption immediately. Ka Tuo took a deep breath to steady his mind. "Kid, what do you want?"

"Please call me senior. My status is higher than yours," Shi Yan naturally fabricated.

Ka Tuo's face reddened, looking enraged. However, to get the complete inheritance, he had to press it down. With a husky voice, he called, "Senior."

"Alright. Since you've cultivated his Upanishad, we are from the

same school. Killing and fighting have violated our rules." Shi Yan grinned. "Alright, I don't want to do anything to you. We're from the same house. You called me senior, which has proven our root. It's normal if I give you a gift for our first encounter."

Then, his thought flickered, using negative energy to cover the magical Upanishad, sending it towards Ka Tuo. "It will help you get back on the right track and prevent you from falling into bedevilment. However, before you break through the Original God Realm, you have to find me. Or else, you will meet a lot of troubles."

Ka Tuo was shivering in thrill as his eyes brightened. His gaze was even hotter when he saw Princess Zi Yao. Looking at the inherited Upanishad, he hated that he couldn't swallow it right away.

# Chapter 751: Repel the enemy!

---

The Upanishad inheritance shot out of Shi Yan's Sea of Consciousness, slowly floating towards Ka Tuo. Ka Tuo's eyes were so hot, yet he was a little bit hesitant as well. Eventually, he released his soul altar.

His soul altar covered the Upanishad.

Shi Yan's negative energy covering the inheritance vanished immediately right when the Upanishad merged into the power Upanishad tier of Ka Tuo's soul altar, becoming part of his soul altar.

Chaotic energy fluctuations twirled around Ka Tuo. His body shook vehemently while he was sensing the Upanishad, adding it into his soul altar and making it his unique Seal of Upanishad.

Shi Yan let out light laughter. The way he looked at Ka Tuo didn't have any evil intention.

When adding the power Upanishad, the warrior would need to release his soul altar and condense his soul, spirit, and thought into one. He shouldn't let any external force disturb him during the whole process.

At this moment, if Shi Yan struck a fatal strike, even if Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo had reached the Third Sky of King God Realm, he would receive severe wounds.

As long as he wanted to attack Ka Tuo, even if Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo could survive, he would be hurt badly. Perhaps he would never have the chance to enter the Original God Realm for the rest of his life.

But Shi Yan didn't want to attack Ka Tuo.

To him, the Blood Vein Ring still concealed a big secret that he had just entered the threshold of. It would take a long time to open it fully.

Ka Tuo received the inheritance of the Chaos Upanishad by Ge Lu, one of Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight.

As Ge Lu was one member of the Bloodthirsty's Cortege of Eight, he must be a powerful expert. Shi Yan was scared thinking how this almost-invincible existence died.

Since Ge Lu was related to that man, perhaps he would become a sharp weapon in Shi Yan's hand.

Of course, he would never destroy his weapon.

Shortly, Ka Tuo seemed to finish adding the Upanishad into his soul altar. His soul altar swayed slightly, then returned to his Sea of Consciousness, the energy fountain of his soul.

At this moment, Ka Tuo opened his eyes, taking a deep breath. An extreme joy bloomed in his heart as he looked at Shi Yan with great astonishment. "You just gave me the inheritance like that? No conditions?"

Shi Yan grinned, "My brother, we're from the same school, so I won't harm you. This inheritance belongs to you. If you get it, you should continue to cultivate. I can relax now. If you please, just tell me who asked you to attack me... And, don't chase us furthermore. Is it okay?"

Ka Tuo didn't answer immediately. He pondered for a while and then suddenly asked. "Senior, why do you only have the True God Realm cultivation base?"

"I'm too young. Although I was enrolled earlier, my cultivation time hasn't been long enough." Shi Yan continued to fabricate his story. "As you call me your senior, we're considered classmates. When you've entered the Original God Realm, I will tell you things related to us."

"How about you and I join hand to capture Zi Yao. I have always dreamt of having her. Anyway, if brother wants her, as your junior, I can give up what I want." A cunning gleam sparkled in Ka



Tuo's eyes. "If we capture Zi Yao, I can receive big benefits. Don't you think it's better to go with me than with that little girl? Although we don't have a good reputation for being space pirates, we don't have any restrictions. We can do whatever we want. How free is that! What do you think?"

"Pirates?" Shi Yan was surprised. Then, he shook his head smilingly. "Always hiding to West or East, it's not what I want. I don't care if you want to be a space pirate, but I won't do that. I have my goals. I have stuff I have to get done. Your crew has enough members, so I won't be one of you."

Ka Tuo frowned while contemplating.

"You should hurry to adjust your Upanishad, getting it back on the right track. So, I suggest you be content with your lot, quiet down, and find a place where people can't find you to solve your problem first," Shi Yan smiled. "If you don't want to talk more, I won't force you. We will talk later. Once you strengthen your realm and feel you want to break through to the Original God Realm, remember to find me. We will talk at that time."

Then, Shi Yan seemed not to want to talk more. He turned around and left.

Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo looked at him with astonishment. Seeing him about to leave, with Shi Yan having flown out already, he shouted in a low tone. "Wait a minute!"

Shi Yan turned his back, looking at him smilingly.

"The ones who hired me included Miss Bi Rou of the Underworld League and Sura of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation." Ka Tuo snorted. "It's to repay your favor, Senior. My business is done here. I will leave right away. Brother, be careful. Sura's attack won't end here. Even if we leave, he will continue."

"Sura?" Shi Yan was surprised, "Who's he?"

"Haha, Princess Zi Yao surely knows him. Tell her and she will

know who wants to kill her." Ka Tuo pondered for a while and then continued, "That Princess isn't a good person. Brother, be careful. Don't give her a chance to kill you. Many strong experts in the Raging Flame Star Area follow her because of her beauty. However, most of them don't have a nice ending. You should take care of yourself."

Shi Yan nodded and smiled. "Thank you for your reminder. Ah, by the way, what should I do if I want to contact you?"

Ka Tuo hesitated for a while and then took out a blue-sky crystal from his ring. That crystal was carved with a magical formation and a beam of moving Chaos energy.

"I made it myself. When you want to find me, give it to a guy named Ka Fu in the Land of God Punishment. He's my brother." Ka Tuo threw him the stone. "But, you'd better not let the others see it. Don't bring trouble to me."

"The Land of God Punishment? Where is it?" Shi Yan was surprised.

"Ask Princess Zi Yao. She must know about it." Ka Tuo didn't talk more. He turned around and left, as if he was hastening to reconcile his new Upanishad.

Shortly, Ka Tuo disappeared. Shi Yan scattered the burning meteorolites. Not long afterward, he saw the tiger shark war chariots disappear one by one.

Ka Tuo was a man who repaid favor. He left a tiger shark war chariot there for Shi Yan.

Shi Yan pondered for a while, flying out of the circle made of flaming meteorolites towards the tiger shark chariot. He found that the spiritual station inside the chariot and all barriers and restrictions had been deactivated. Shi Yan poured a flow of Soul Consciousness into the chariot, which moved immediately, gliding through the meteorolites towards Zi Yao.

A massive meteorolite shielded a place in the gathering spot of sunbeams. It was where Zi Yao was waiting for him silently. She looked like a fire fairy with rainbow light twirling around her.

She was worriedly folding and then unfolding her fingers. Flows of seven-colored Divine Light shot out of her fingertips. Just like small snakes, they wound around her hand.

Staying with Shi Yan through this period had calmed down her seething mind. She had temporarily forgotten the wicked competition of the royal family. She felt relaxed, as if she had thrown all the burdens away.

This experience would be something she would never forget for the rest of her life. She treasured it. And, Shi Yan was a flame in this memory of hers, which she had imprinted in her mind, and nothing could erase it.

Waiting with worries for a long moment, Zi Yao became impatient. Seeing the meteorolites not exploding, she couldn't help herself but fly out of the sunbeams' congregating area, turning around to look for Shi Yan.

A moment later, she found a tiger shark war chariot. Zi Yao discolored, gathering energy to prepare for her attacks.

"Are you going back there for me?" A generous laughter arose from the war chariot from a sunbeam gathering area far from her. "Seems like Your Highness misses me a lot. Yeah, I'm honored. I suddenly feel excited. Perhaps, that's why I could burst out my divine power and defeat Ka Tuo's gang."

Shi Yan shouted. The tiger shark war chariot glided faster through the thick-woven sunbeams and approached Zi Yao shortly.

Zi Yao's enchanting face looked like a blooming flower. She smiled tenderly, waiting inside the bunch of sunbeams. Seven-colored God Light twirled around her soft body as her beautiful

eyes glistened. "It's true. I was really worried about you. But, it seems I overthought. Tell me, why didn't Ka Tuo's gang chase after you?"

The sea in her heart seethed. It wasn't as calm as she was showing on her face. Releasing the Soul Consciousness, she didn't find anyone, which made her seriously curious.

Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo's name was famous in the Raging Flame Star Area. He was the most ruthless slaughterer, and his hands always had blood stains. It was not easy to make this man give up his targets. As long as he hadn't died, he would never give way to his targets.

Zi Yao was astounded knowing that the slaughterer didn't come after them. She didn't know what had happened back there.

"Ka Tuo won't show up anymore. He has retreated from the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. He gave us this tiger shark war chariot." Shi Yan smiled, waving at Zi Yao to ask her to get in the war chariot.

Zi Yao hesitated for a while, as if she were afraid of something. Then, she slowly got into the chariot. "Have you cooperated with Ka Tuo to deal with me? Would you sell me then?"

"Ka Tuo had proposed the same, indeed," Shi Yan looked at her deeply. Suddenly, he smiled.

Zi Yao discolored.

"I denied him. Haha... Pardon me, but I can't tell you the details, and I hope you won't ask about it." While frowning, Shi Yan said seriously, "Ka Tuo and I share the same origin. I hope that you won't pursue him after we get out of here. At this moment, I can't disclose much. I hope you believe me. I don't mean harm to you."

Princess Zi Yao's eyes sparkled as she scrutinized him without blinking. Long afterward, she nodded gently. "Alright, I won't press you. Quite the contrary, I feel better that you don't tell me

the details. If you had told me a broken lie, I would have thought that you did cooperate with Ka Tuo to harm me."

"Bi Rou of the Underworld League has promised big profits to Ka Tuo," smiled Shi Yan.

"That b\*tch!" Zi Yao gritted her teeth.

"And, there's another one," Shi Yan paused for a while, his face odd. "He's from your Dark Firmament Divine Nation. Ka Tuo said that he's called Sura. Do you know him?"

Zi Yao's face changed dramatically as her soft body shivered. Cold light shot out from her eyes. "This man, indeed!"

"Who?"

"Prince Du Jie, my brother from another mother. Sura's the Captain of his Bodyguards!"

# Chapter 752: Dirck

---

Dark competition in the royal family was the dirtiest and most ruthless in the world. For the throne, brothers could kill brothers or even the father. It was not a rare thing to expect.

Du Jia and Zi Yao had the same father but different mothers. To get the crown of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, Du Jie wanted to kill Zi Yao and her blood brother, which wasn't hard to understand.

After Princess Zi Yao named Prince Du Jie, her mood was down. Along the way back, she was silent, and her smile wasn't as bright as before.

Shi Yan understood her mood. He knew it was hard to give any advice in this field. So, he didn't try to say anything in vain.

Zi Yao told him what the Land of God Punishment was. It was the area at the edge of the Raging Flame Star Area, which was obnubilated by thick mist year round. This land had so many forbidden areas that even an Original God Realm expert couldn't use his Soul Consciousness to survey.

Many space pirates would seclude in those lands to avoid the enemies.

The Land of God Punishment was situated in the center of the forbidden areas. A crowd of pirates, marauders, and evildoers that the other forces didn't want to accept dwelled there, along with brutal slaughterers and the madmen of the Raging Flame Star Area.

No one would show mercy while talking about that area. Also, it was a strange but rich trading area. Many goods the pirates and marauders got would be put up for transactions there. Rare cultivating materials that couldn't be found in the Raging Flame Star Area would perhaps appear in that land.

The Land of God Punishment was full of fights. They fought daily. Weak warriors couldn't survive there. People were killed every day, and all of their belongings would be snatched away.

When Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo, the leader of the pirates, operated in another area of the Raging Flame Star Area, if the enemies laid their eyes on him, he would be chased until they could kill him.

But, it would be different in the Land of God Punishment. This place had so many forbidden areas. If he evaluated that he couldn't resist the enemies, he just needed to hide in a forbidden area and seize some time to recover.

Madmen, slaughterers, pirates, and murderers with many death sentences, often visited the Land of God Punishment. They would trade many goods and materials, creating a strange but rich land.

This area hadn't been governed. Forces in the Raging Flame Star Area used to attack this place in an attempt to clean it. However, they hadn't succeeded.

After what Princess Zi Yao told him, Shi Yan quieted down as he finally knew the location of the Land of God Punishment. If it were not necessary, he wouldn't need to visit that land.

Even if he wanted to go, it shouldn't be with his current realm. When he felt he could protect himself well enough, he would go there and find Ka Tuo, asking him to do something in his favor.

Zi Yao seemed to have another goal. The tiger shark war chariot slowed down as she knew Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo wouldn't come for them anymore. She identified the direction, then drove the war chariot in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, not caring about the speed.

On their journey, they encountered some other marauders and some warriors secluding in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. However, those people weren't as brutal and fearless as

Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo. When they found that Zi Yao was at the Third Sky of King God Realm, they would proactively stay away, not daring to mess with her.

Shi Yan relaxed happily. He stayed and cultivated in the tiger shark war chariot to steady his realm. He didn't hurry, just letting Zi Yao be in charge of everything.

Time flew by quickly.

Today, when he was closing his eyes to relax his nerves, Zi Yao suddenly smiled and muttered. "We're almost there."

"Where do you want to go?" Shi Yan lifted his head to look at her in confusion. "You should have a purpose visiting the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. What do you want after all?"

"I want to visit a man. He's very important to me. If I can get his recognition, I can gain the upper hand in the royal competition to the throne." Zi Yao's bold brows knitted together. "Don't be hurried. We will see him soon."

Zi Yao drove the tiger shark war chariot to glide through the maze of meteorolites, sometimes using her Soul Consciousness to survey.

Gradually, they arrived at a place packed with burning meteorolites. Flaming rocks floated everywhere while sunbeams shot chaotically.

Zi Yao got excited as she wormed through the gaps between the dangerous burning meteorolites like a shuttle. She detoured to avoid many dangerous areas, and after a long moment called out. "It's here."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened, his face also cheering up as his vision got clear.

It was unimaginable that a piece of land with rich heaven and earth energy could be situated in the middle of the burning meteorolite sea. It was a square land, thousands of miles squared in



area. It floated quietly in outer space. Countless sunbeams seemed to be absorbed by that piece of land.

Steam fumed, winding outside the land, creating a marvelous barrier and covering the entire area. This barrier filtered the sunbeams, controlling the extreme heat so it wouldn't destroy the flora inside.

Square shaped herbal fields were flat and neat like cubes of tofu. Each field was the home of rare and precious spiritual herbs. They were all shining vigorously, proving their magical medicinal effects.

At first glance, those herbal fields seemed to be shimmering. So many plants in different colors looked more like blooming flowers, forming a scene that was beautifully marvelous.

A clear lake stayed in the center of hundreds of herbal fields, where an islet with a small cottage was situated.

Zi Yao's line of sight glided through the thick steam, falling on that small cottage. She left the tiger shark war chariot, going into the barrier made of thick vapor, then called tenderly, "Uncle Dirck, your niece comes to visit you. Please open the barrier so I can get in."

A soul fluctuation was sent from the small cottage on the islet. A moment later, a white-headed man emerged from the cottage. He waved his hand to dismiss the barrier, letting out a tender laughter. "Come in."

Zi Yao nodded to Shi Yan, signaling him to come with her.

Shi Yan smiled and didn't hesitate, accompanying Zi Yao through the barrier to that land of rich heaven and earth spiritual Qi. They slowly descended at the center of the islet.

The white-headed man called Dirck had some wrinkles at the corners of his eyes, but he was surely a handsome man when he was young. He crossed his arms in front of his chest, standing in

the yard of his cottage while facing the sky. Until Zi Yao and Shi Yan landed, his deep eyes had never left Zi Yao, as if he were sinking into his thoughts.

Shi Yan didn't say anything as he was observing the surroundings discreetly, especially Dirck.

This herbal area was surrounded by so many flaming meteorolites. It was just around a thousand square miles, but the heaven and earth spiritual Qi and the Five Elements energy in this land were dozens of times denser than the Sixth Herbal Star.

Herbs and spiritual grass planted in those fields seemed to be all high-quality, which Nita's couldn't compare with at all. It seemed people in this islet had utilized the solar energy of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field to convert the cycle of heaven and earth energy to create the magic of this area.

Dirck had the same immense energy fluctuation that Shi Yan had observed from Da Lei. Their auras were vast and immeasurable. However, when he tried to sense further, he couldn't feel a beam of energy on him. It was like he was just an ordinary person.

He was obviously an alchemist whose rank was higher than Nita. Looking at Zi Yao, Dirck fell into his memories. Different complicated moods sparkled in his eyes. After a long moment, he sighed with emotion. "So identical! You and your mother, you guys look the same as if you are one."

Zi Yao's soft body shivered. "Uncle Dirck, you've met my mother? How was she?"

Zi Yao's mother passed away before she could be able to memorize things. She had no memories of her mother. Every time she tried to ask her father, she didn't get the information she wanted to know. With time, the feeling she had for her mother seemed to fade gradually.

"That b\*stard Du Tian Ji had promised me to take care of your

mother. He didn't fulfill his promise. He let your mother die!" Dirck snorted, his face cold and dark. "If I had known it, I would have never let her go. If she had gone with me, she would have never fallen into this tragic consequence. She would absolutely not have had to die!"

"How did she die? My father has never told me anything. Uncle, could you please tell me?" Zi Yao begged the man.

"You should ask him yourself, dear." Dirck let out a long sigh, looking at Zi Yao with fondness. "That b\*stard knows you look exactly like her. That's why he sent you to see me. It's been so many years, and he hasn't changed a bit. Cunning! He calculates everything precisely. He knows I won't refuse you, so he sent you to me."

"Uncle," Zi Yao called him tenderly, "Is my mother's death related to... him?"

"Of course, yes!" Dirck rolled his eyes, "If he didn't want that throne and expand the territory, how could my sister die exhausting herself? My sister was the most outstanding alchemist of that year. Even I didn't have her innate endowment. She had refined so many God pellets for that b\*stard Du Tian Ji. She had damaged her soul badly to help Du Tian Jie strengthen his force. Her soul was eroded bit by bit. Eventually, her soul altar vanished, leading to her death. If Du Tian Ji hadn't been so selfish that he wanted to rule the entire Raging Flame Star Area, my beloved sister wouldn't have had to die!"

Zi Yao's heart trembled, her beautiful eyes watery. A sorrowful feeling soaked her wholly.

"You look like my sister, but your brother takes after that b\*stard. It's impossible if you want me to leave my place and aid your brother. I will never help someone who looks like Du Tian Ji. But, if you want to do something, I promise you, even if I have to risk my old life, I will help you at all costs." Dirck took a deep

breath. "The entire Raging Flame Star Area knows what your brother is like. He inherits Du Tian Ji's characteristic from when he was young. I will never risk my life for him!"

Zi Yao was indifferent.

"Du Jie, your brother from another mother, came here before you. He came and promised me that as long as I stayed in this area, he would transport a large number of medicinal materials to me every ten years." Dirck darkened his face. "The royal evil competition is so dirty that nothing could compare with it. Brothers kill sisters without any hesitation. Anyway, thinking about it, Du Tian Ji had also killed a lot of his siblings to claim the throne. In present days, his children are going on the same path as his young self. I wonder if he has ever thought about it."

"It's him!" Zi Yao clenched her teeth. "I almost died before I could see you, Uncle. The one who ambushed me was my dear older brother Du Jia."

"Why do you need to yearn for power and position? Give it up and leave with me, then we will live in peace and freedom." Dirck gave her a deep look. "As long as you want it, Uncle can protect you forever. You will never need to worry about anything. Uncle can help you collect cultivating materials. Why do you need to get out there and battle with the others?"

"Even if I don't fight for my right, the others won't let me go." Zi Yao pondered for a while and then beamed a forced smile. "Father has put forth everything to reach the Ethereal God Realm. You know how dangerous it is. If he succeeds, nothing will change. But if he fails, his soul altar will perish. At that time, the Divine Nation will fall into chaos. Then, no matter where I hide, I can't stay away from their pursuit. Even if Uncle wants to protect me, it'll be a hard task."

Dirck panicked. "That damn b\*stard! How could that heartless moron gain such realm! The Heaven is so unfair!"

## Chapter 753: Resolutely reject

---

In the center of the meteorolite sea, Princess Zi Yao had begged Dirck to leave his place and help her compete for the throne for Du Feng, her blood brother, to ensure that he would become the future King of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation.

Dirck remembered how things happened in the past, scolding Du Tian Ji for being heartless. However, he didn't want to help Zi Yao support Du Feng to get the throne.

Shi Yan stayed aside, not having said anything from the beginning to the end. He listened to their conversation and gained some information about King Du Tian Ji of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. He understood that this man was the tyrant overlord of an area in the Raging Flame Star Area. For the great undertaking, he could give up everything. For a stronger realm, he could sacrifice anything.

Perhaps, in Du Tian Ji's mind, the one who could inherit his throne should be a bloody iron overlord like him.

As his children were competing harshly, it might be that he was watching them. He wanted to see his children killing each other. The strong would live, and the weak would die, then he would pick the winner to be his heir.

The one who could show his talents in the royal competition would get into his eyes. He would make that one the Crown Prince and let him be in charge of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. Later on, that Crown Prince would make the nation he had developed stronger, and dominate the Raging Flame Star Area forever without worrying about the other forces.

Only the winner of a brutal fight could prove his power and mindset. For his great undertaking, he could kill his brothers that year. And today, he had made his children kill each other. They were the kind of crazily stubborn characters.

There was an obvious dispute between him and Dirck. When they were young, they were friends, and even good friends. Because of Zi Yao's mother, they diverged. Eventually, their brotherhood cracked and was cut off.

He wanted to make Dirck serve him, but he knew for sure the other would never agree. That was why he had sent Princess Zi Yao to him, the princess who looked identically to her mother. Standing in front of her, it was hard for Dirck to be heartless. The affection he had for her mother in the past would make him leave his place then.

However, it seemed he had a wrong assumption.

It was not that Dirck didn't want to help them. However, his premise was that the throne of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation should be in Zi Yao's hands, and not her brother Du Feng.

No matter how hard Zi Yao tried to convince him, Dirck wasn't moved. He gritted his teeth and didn't agree with her anything.

Zi Yao had no ways to persuade him. After staying here for several days, she bid Dirck farewell.

Before they left, Dirck pondered for a while and then slipped a ring off his finger, putting it on Zi Yao's palm carefully. "This ring stores a lot of medicinal pellets I've refined. Many of them are good for you. I'm glad that you've come to see me. Although I can't promise you anything, I won't neglect you. Take it... No matter to build your force or to break into a new realm, you will need them."

Zi Yao didn't reject. Her slender jade-like fingers squeezed the ring, her eyes begrudging. "Uncle, I know you want the best for me. Don't worry, I will take care of myself well. In the future, if I fail this battle for the throne, I will get back here to meet you."

"My place is always open for you. As long as you can come here, nothing will matter." Dirck smiled fondly. "Your dad's a selfish scoundrel. He's done things only for himself. He will never

appreciate or take into account the others' feeling. He won't take care of his family either. When someone dies for him, he will regret for a while, then continue to dip his head into what he calls a 'great endeavor'."

Pausing for a while, Dirck looked at Shi Yan for the first time. He frowned, talking with some hidden meanings. "You shouldn't be as blind as your mother. Don't find a man like your father. If you do that and I find it, don't blame me. Whoever dares mistreat you, I will kill him!"

His eyes suddenly became terrifyingly sharp and cold like a sword tip.

Under his gaze, Shi Yan felt like he got so many swords placed at his neck. A chill was sent down his spine, as if he would be crushed in the next minute.

Dangerous!

Shuddering inwardly, Shi Yan confirmed immediately that this Dirck wasn't only a profound alchemist, but also a formidable warrior... Perhaps, he was stronger than Da Lei!

Under Dirck's threatening eyes, Shi Yan frowned. His eyes weren't fluttered, but like a rigid block of ice as a cold aura moved around his body.

Calm and fearless!

Dirck gazed at him without even blinking. After a while, he shifted his sharp eyes, talking calmly. "Kid, I don't know who you are, but if you could come here, it's fate. This pellet is for you. Use it as you please."

This pellet was verdant, with a fragrance that cheered people up. It sparkled with immense light as it flew towards Shi Yan.

Enormous energy fluctuations rippled from that pellet, which clearly seemed amazing and with tremendous medicinal effects. Shi Yan could even hear water murmuring inside the pellet. Shi

Yan gathered his spirit and surveyed the pellet. He saw a small leak, which looked like a miniature stream. It flowed naturally, circulating just like veins in a warrior's body.

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes lit up as her succulent red lips parted. "Shi Yan, say thank you."

Shi Yan looked at the pellet and sensed its efficacy. His eyes shrank but he didn't take the pellet. "I appreciate your favor, precursor. But, I can't take this pellet."

Zi Yao was surprised.

Dirck slightly knitted his eyebrows as his sharp eyes gazed at Shi Yan. He pondered for a few seconds, then the corners of his mouth twitched into a faint smile. "Kid, do you know what pellet it is? What are its effects?"

Shi Yan shook his head, "I don't know."

"The Hundred Circulation Soul Pill, a level 4 Divine Grade pellet. It could nurture your God Soul and supplement your Blood Qi. It's still a big treasure to a Third Sky of King God Realm warrior." Dirck arched his brow. "And you, when you take this pellet, breaking through the King God Realm is just a piece of cake. Condensing the God Body's as easy as flipping a hand. As long as your realm could catch up with your energy and your Upanishad, you will soon enter the King God Realm. This pellet will make countless warriors kill each other to gain it."

Pausing for a while, Dirck snorted and then squinted his eyes. "One more time, do you want it or not?"

"No, thanks," Shi Yan shook his head, resolutely rejecting the offer. He didn't hesitate, and his eyes didn't shift. He continued faintly, "Without this Hundred Circulation Soul Pill, I'll still break through easily to the King God Realm. I think condensing the God Body shouldn't be dependent on external forces. It's the best way for it to happen naturally. Using pellets mean one doesn't believe



in oneself. Along my cultivating path, I haven't depended on pellets to break through realms."

"You arrogant kid!" Dirck sneered. "You got a shortcut but you're stubborn. I can tell your achievement in the future will be limited."

He turned to Zi Yao. "This cortege of yours is like a rock. Arrogant and firm enough... His realm's high but his pride isn't low. Harrumph!"

Zi Yao smiled, her beautiful eyes glaring at Shi Yan as she said tenderly. "This man's always arrogant. Anyway, I think a man who dares to give up a pellet offered to him and wants to use his own power to break through shouldn't be a moron. He just has the absolute confidence. Of course, my follower is the latter kind."

"Alright, not flexible at all, doesn't know how to seize a chance. I think he won't have a great achievement." Dirck waved his hand, taking back his pellet. He seemed not happy at all. "Alright, don't pretend in front of me. Don't you want to show off in front of Zi Yao? I've seen many people like you. Du Tian Ji acted the same that year. Damn it, my sister liked this manner of his! So disgusting!"

It seemed he didn't have a good impression of Shi Yan. After talking with a serious face, he urged impatiently. "Go. The sort of man like you, if you don't taste bitter things, you won't know how high the sky is."

To attract beauties, making oneself the odd one out was the trick many men used. In Dirck's eyes, Shi Yan was this sort of a man, which he absolutely hated. That was why he didn't want to talk to him more.

Shi Yan shrugged indifferently and didn't explain anything.

Princess Zi Yao bid farewell to Dirck for a while. Eventually, she went with Shi Yan back on the old route to the Solar Star Exploding Field. Later on, she stooped and chuckled. "Are you like

what my Uncle said? You wanted to show that you are different?"

"What do you think?" Shi Yan didn't change his visage, although the corners of his mouth twitched a little bit.

"I hope you aren't. To be honest, throughout many years, many people have tried to act in front of me. Your deeds and theirs are pretty similar." Zi Yao laughed cheerily. "If you're like them, I will be happy. At least, I can assure that my charm has never been reduced."

"Sorry to have failed you," Shi Yan slight bowed to her, talking gently. "I just don't want to owe that man a favor, so he can't control me in the future. Perhaps, he's self-righteous, as he thinks that no one is your match in this life. Anyone approaching you will have a purpose, to capture your glamour, for example. Haha... Interesting!"

"A\*shole!" Zi Yao gritted her teeth. "Can't I really make you enchanted? Why could the others be and you couldn't? Oh yeah, I'll borrow your words. Do you have... health issues?"

She acted as if she suddenly understood a mystery, nodding and then saying affirmatively. "Sure it is. I understand. Ah ah! I forgive you. I'm sorry for misunderstanding you. I'm so sorry."

Shi Yan's face darkened.

Zi Yao looked at him seriously for a while and then burst out laughing, holding her flat belly. She laughed until her body was shaking, pointing her finger at Shi Yan. "Hahaha... Interesting! You... Turns out there's something that makes you ridiculous. Haha... Look at you now!"

Shi Yan paused for a while and then accelerated all of a sudden. Just like a shooting light, he glided, passing her while storming forward furiously.

The silver bell jingles like laughter arose behind him.

Zi Yao's face was bright and shining, as if she were overjoyed. She

waved her hands cheerily like she had done a great thing. She looked like a blooming flower that tickled people's hearts.

Floating behind him, her laughter didn't cease, while her soft body shook tenderly. Her beautiful eyes gazed at Shi Yan's buff back. She mused on him for a while before urging her power to follow him quickly.

# Chapter 754: Glorious Amethyst Star

---

\*This star is named after Yi Zao – Yi Zao Star. Yi Zao means 'Glorious amethyst,' so I translated it literally – TL.

The Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field...

A tiger shark war chariot roared, flashed, and disappeared into the dark, cold universe. Shi Yan and Princess Zi Yao were standing on the chariot, watching the immense star sea. They seemed to be happy to see the sunlight again.

After leaving Dirck's place, they didn't meet any danger, crossing the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field at ease.

The tiger shark war chariot stopped. Zi Yao frowned, taking out a delicate blue crystal. She sent her Soul Consciousness into the stone, trying to contact someone.

After a while, a heavy expression appeared on her charming face, her eyes worried.

Shi Yan observed quietly. He suddenly felt cold inwardly, sighing as he knew Du Feng had encountered something unexpected.

"No news from them?" Pondering for a while, Shi Yan asked in a soft tone.

Zi Yao nodded. "Before we diverged, I told Bergh to meet me outside. I have no news from them. Perhaps, they have encountered something unexpected.

"We stayed idle in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field for a long time. If Berge and Prince Du Feng got out and didn't see us here, perhaps... they've gone home already. Your Highness, don't worry much." Shi Yan tried to console her.

Zi Yao's visage became better. "I hope so. If my brother meets anything unexpected, I will never spare them!"

Shi Yan knew she was talking about Prince Du Jie.

Sura was the team leader of his bodyguards. He was in charge of contacting Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo. Ka Tuo's target was Zi Yao, and Sura had joined this operation directly.

Perhaps, they still had another team who was chasing after Du Feng. As Bergh and Du Feng weren't here, something bad might have happened to them.

"Let's go. We should go back first, then we'll return here afterward to search for their whereabouts." Zi Yao contemplated for a while. She understood that waiting here wasn't a good solution, but would give Sura a chance to track them down.

Shi Yan nodded and didn't say anything else as he sat down on the tiger shark war chariot.

There was no way to measure time precisely in outer space. They could only use a special type of stone to check the time. Shi Yan didn't have such toys, so he didn't know how much time had passed. He only knew that they had spent a long time on this tiger shark war chariot.

A long, long time afterward...

On this particular day, they saw a dazzling star appear in their sight. This star was massive, with abundant spiritual Qi and countless energy fluctuations of living beings.

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes glinted while her anxious mind quieted down, and a smile appeared on her face once again. "We're almost home."

Shi Yan got up, standing in the war chariot and watching the area further ahead of them. He could see some sparkling stars near that massive star. However, due to the far distance, he couldn't sense much or estimate their size and energy.

"That's the Dark Firmament Divine Nation," Zi Yao pointed at an area from a far distance. "The Nation consists of eleven life stars. Ten satellite stars surround one big life star, which is the

metropolis star of our Dark Firmament Divine Nation. It's called the Dark Firmament Star. My Father stays there. That star has three suns and three moons, the three Great Solar Stars, and the three Great Moon Stars. They scatter in different areas and light up the Divine Nation. We will never experience true darkness. Even if it's night time, under the light of the three Great Moons, the place's still lighted up gloriously."

Zi Yao's face glinted with vainglory. "That's where my ancestors guard from generations to generations. It's my hometown. The Dark Firmament Star always belongs to the owner of the Divine Nation. The ten life stars surrounding it belong to the Princes, Princesses, and the King's siblings."

Shi Yan looked at that place and was shaken inwardly. He suddenly felt that the Dark Firmament Divine Nation was truly mighty and prosperous.

Fluctuations of dense energy were sent to him from the nearest star. It should be at least a life star at level 3 or 4, with abundant earth and heaven energy. It was the best place for warriors to cultivate.

A life star was a place similar to the Grace Mainland. The area created by eleven life stars was the place where the royal family of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation stayed.

Of course, the Dark Firmament Divine Nation's territory included not just these stars.

Other five feudal vassals guarded the further areas. They had more than ten life stars and many mineral stars. Together, they created the powerful status of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. Each feudal vassal, just like Da Lei, was an expert at the Original God Realm.

From this point of view, the Dark Firmament Divine Nation had an extremely large territory, and a power that could make people shiver on just hearing their names. It was worthy of being one of

three strongest forces of the Raging Flame Star Area. As it could stand shoulder to shoulder with the Underworld League and the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce for ten thousand years, it proved how strong this divine nation was.

The tiger shark chariot was still moving at fast speed. Gradually, the life star in front of them became larger. Shi Yan could see so many creatures, beasts, mountains, rivers, lakes, and things. The scenery there was beautiful and heartening. Spiritual herbs and grass were grown in separate areas, where the specialists took care of them.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness flickered and his eyes brightened. The soul auras he could sense on that life star were packed like an ant colony.

"Haha... This is the Glorious Amethyst Star, the planet belonging to me. It has several thousand people on it, and the same number of beautiful mountains and lakes. You can see attractions everywhere." Zi Yao's mood was good. "This Glorious Amethyst Star's named after me. When I was born, my Father gifted it to me. Under my management, the Glorious Amethyst Star can be considered prosperous. Since it's a level 4 life star, it won't be drained even after dozens of thousands of years."

Pausing for a while, Zi Yao smiled like a blooming flower as her beautiful eyes twinkled. "Each Prince and Princess has their own life stars. My brother also has one. However, his life star is dark and chaotic. His clumsy management has made it messy. Although his star's full of spiritual Qi, its order has never been made. Fights happen all the time. He just babbled when he said that he would give you a life star. He can't give you his life star. Of course, if he can take the throne, it will be another story."

Shi Yan smiled faintly. "I knew it already. You don't need to explain me."

"What do you think about my Glorious Amethyst Star?" Zi Yao

asked as the tiger shark war chariot slowly descended, flying towards the central grand palace of the Glorious Amethyst Star.

Purple clouds wound around that group of palaces built from a kind of fulgent purple crystal. Violet nimbus was moving beautifully on those structures.

Inside those palaces, Shi Yan could see many artificial mountains and small bridges over the running streams, with flowers blooming everywhere. Spiritual Qi stormed into his nostrils. At first glance, this place was both luxurious and dreamy like a fairyland, which could calm people's soul, making them forget all their sorrows.

Shi Yan surveyed and watched the magnificent scenery. Many different-raced warriors were busying themselves inside and outside the palaces. They were harvesting herbs, feeding spiritual animals, cultivating, or refining medicines and weapons. Everybody was working orderly.

It seemed Zi Yao had sent them her message. Many warriors were waiting for her solemnly on a massive platform in the central palace. They faced up the sky, waiting in silence.

Around twenty-some King God Realm warriors, a hundred True God Realm warriors, and almost one thousand Sky Realm warriors were scattered on that massive tall platform. Some of them stooped, while some kneeled down or bowed on the ground, waiting for their master to come home.

Seeing their grand welcoming ceremony, Shi Yan suddenly had a complicated feeling...

Zi Yao was only a Princess of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, but she could control such a holy land like this, with a tremendous force under her command. Thinking about the general force of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, the Underworld League, and the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce, he understood that his vision had been so narrow.



The Raging Flame Star Area was mysterious, and much more immense than what he had imagined. The Grace Mainland was... much smaller than this place.

"Welcome back, Your Highness!"

"Welcome back, Your Highness!"

"Welcome back, Your Highness!"

Loud sounds echoed from the square under their feet. Shortly, the whole area of thousands of miles around was filled with greetings.

Any person working outside or inside the palaces, no matter what they were doing, harvesting herbs or feeding beasts, refining medicines and forging treasures, all paused their work, bent, and greeted, contributing to that stream and strengthening its power.

The smile on Zi Yao's face faded. She looked solemn, even though she wasn't enraged. The imperious manners of a leader appeared on her enchanting face as she said tenderly, "Get up. No need to be too courteous.

"Thank you, Your Highness!"

Several thousand warriors stood up, their faces solemn. They still stooped their heads, without acting too flurried.

The tiger shark war chariot stopped, landing on the center of the high platform. Although it was around ten meters long, the tiger shark war chariot looked nothing special landing on this vast platform.

Shi Yan observed for a while and found that this square had many battleships and war chariots, most of which were purple. Shi Yan could see some amethyst war chariots, but he couldn't see the amethyst battleship Zi Yao used to use.

He got it immediately. The amethyst battleship he had dragged into the unknown space was Zi Yao's private property. It must be

much more precious, as it also was her moving imperial abode. Although she was noble and rich, she wasn't able to fabricate more battleships like that. It proved how precious and extraordinary her amethyst battleship was.

"Your Highness, where's your battleship? And, where's Bergh?"

A Demon Clan's sturdy man with a short beard and high spirits, having a half-naked upper body, stepped forward and asked her while bending his body. The muscles of his entire body bulged like stones, which stored his bursting energy.

Zi Yao discolored as her eyes glinted with a gleam of fear. "Bergh hasn't come back?"

"Bergh and Antrim, didn't they go with you?" That sturdy man seemed to be astounded.

Shi Yan sighed inwardly. He shook his head, as he understood that something had happened to Bergh and Du Feng.

Zi Yao's voice trembled. "No message from them? How about my brother? Did you hear anything about Prince Du Feng?"

"Prince Du Feng's subordinates have come here and asked for him several times. They are searching for him too." The sturdy man changed his visage. "The Prince hasn't come back yet. Since the last time he went out, we haven't heard from him."

Zi Yao's heart sank to the bottom of the abyss. Chill covered her entire body as she stood in a daze.

People didn't dare to even breathe loudly. They all understood that something had happened. They were all grim. The entire Glorious Amethyst Star seemed to be overcast by invisible dark clouds.

Shi Yan frowned, as his line of sight raked through those people. He suddenly recognized that, perhaps, Du Feng and the others would never appear again.

# Chapter 755: Source of Upanishad inheritance

---

Getting no news about Prince Du Feng and Bergh, Zi Yao became dispirited. She first asked about the general condition of the Glorious Amethyst Star and solved some minor problems. After that, she took Shi Yan to the purple palace.

Along their way, many warriors bent on one knee to show their respect for her. Several thousand warriors followed her just like the cortege of a Goddess, sending her to her amethyst palace.

Shi Yan didn't say anything, just following her. However, he didn't bend his body or stoop his head. He was obviously different from the other warriors.

Many warriors of Zi Yao's retinue were assessing him discreetly with complicated eyes, as they didn't know his identity. When they knew that Shi Yan was also one of the Princess's retinue, they were surprised and frightened inwardly.

Princess Zi Yao was a noblewoman in the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. She had countless members of her retinue, and even the King God Realm warriors had to bow to her.

Shi Yan was just at the Third Sky of True God Realm. According to common sense, he wasn't worth her special treatment.

Anyway, after they had observed for a while, they found that the way Zi Yao treated Shi Yan was different. This made many people jealous of him, generating some thoughts in their heads.

Who was this kid? What talents did he have? What did he have at the True God Realm that Your Highness had appreciated?

They were thinking about him secretly.

Shi Yan didn't care about them. He just kept silent and followed Zi Yao to her amethyst palace.

"You guys can leave. When you have Du Feng or Bergh's news, report to me immediately." Zi Yao waved her hand tiredly. "Pay attention, and watch out carefully for me. Brief the situation of the divine nation for me."

Many warriors nodded, bent their bodies and stepped backward.

"Shi Yan, you choose a room to rest in the Amethyst Palace. We have the training room, the Upanishad Hall, and the warehouse that stores all kinds of materials. If you need, just take them. I can also give you my personal collection of materials." Zi Yao pondered for a while. "You and I have experienced struggles together. At the most critical time, you've shouldered my burden in the battles. You're different from the others... To be honest, when we entered the forbidden land, I didn't consider you my cortege. I've considered you my friend. I hope you would treat me the same."

Shi Yan let out a tender laugh as he nodded his head. "Thank you for appreciating me, Your Highness."

"You shouldn't put on this face. I know you have all sorts of airs and graces, and many secrets. However, you're not familiar with the Raging Flame Star Area yet. This area is too complicated. I believe you will have an immeasurable future. However, your realm's still pretty low at this moment. There are any things you can help me out with." Zi Yao rolled her eyes at him. "I know you don't respect me wholeheartedly. No problem. The sort of a man like you will never want to be under the other's commands. I understand it."

Shi Yan gave a wry smile. "I don't. I always think for you."

"Don't lie. It's not what you mean with your heart," Zi Yao harrumphed. "I want to take a good rest this time and gather myself. You should take care of yourself. Take this jade token. You can freely walk around in the Amethyst Palace. In my Glorious Amethyst Star, this token represents me. No one will dare to do anything to you."

"Thank you, Your Highness," Shi Yan took the jade token and wore it on his belt.

Waving her hand, Zi Yao urged him. "Go away. The Amethyst Palace's three hundred meters tall. Each level has private training areas. You can choose wherever you want to stay. The jade token also shows the locations of the training rooms, the Upanishad Hall, and the materials storage. Do whatever you want. Ah, yeah, since you told me that you're a blacksmith, I won't give you weapons. You can forge your own ones. You also have heaven flames, which would make your weapons more suitable for you. My storage has a lot of materials, which are all rare things in the Raging Flame Star Area. I have a lot of skeletons of level 10 beasts, similar to the material you had made your Bone Thorns with. Do what you want."

Shi Yan's eyes sparkled as he slightly bent his body for the first time to talk to the princess. "Thank you." This time, he was more sincere.

Level 11 beasts could be compared to Original God Realm warriors. Their bones were extraordinary rigid, which were the top quality materials to make weapons.

Monster Clan's members at this level had long left the Grace Mainland to the foreign lands. Shi Yan had never seen beasts at such level before.

The Bone Thorns made of the bones of a level 10 beast were already intimidating. With space power added to the Bone Thorns, Shi Yan could control them as he pleased. He had planned to quench them one more time. That was why he wanted to take the Vermilion Bird's skeleton that much.

The Vermilion Bird was also a beast. Shi Yan had assumed that this beast was at least at level 11, or even level 12.

However, since the Vermilion Bird True Flame was so persistent, he couldn't do anything but give it up. Of course, if the Vermilion

Bird had reached level 12, he could hardly refine that bird's skeleton.

It would be already tough for him to forge the skeleton of a level 11 beast.

Zi Yao advised a bit more and then left. Her figured flashed, then disappeared into the Amethyst Palace. Shi Yan didn't know where she had gone.

Shi Yan stood still and didn't hasten to leave yet. His fingers rubbed the jade token, releasing a flow of Soul Consciousness while moving inside the jade token.

This jade token was a small model of the Amethyst Palace. As its restriction was lifted, Shi Yan could use the jade token to see the structure and the arrangement of different secret chambers in this palace.

Which floors were suitable to rest, which were the training rooms, and where the Upanishad Hall was, the jade token showed them all.

Shi Yan was curious about the Upanishad Hall the most. It should be similar to the Martial Technique Hall of the Martial Spirit Palace in the Grace Mainland, where they stored the fundamental techniques of different power Upanishads.

After Zi Yao had left, Shi Yan considered for a while and then followed the map inside the jade token to find the Upanishad Hall in the Amethyst Palace.

It was a spacious room, around one thousand square meters in area, built from amethyst. A giant ancient tree, which was refined from five-colored crystals, stood in the middle of this large room. This big tree didn't have leaves but crystal clear branches, which was pretty similar to the Essence Qi ancient tree in his body.

That ancient tree was the Source of Upanishad Inheritance where countless magical power Upanishads were stored. Warriors

could get in there to receive a new power Upanishad. Of course, in many other Upanishad Halls, it wasn't always in the shape of a tree.

For example, the Corpse Clan would make their Source of Upanishad Inheritance with the shape of a tombstone. The other clans would make it look like a mountain range, the ocean, or even the soul altar.

The Source of Upanishad Inheritance had so many shapes, but they shared the same name and the same functions, which was to help warriors receive the power Upanishad.

People had used a magical way to imprint different Upanishad into the Source of Upanishad Inheritance. When they had new Upanishad, they could always add them altogether. The Source of Upanishad Inheritance was really precious, and only the strongest forces could have them.

Eyeing the tree-shaped Source of Upanishad Inheritance, Shi Yan kept silent. Afterward, he beamed a faint smile.

He suddenly got it that the seven statues of Demogorgon in the First Demon Area in the Grace Mainland were also a Source of Upanishad Inheritance. However, it was a low-level one, since it had only the martial techniques, but not the fundamental elements of the martial techniques: the Power Upanishads.

The Source of Upanishad Inheritance in this place was much better. It had the imprints of the basis of martial techniques. As long as the warrior could learn a kind of power Upanishad and develop it, he could freely create different martial techniques by the principles of Nature. Then, he could use that energy in a beautiful way, which would form intricate martial techniques.

The giant five-colored tree in front of him was filled with strange energy fluctuations. Each branch of it seemed to have the distinctive auras of powers Upanishad.

Shi Yan released his Soul Consciousness, making his soul change miraculously and constantly. He then tried to touch the Source of Upanishad Inheritance.

The jade token on his waist suddenly sparkled, and a feeble beam of purple light shot towards the Source of Upanishad Inheritance in front of his eyes. In the next moment, the barrier on the Source of Upanishad Inheritance was lifted up.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness seized the chance and flooded in.

This Source of Upanishad Inheritance had a tree shape with many branches, which stored different power Upanishads. Shi Yan could see the power Upanishad of Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, Earth, Thunder, Storm, Hypnotizing, Light, and Gravity, etc.

Countless different power Upanishads were imprinted in the Source of Upanishad Inheritance. Each branch had the basic techniques for beginners. Of course, the Source of Upanishad Inheritance wasn't really omnipotent.

The Upanishad it showed was just the fundamental rules and principles of a power. Even if a warrior could know them, it didn't mean that he could really cultivate the power and create a power Upanishad tier in his soul altar.

Only after truly understanding the essence of the primary power Upanishad and continuing to cultivate and study it would a warrior actually cross the threshold and create the Seal of Upanishad in his soul.

Normally, a warrior wouldn't cultivate many different types of power Upanishads. Studying one power Upanishad ascetically was enough to consume the whole life effort of a warrior.

When a warrior began to cultivate a power Upanishad, he would encounter so many obstacles. The meanings of a power Upanishad were tedious, as if they would never be completely comprehended.

And, even if a warrior spent his whole life to cultivate a power



Upanishad, it wasn't guaranteed that he could make it to the peak.

Even if one were a smart and patient expert, he would only cultivate two or three powers Upanishad. Moreover, he would choose the powers Upanishad with something in common to save time and create more effects.

Only morons would try to study many power Upanishad at once. If he did that, he would never cross the threshold, let alone create a Sea of Upanishad in his God Soul. Basically, he couldn't create the soul altar to break through to a more profound realm.

Without crossing the threshold and cultivating it to a certain depth, a warrior could never bring out the best of his power Upanishad.

A warrior's efforts were limited, and the power Upanishad was always too profound. A warrior should normally cultivate only one kind of power Upanishad in his life, which was the correct way and the practicing principle of most of the experts in the Raging Flame Star Area.

Shi Yan urged his Soul Consciousness to move around the Source of Upanishad Inheritance, trying to find some power Upanishad similar to his Star, Space, and Death and Life power Upanishad. However, he felt sorry that he could find nothing.

Power Upanishads in this place were all popular. Shi Yan had seen the similar martial techniques in the Grace Mainland. Apparently, the Star, Space, and Death and Life were all high-level power Upanishads. They were special and strange, which made them rare in the Raging Flame Star Area.

Even Zi Yao with her aristocratic status couldn't gain such high-quality power Upanishads. That was why Shi Yan couldn't find any similar imprints in the Source of Upanishad Inheritance.

However, Shi Yan was still enticed. Although this Source of Upanishad Inheritance couldn't offer him big benefits, it was of

much use to his friends and relatives in the Perpetual Night Forest if they could come here and use the Soul Consciousness to perceive the power Upanishad.

Shi Yan sank into his thoughts while gazing at the Source of Upanishad Inheritance for a while. Afterward, he left to the material storage to find the suitable bones for his Bone Thorns.

# Chapter 756: The best quality bone material

---

In Zi Yao's private storage, Shi Yan found many chambers under different lists, storing many kinds of materials.

Some rooms stored many mineral ores and crystals. The others kept delicate wooden materials, which had natural patterns. Shi Yan also found a room filled with beautiful jades having many shapes and different functions.

All chambers here had a detailed written description, for example, the Bone Material room Shi Yan was checking out just now.

The Bone Material room wasn't so spacious, around one thousand square meters. Pieces of strange bones were put on greenish-brown shelves. Some of them were translucent like gems, some looked rusted, while the others still had a lot of blood stains and a thick bloody scent.

More than dozen kinds of bone materials were classified in different zones. A label, which was placed in front of each bone, described each material in detail, reading which beast it came from, name and level of the beast, class, attributes, and how to refine the bone.

Shi Yan took a walk around the Bone Material room. He wasn't hurried. His eyes twinkled as he was praising this area.

Bone materials that Zi Yao had collected weren't normal. The lowest rank here belonged to a level 9 beast, and the rest belonged to beasts with special features.

Bones of level 10 beasts weren't a rare item in this place. They were put neatly on the shelves with a detailed introduction.

Shi Yan strolled around, stroking the bones he had passed by passionately. Sometimes he frowned, and sometimes his eyes glinted as he beamed a faint smile.

Monsters at level 10 could be compared to King God Realm experts. Usually, they were all tough and tenacious. Beasts of different classes were different, and their bones were distinctive. Some bones were as light as a feather, while the others were even heavier than iron or rock. This feature depended on the beast's class.

Shi Yan still walked around while his ten fingers touched each piece of bone here. He found so many kinds of bones with different attributes, many of which were priceless bone materials.

Of course, he wanted to see the skeleton of the level 11 beast Zi Yao had mentioned the most.

Holding the purple jade token in his hand, he sauntered to a corner of the Bone Materials room. This place had a clear energy fluctuation.

Around ten bones of three to eight meters were placed on a massive amethyst platform. These bones also had a label, but it wasn't clear enough.

However, those simple words had struck Shi Yan inwardly, making him put all of his attention on them.

Material: Level 11

Name of beast: Unknown

Functions: Unknown

Shi Yan's eyes sparkled with a strange light. He eyed those ten bones and hesitated for a while, before picking up a piece of black bone. He didn't know what kind of beast this bone belonged to, but it was totally black, with a shiny dark halo. It felt so cold and heavy in Shi Yan's hand.

Shi Yan's palm felt cool while holding this piece of bone. He suddenly felt a mountain-like heavy aura diffusing to his face from the bone. This bone was so heavy that Shi Yan had to urge his energy to hold it.

Shi Yan's face changed as he closed his eyes and felt. From this piece of bone, he could sense the thick and heavy aura of earth.

Shi Yan shook his head discreetly, putting this bone down. His eyes shifted to the other bones in front of him.

The bone he wanted shouldn't be too heavy. Or else, it would be hard to promote space power of his Soul Consciousness. The feature of coming and going without leaving any trace was what he needed the most. The bones that could promote space power must be sharp, swift, and extremely tough!

Heavy wasn't what he wanted. He needed to avoid this feature.

His fingers surfed above the bones as if he were stroking his lover's skin.

'No, too brittle. It can't stand the space power.'

'Nah, not this one. Too blunt. Even if it's quenched, it can't be sharp enough to break the God Domain.'

'This one isn't good either...'

While his fingers glided above the bones, his Soul Consciousness penetrated them. Shi Yan could feel the attributes and the special features of each bone.

The bone materials on this platform belonged to the skeleton of an unknown level 11 beast. However, most of them had no energy remaining in them. Some still had a little of energy remnants, but the attributes weren't suitable. They were too brittle or too blunt, or had the attributes Shi Yan didn't need, such as Thunderbolt.

Closing his eyes, his Soul Consciousness continued to move around the bones on the platform via his fingers.

Ah!

He suddenly opened his eyes, gazing at a six-meters long bone that was as wide as his fist. This bone looked like a piece of translucent white jade, with many holes on the surface, which

seemed to be created naturally, and were part of the bone. Shi Yan couldn't find any flaw in this bone.

Shi Yan placed his finger on a small hole on the bone. Immediately, he felt a gust, as if a furious wind was howling and storming out of that small hole, tearing his eardrum.

Hiss Hiss Hiss!

From the finger placed on the tiny hole, the hissing wind stormed into his soul. It felt like it was a real wind cutting his skin.

Shi Yan was shaken inwardly. He stooped, studying the bone while his eyes brightened. After a while, he laughed happily. "Tough, sharp, and belongs to a Wind-class beast. Also has some remaining energy that I can use. Top-quality bone material!"

Swoosh!

The six-meters long bone flew up, slowly landing on his finger, floating in front of him.

The Vermilion Bird True Flame flew out from his soul altar. Under his thought, it turned into a flaming fluid ring, enveloping the bone.

Shi Yan's face was filled with smiles. "You refine it and extract all the impurities. I'm going to choose the auxiliary materials to increase its sharpness, flexibility, and speed!" He left the bone and the Vermilion Bird True Flame in the room, then flew towards Zi Yao's private material chambers. He busied himself in raking up Zi Yao's materials to choose the suitable materials to increase the bone's attributes and power.

Disaster suddenly fell on the cultivating materials Zi Yao had been collecting for years. The chambers that stored materials became a mess after Shi Yan's visit.

To gather the auxiliary materials quickly, Shi Yan moved like a tornado sweeping through the storage. Whenever he found a good item, he picked it up, gave it an examination, and put it directly

into his Storage Ring.

His operation was like a hungry wolf snatching its prey, searching and taking. Finally, he had even affected Zi Yao, who was taking rest in her private Amethyst Palace.

A delicate, five-colored formation in the Jade chamber glistened. In the next moment, a charming figure appeared inside the divine light.

Princess Zi Yao was wearing a purple dress, her eyes gloomy. She weakly walked out of the formation inaudibly. The man who was rummaging pieces of jade and gem hadn't recognized her as he was still searching. He even mumbled to himself. "Wind attribute, better to be Wind attribute. No, not this one. Oh, sh\*t, not this one either..."

Zi Yao frowned her bold brows. She was a little bit angry, staring at his back for a while. Afterward, seeing the man was not stopping his deed, she couldn't help but shout. "Do you want to destroy my material chambers?"

Shi Yan's back suddenly got upright. He suddenly turned around, throwing her a glance and smiling brightly. "No, I don't."

Regarding her for a second, he turned around and continued his business of collecting materials. He ignored Zi Yao one more time.

After a while, he craned his head from the mess of jades and gems. His eyes looked happy as if he had found something good eventually. "Your territory is so good. Thanks a ton for your favor, Your Highness. I think I can refine my Bone Thorns now."

Then he nodded, and a wind passed by Zi Yao as he rushed to the Bone Materials room.

Princess Zi Yao's face grimaced. She was angry as the other had ignored her completely. She gritted her teeth and then walked to the Bone Material room.

A red-orange flame covered a six-meters long crystal bone. From

time to time, the crystal bone would drop some drops of brownish-gray viscous fluid. Those were the melted impurities inside the bone.

As the bone was being refined by the Vermilion Bird True Flame, wind would sometimes hiss through the tiny holes on the bone. Gradually, the bone became scarlet and angular like a sharp spear.

Shi Yan hadn't realized that she had come too. His face was serious while beautiful gems and strange stones flew out of his sparkling Storage Ring. An energy then guided them towards the bone.

The Vermilion Bird True Flame burst out its energy, and a red-orange flame covered those precious jades and gems, starting to refine them.

Shi Yan was serious as he sat down cross-legged right in front of Princess Zi Yao. His soul altar started to rotate while his hands were constantly making magical hand seals and formations. Energy under formations and seal forms struck the bone.

Shi Yan touched his glabella. A flow of flaming energy carrying the Sun Original Essence aura poured into the bone like a bunch of light. It then entered the bone through the tiny holes on its surface.

Shi Yan closed his eyes, while his hands started to move and carve the formations swiftly and unconsciously. Fine space lights appeared and sizzled. Under the support of some mysterious energy, they poured into the bone, and then strongly changed its structure.

Hundreds of hand seals and formations entered the bone like fading shadows. The bone suddenly emitted an earth-shaking whistle. The strong wind howled through the small holes in the bones.

The beautiful jades and strange gems were all melted into a



magical fluid. Shi Yan's miraculous hand seals and formations sank into this fluid, and then they all merged with the strange energy inside the bone, increasing its power and ability.

Princess Zi Yao was dizzy and astounded on watching Shi Yan refining the bone.

After a long time, her beautiful eyes glistened as she muttered. "He's really a blacksmith. From his bearings, I think his grade isn't low either..."

A flame was burning on the bone, turning it into a scarlet hue as if it were heating up well. Magical hand seals and formation suddenly disappeared, and the tiny holes on the bone cracked, turning into narrow slits.

It seemed the bone was crushed and rebuilt. Those slits appeared as if it had suffered from sharp slashes or chops.

However, on a closer look, it was visible that each eyelet and slit had stored an extremely sharp space energy, which was like a wind blade that could cut and crush everything.

# Chapter 757: Refine divine weapon!

---

The wind howled ear-piercingly, tearing the air inside the Bone Material room. It was like a sharp weapon was prickling people's eardrums, making the soul twinge as if it was pierced by a needle!

The Bone Thorn wasn't visible in the Bone Material Room, but it was howling fiercely. Also, there was no strange energy surging. The wind howl seemed to hide in space slits, making it hard to detect.

Shi Yan squinted. His aura was cold, sharp, and wicked, just like a spear, giving people a weird feeling.

The Vermilion Bird True Flame got back to Shi Yan's soul altar. The ground in front of him was full of black and gray viscous substance, the contaminants extracted from the Bone Thorns.

The wind wailed unceasingly, crying in the Bone Material room. This eardrum-tearing sound discolored Zi Yao. Although she had urged her soul fluctuation as a Third Sky of King God Realm warrior rippling around the room, she couldn't find the Bone Thorns.

The howling didn't stop. She was sure that the Bone Thorns were still in this Bone Material room, yet she couldn't sense or lock them, or find their whereabouts.

This was evilly strange!

With her King God Realm cultivation base, she couldn't detect the Bone Thorns Shi Yan had refined and controlled. It was not normal at all. Also, it made her have a higher valuation of Shi Yan's blacksmithing techniques.

The howls stopped all of a sudden.

Three crystal clear Bone Thorns appeared, each being two meters long with two pointy ends like two spears connected to each other. The Bone Thorns had so many fine slits on their bodies, as if they

were made by slashes of a sharp weapon. At first glance, these three Bone Thorns looked like trash.

However, with a closer look and the soul to sense, sharp energy of space could be detected from those fine cracks.

Carving space power Upanishad on the Bone Thorns was a strange but excellent technique, which made Zi Yao interested in these three Bone Thorns. She wanted to know which grade they were at.

So, she waved her exquisite small hand in the air, drawing something to open a restriction. A light purple light sparkled, and a lozenge tool appeared in the center of a formation inside the Bone Material chamber. Zi Yao smiled, walking towards the tool and talking to Shi Yan. "This Tool Ranking Stone can grade the quality of your three Bone Thorns. Wanna try?"

Shi Yan agreed frankly. The three Bone Thorns reappeared, hovering next to the thing called the Tool Ranking Stone.

Countless glorious energy filaments extended from inside the lozenge tool. They shone on the three Bone Thorns like tentacles, as if they were measuring and verifying their quality.

"What kind of a criteria does this tool use?" From a distance, Shi Yan glared at the thing with astonishment.

"Of course, it will check the tool's flexibility, sharpness, endurance, bearing capacity, etc. If your weapon has a spirit, it'll measure the weapon spirit's grade. Also, it will check the combination of materials and level of impurities or contaminants. There are so many criteria to evaluate." Zi Yao smiled, craning her white neck towards Shi Yan. "I can't explain it clearly in detail. This Tool Ranking Stone's made by the blacksmiths who could forge Divine Grade secret treasures. I don't know their criteria clearly. Anyway, it couldn't be wrong."

Shi Yan nodded as his interest was aroused. He also wanted to

know which grade the Bone Thorns he had dedicatedly fabricated were at.

The Bone Thorns were made of a bone of a level 11 beast of Wind class, together with twelve kinds of beautiful jades, gems, and ironstone to increase the flexibility, sharpness, and speed. They were refined by heaven flame to extract contaminants. With hand seals and formations from the Blacksmith's Secrets of Success, Shi Yan had poured and created the energy by adding space power and the flaming solar energy.

This set of treasure had been invested with Shi Yan's enthusiasm and effort. He had made use of all of available resources to create them.

He also had a great expectation for the quality of those Bone Thorns.

Light spots sparkled on the Tool Ranking Stone. Seven light sports glinted and then combined into one. A dazzling light flooded the area, turning into a sparkling light dot like a small star, then slowly vanishing.

Zi Yao's bright eyes showed that she was disbelieving, as she dazedly looked at the strange state of the Tool Raking Stone. Her succulent red lips convulsed as she muttered something in her throat.

Shi Yan didn't hear it clearly. He frowned and then asked impatiently. "What did you just say?"

Zi Yao's chest jolted upright. She took several breaths to steady her mind. Then, she glared at him with an odd countenance. "Level 1 Divine Grade. You are a Divine Grade blacksmith! The three Bone Thorns of yours all have the characteristics of level 1 Divine Grade treasures!"

"Ha!" Shi Yan grinned as he felt contented.

Divine Grade!

He had never imagined he could refine a Divine Grade secret treasure in the Grace Mainland! He had never thought that he could use the level 11 beast's skeleton to refine three Bone Thorns successfully in this area. Also, the three Bone Thorns had been added with his special powers Upanishad!

"We have so many Divine Grade alchemists in the Raging Flame Star Area each of whom holds a superior position in their forces. However, the Divine Grade blacksmiths are still rare. Our Dark Firmament Divine Nation has only two Divine Grade blacksmiths." Zi Yao paused and then eyed him seriously. "Among tens of thousands of blacksmiths in the entire Raging Flame Star Area, not more than ten blacksmiths could create Divine Grade secret treasures."

In the Raging Flame Star Area, the blacksmiths were rarer than alchemists. So, their status is higher than the alchemist.

Thus, when Zi Yao eyed him again, her beautiful eyes seemed to be about to illuminate.

Shi Yan beamed a faint smile, talking deliberately. "I'm just an amateur blacksmith. Don't plan anything on me. I won't give up my cultivation just to refine treasures for you."

He understood that he could forge a Divine Grade secret treasure because of the level 11 beast's skeleton and the level 5 Vermilion Bird True Flame that had extracted all the impurities in the bone thorns, making it precious.

Without these two conditions and with his not-so-experienced techniques, he could never refine the Divine Grade Bone Thorns.

As his mind flickered, the three Bone Thorns disappeared into his Storage Ring. Shi Yan smiled, stretching his body. "I'm tired, and I need to rest now. Your Highness, do as you please."

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes were shining like the torch while looking at him. "Divine Grade blacksmith! Shi Yan ah, don't you think you

should do something for me? You should know that my bone materials here are all precious. And, you've used a lot of my auxiliary materials, too. Do you want to take everything for free?"

"Didn't you tell me to do that?" Shi Yan was surprised. "When you gave me the jade token, you told me that I can use everything here as I please."

"I did. But I didn't say that they are free, did I?" Princess Zi Yao laughed, her eyes cunning. "You've used a lot of my materials. Shouldn't you make something to compensate?"

Shi Yan kept silent, frowning as he thought about how to reject her.

Princess Zi Yao wasn't hurried. She just smiled, looking at him. She didn't leave, as though she was adamant on getting his affirmation before leaving.

Right when they were still struggling and watching each other, cheers resounded outside the Amethyst Palace.

Zi Yao's eyes lit up, letting out a light sigh. "Did my spoiled little brother come back?" She turned into a bunch of purple light, flashing and then disappearing.

Shi Yan was amazed. He curiously flew out of the Bone Material room to the outside of the Amethyst Palace as well.

A hundred meters long silver bird battleship slowly landed on the spacious square.

A dazzling blonde man flew out of the battleship, smiling tenderly. Some King God Realm warriors followed him. Silver bird war chariots emerged from the silver battleship, all of them filled with precious materials.

"Ao Gera's back!"

"Hey, it's Ao Gera!"

Many warriors staying in the Glorious Amethyst Star got out of

their places, cheerily screaming from a far distance.

That handsome blonde man was brawny, with a shining smile. He continually nodded his head to greet the other warriors. Seemed like he was pretty familiar with them.

When Princess Zi Yao got out of her palace, she also went to welcome the handsome man called Ao Gera. As he saw her, his eyes didn't lay on anyone else. He strode towards her, kneeled down on one knee while talking to her like the most humble knight. "Your Highness, you've been struggling hard."

Smiling sincerely, he placed a tender kiss on Princess Zi Yao's hand then stood up gently.

"You too," Zi Yao smiled mildly. Like the noblest Queen, she let him kiss her hand and then asked him, "Ao Gera, how is it going?"

"Thanks to your grace, everything's smooth." The blonde man smiled as if any difficult matter would turn easy in his hands.

"Shi Yan, come to say hello to Ao Gera, my most competent messenger. He's not my guard." Glorious Amethyst Star laughed happily, waving her jade-like hand at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was surprised. He sauntered and nodded at the blonde man from a far distance.

Ao Gera was amazed, his eyes skeptical. He looked at the other man, nodded to him, and then turned to Zi Yao. "Your Highness, is he your new retinue?"

"True," Zi Yao smiled mildly, her beautiful eyes carrying some deep meanings. "He saved me in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. Ao Gera, even though he hasn't reached the King God Realm yet, his potential's excellent. I favor him a lot."

"Oh," the blonde man replied faintly as he didn't put it in his mind. He hesitated a while before lowering his voice. "Your Highness, I got something I want to report you privately... about... Prince Du Feng."

Zi Yao trembled in fright. "Follow me." Her figure flashed like an electric wisp, flying directly into the Amethyst Palace. Ao Gera followed her.

Shi Yan stood at his spot, his face unchanged. He looked at the materials on the war chariots and the other warriors following Ao Gera. He was surprised inwardly.

Among those King God Realm warriors, there was one at the Third Sky of King God Realm. He was a dangerous member of this team. All members of his crew, including that man, looked at Ao Gera with respect and support. It seemed like... Ao Gera was their true master, and not Zi Yao.

Ao Gera was at the Second Sky of King God Realm, one rank lower than Zi Yao. He was considered one of the retainers of Zi Yao. In other words, his status was like Shi Yan's. But, why could he have his own organization?

Shi Yan couldn't guess anything, so he discreetly became more cautious.

He vaguely felt that the man called Ao Gera didn't look at him with a friendly attitude. It seemed he was trying to conceal his murderous aura.

Suddenly, Shi Yan understood that Ao Gera had soon known about him and every operation of his from the time he had arrived in the Glorious Amethyst Star. However, this man was trying to hide things and ignore him.

Shi Yan suddenly understood and couldn't help but beam a forced smile, shaking his head begrudgingly.



# Chapter 758: Heaven flame's ascension

---

Although he was Princess Zi Yao's escort, Ao Gera seemed to have a high status and position. He had his own cortege, and he seemed to be the other master of the Glorious Amethyst Star.

His subordinates were managing people to transport the materials from the flying bird war chariots. They even shouted at the onlookers to ask them to give a hand.

Those who were called didn't resist. Quite the contrary, they looked happy working for the warriors under Ao Gera's commands. They unloaded the materials and transported them to many places.

Princess Zi Yao and Ao Gera had left to the Amethyst Palace to talk about issues related to Du Feng and Bergh. Shi Yan observed for a while, then beamed a forced smile as he got it eventually. Shi Yan didn't return to the Amethyst Palace, leaving this place alone.

He had been to the Glorious Amethyst Star for a while, but he had always stayed inside the Amethyst Palace, and never got out or talked with Princess Zi Yao's underlings. That was why he didn't have a clue about Ao Gera's position and status.

Shi Yan understood that he had been staying in a bit too much, so he wanted to walk around to check the situation of the Glorious Amethyst Star. He should better have more knowledge of this area, as it would help him a lot later.

Glorious Amethyst Star was a continent. Although it wasn't as vast as the Grace Mainland, his Soul Consciousness couldn't cover it all. This place was filled with heaven and earth energy, many spiritual animals, and rare flora. All of those belonged to Princess Zi Yao of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, the owner of this beautiful planet.

Shi Yan left that group of palaces. Seeing the amethyst token on

his waist, the guards moving back and forth slightly bent their bodies to greet him on the way.

People holding the Amethyst token could visit anywhere in the Amethyst Palace, as they were the distinguished guests of the Glorious Amethyst Star. They could go anywhere without having any restrictions.

With the token, his trip was smooth. He soared up into the sky, flying above the Glorious Amethyst Star. Looking at the sky with three dazzling suns and immersing himself in the sunlight, Shi Yan felt more comfortable and relaxed.

His mind flickered, and the three Bone Thorns roared, flying towards the mountain range, disappearing shortly.

Ear-piercing screams echoed from the center of the mountain ranges. Many spiritual animals had to hide in fright. The Bone Thorns were like invisible sharp weapons, swaying in the mountains. People could only hear the wind hissing, but not find out their whereabouts.

Shortly, Shi Yan was floating in the air, while his eyes sparkled with a fiercely cold light.

Pfff!

A verdant mountain flank in front of him suddenly had a fist-sized hole. It looked so deep that he couldn't even see the bottom.

His eyes glued to the hole. Shi Yan squinted to sense with a grin.

Three blazing bunches of light abruptly illuminated. Three crystal clear Bone Thorns were floating in front of him steadily. Silver light radiated from them, full of magical energy fluctuations.

Shi Yan waved his hand, and the three Bone Thorns disappeared. Shi Yan was satisfied, smiling as he flew forward once again.

After the Bone Thorns were quenched, their endurance and

sharpness became extraordinary. With the energy of Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness, he could use the Bone Thorns to use his space power. The Bone Thorns could hide in space slits to avoid being detected by the opponents' Soul Consciousness.

These three Bone Thorns would be sharp weapons in his hand, which could perform tremendously in a life and death battle.

With high spirit, he flew through the mountains, lakes, and forests. After several hundred miles, he glided through a vast area of so many cities.

Most of the residents of those cities were ordinary people with different races. Shi Yan could sense some warriors, but their realms weren't so high. Strongest warriors would wear purple clothes. Apparently, they were under Princess Zi Yao's management. On behalf of her, they would control those cities.

Most of the cities there looked like the Sky Meteor City in the Quiet Cloud Land, or the Wonderful Stone City in the Divine Great Land. Each city would have a City Master to manage the entire operations of the city.

All the City Masters were Zi Yao's subordinates. They would help her find the potential warriors in the city to nurture them, which could help her in the future. Taxes would be submitted on time, turning into Zi Yao's properties.

Shi Yan got there, walking through the cities. He had put the token away so that nobody would notice him.

Gliding above the cities, Shi Yan found that the City Masters of many cities in the Glorious Amethyst Star were only at the True God Realm. In some small cities, the City Masters were only at the Spirit Realm or Sky Realm. Those cities constituted the Glorious Amethyst Star, surrounding the purple palaces where Zi Yao stayed, which was the only ruling structure of the planet.

In the eyes of those several thousand people, Zi Yao was their

Queen, their master forever. Some of them even had never heard of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation or the Underworld League. Most of her people had never left the Glorious Amethyst Star.

Only warriors with potential would be selected. Afterward, they could move to the palaces where Zi Yao stayed to receive the power Upanishad inheritance. Then, they would have to cultivate and go through tests to earn their status and positions. They could be Zi Yao's guards or workers at the herbal fields, or even take care of her spiritual animals.

Zi Yao had many cities, but the heaven and earth energy in those cities weren't the same. Some were rich in energy, while many of them had thin layers of spiritual energy. Only where Zi Yao was staying had the thickest heaven and earth energy.

After several days of staying in the Glorious Amethyst Star, he had some understanding about this life star. Shi Yan evaluated to plan where he should establish a city for his family and friends from the Grace Mainland, so that they could stay and live happily.

Different from the Grace Mainland, members of different clans could live together in harmony here. They wouldn't be hostile toward the others due to racism, which could lead to a bloody battle where either of them had to die.

Zi Yao had chosen the best subordinates. She didn't care about races, just their realms and competences, and how much they could support her.

After several days of taking a tour around the Glorious Amethyst Star, Shi Yan had a deeper understanding of this life star. Through a True God Realm City Master, he got to know Ao Gera's identity.

Ao Gera at the Second Sky of King God Realm was the son of Ao La Dai, the blood sister of Ao Gu Duo – one of the five feudal vassals. Ao La Dai got married to a leader of a small force near the border of Ao Gu Duo's territory. To take over that force, Ao Gu Duo made his sister marry that leader, which was solely to merge that

force into his territory.

Ao Gera had shown his extraordinary innate talents when he was pretty young. He was excellent in cultivation, so Ao La Dai and her husband had always indulged him.

One of the five Great Feudal Vassals of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, Ao Gu Duo didn't get married. He didn't have any children, so he had treated this talented nephew as if he were his blood son. He had favored him so much that he had taught Ao Gera the meanings of martial path himself for a period of time.

Ao Gera was a prominent young man in the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. After he had seen Zi Yao the first time, it seemed he had fallen under her spell. He decided to follow Zi Yao and pledge to protect her welfare and honor.

When Ao Gu Duo and Ao La Dai found out about his decision, they had tried everything to oppose it. However, the young man was persistent. He had given up everything and moved to the Glorious Amethyst Star alone, becoming Zi Yao's escort.

Due to his special status, Zi Yao was proud and happy to have him as her retinue. She had always treated him well, considering him her friend. She even let him take care of many big cities on her planet.

After Ao Gera followed Zi Yao, his realm had never been stagnant, but always advanced, which had cheered his uncle Ao Gu Duo a lot. Later on, he forgave the young man for his deed and sent the experts under his command to be Ao Gera's cortege.

That was why Ao Gera was a special character of Zi Yao's cortege. His origin wasn't bad, and he also had a firm backup and his own organization. Due to his admiration for Zi Yao, he was willing to humble himself and become her escort.

After Shi Yan knew of Ao Gera's identity, he was amazed, sighing with emotion for this man's deeds.

He had an outstanding background, but he had given it up for Zi Yao. He had harassed himself being her guard. If this man didn't have a deep affection for her, he should have been a cunning, wicked man. No matter what kind of character this young man was, Shi Yan staying close to Zi Yao in the Amethyst Palace would rouse his envy.

That was why Ao Gera didn't give him a comfortable feeling when he looked at him. Shi Yan understood that if he were him, he would have been enraged too.

Shaking his head begrudgingly, Shi Yan forced a smile while looking at the purple palaces and sighing. He pondered for a while, then returned to the place.

A feeble flame arose in his Sea of Consciousness as a wonderful thought crossed his mind. Although he didn't change his speed, his focus was now on his Sea of Consciousness.

On the heaven flame soul altar, the Earth Flame, the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, and the Corpse Vanishing Flame were sending out energy fluctuations. Their flames were flickering on the soul altar, as though they were about to wake up.

Shi Yan's eyes lit up.

When they were in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, the Earth Flame was the first one who went dormant. While fighting against the Vermilion Bird True Flame, the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, and the Corpse Vanishing Flame had absorbed a lot of the strange energy in that forbidden land. Afterward, these two flame quieted down as well.

Today, it had been half a year since then, and these three heaven flames were about to wake up. He was a little bit excited. Shi Yan pulled himself together and observed the situation.

Not long after that, the Earth Flame 'boomed,' releasing so many flames. It circled the soul altar and then stopped, sending him its

thought. "I've reached level 4!"

Shi Yan was astounded. "That fast?"

"The Volcano Crystal Nucleus and the Sun Original Essence are the best precious items for me to ascend. Having them, of course, I can leap up swiftly," The Earth Flame answered him cheerily.

"And me..." The deep thought of the Corpse Vanishing Flame slowly arose. "I've reached level 3. The corpse Qi there was abundant. I'm lucky to have broken through another level."

"Haha. I've reached level 5! I should have reached level 5 earlier though!" The Yin Spirit Ghost Flame was thrilled.

This flame was the same as the Vermilion Bird True Flame. They were both at level 5, the highest ranked heaven flames among this group.

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame used to be at level 4. However, since it had been confined for so many years, it was degraded back to level 3. Contrary to it, the Earth Flame, the flame that gained intellect the last, had leaped from level 2 to level 4 thanks to its miraculous encounter. After that event, this flame had benefited the most.

Feeling the joy of the heaven flames in his soul altar, Shi Yan also smiled while slowly flying toward the purple palaces, heading to the Amethyst Palace.

Translator's Thoughts

Sigma Sigma

Hi guys! GOS will go Premium this April 11th

I hope that u guys can keep supporting me :smiley:

My new website [sigmanovel.com](http://sigmanovel.com) just launched 4 new novels a few days ago.

I hope that u guys can support my website also.

Btw, if GOS can make it way back to top 20 - I'll release 5 extra chapters

Top 15 - 8 extra chapters

Top 10 - 7 extra chapters each week in 2 weeks



# Chapter 759: The Purgatory Token

---

The Amethyst Palace was the symbol of the supreme power in the Glorious Amethyst Star. It was also Zi Yao's palace, where she resolved her business and cultivated.

However, it was different today. Two lines of guards were standing on both sides of the stairs in front of the Amethyst Palace. Behind them sat a Third Sky of King God Realm warrior near the entrance.

That warrior was Ao Gera's subordinate, who had just come back with him. Shi Yan had seen him before.

Shi Yan frowned and then put on his usual countenance, walking towards the Amethyst Palace. Suddenly, two lines of guards standing solemnly on the steps stopped him with unfriendly faces while one of them shouted. "Stop!"

These two lines of guards had fourteen warriors in total. Each line had seven guards holding long silver spears, sparkling sharply.

Fourteen pairs of eyes shot towards Shi Yan with caution. Their spears shivered slightly, sending an extraordinary energy fluctuation.

All of them were at the True God Realm, with half at the Peak of True God Realm. Their auras were much more intimidating than his.

Shi Yan changed his visage, then snorted and took out the jade token he was wearing on his belt. "The Princess gave me this jade token. She said that I could enter the Amethyst Palace freely. I've been away for several days, and this Amethyst Palace has had a new master now?"

As the guard saw the token, his face became strange. He didn't answer but turned around, looking at the warrior standing behind them.

The old man still closed his eyes as he slowly rose his indifferent voice. "The Princess has set off to Dark Firmament Star to find the King and ask for justice. Before she left, she had advised that when she's absent, Ao Gera will be in charge of the Amethyst Palace. Currently, Ao Gera's cultivating inside the Amethyst Palace. He doesn't want anybody to disturb him. He has advised that we can't let anybody enter the Amethyst Palace before he wakes up."

"With the jade token granted by the Princess, I still can't go?" Shi Yan snorted with a cold face. "Isn't it true that the Princess' words are the rules in the Glorious Amethyst Star?"

"Bull!" The old man shouted. A sharp aura shot out from his body instantly, seeming like a sharp sword. His closed eyes slowly opened, gazing at Shi Yan furiously. "Of course, Princess Zi Yao's the master of the Glorious Amethyst Star. It will never change. However, the Princess isn't here. She has told us that in her absence, Ao Gera shall be in charge. Today, Ao Gera's cultivating inside the Amethyst Palace, and no one is allowed to disturb him. It doesn't matter that you have the token or not. You are not allowed to get in. Otherwise, don't blame me."

When this man was talking, his voice was amplified. Many warriors on the square could hear his voice, so they came close to observe.

Many warriors from the other palaces walked out with frowning face. They came to check what was happening there. Not long afterward, the beefy Demon Clan's warrior whom Shi Yan had seen before walked out from a palace, still baring his chest.

He appeared and harrumphed while walking towards Shi Yan shortly. He shouted mockingly at that man. "Yuwen, although our master isn't here, I think it's not your job to control everything, eh? Then, what is a major-domo like me to do?"

The old man put on a serious countenance. "I protect the Amethyst Palace for Ao Gera. It's to prevent some low-realm

people from being crushed into powder by his God Domain while he's cultivating."

Then, the old man closed his eyes again, as if he didn't want to talk much to the Demon Clan's brawny man.

The major-domo stood outside the Amethyst Palace, looking at the place with a dark face, as if he was releasing his energy to sense something. After a while, he knitted his brows and asked Shi Yan. "Did you put anything in there?"

"No," Shi Yan shook his head as his ruthless eyes lingered on Yuwen for a while.

"Follow me. Princess had arranged something for you before she left." The beefy Demon man turned away, walking on the square. Shi Yan followed him.

"What happened?" Shi Yan tried to probe for information from that sturdy man.

"Ao Gera said that he found the corpses of Bergh and Antrim. But he didn't see Prince Du Feng's." The Demon man hesitated for a while and then turned around. "Princess was worried that Prince Du Feng would be in big trouble. She went to the Dark Firmament Star to ask for the King's opinions. Before she left, she did say that Ao Gera would be in charge of the Glorious Amethyst Star. It has always been like that..."

Shi Yan nodded as he understood.

"You've not been familiar with the Glorious Amethyst Star yet. Even if the Princess trusts and favors you, it's impossible that she would let you manage the Glorious Amethyst Star. You would ruin it." The Demon man explained. "The Princess does favor you a lot. Otherwise, she wouldn't give you her jade token."

Shi Yan nodded again

"This is what Princess wanted to give you, the Purgatory Token. This is how you can go to the Extreme Purgatory Field." The beefy

man held a token with both his hands, which wasn't made of jade or gold, then handed it to Shi Yan with a solemn face.

Actually, his respect wasn't for Shi Yan but the Purgatory Token.

Shi Yan received the token, gathering his spirit to check it. This token had a triangular shape, with a white bone crown carved on it. The white bone crown was supported by several pale bones above a pond of blood. Shi Yan caressed the token. All of a sudden, he had a brutal thought of killing people. It seemed like the token had many resentful ghosts screaming inside it.

"The King had forged the Purgatory Tokens himself. The bloody white bone crown is the symbol of the royal family of the divine nation."

Shi Yan nodded, closed his eyes, and caressed the white bone crown on the token. He felt his Blood Qi increase abruptly, as the killing desire arose in him.

Frightened, Shi Yan didn't dare to sense further. He hastened to put the Purgatory Token into his Storage Ring, then asked, "Did the Princess advise me anything before she left?"

"She wants you to go to the Purgatory Star. The Extreme Purgatory Field is there. And, take the amethyst war chariot she gave you." The man pointed at a brand new fulgent amethyst war chariot. This beautiful chariot was apparently of a better quality than the others parked around this area. "The Extreme Purgatory field is about to open. People holding this Purgatory Token can go there. When you get to the Purgatory Star, show them the token. They will take care of you and explain everything."

Shi Yan smiled, then slightly bent his body. "Thank you, Major-domo. What's your name?"

"Ai Fu La," The Demon man hesitated for a while and then beamed a bright smile, telling his name. His eyes rolled as he was considering something. Then, he continued in a low voice. "The

Princess and Ao Gera had a dispute because of this Token. My men overheard it accidentally."

Shi Yan was bewildered. He paused for a while and then looked at the other man with a solemn visage. "Thank you."

"Don't worry! Be careful. Our Princess appreciates you, so don't fail her. The quotas of the Extreme Purgatory Field are very precious. As she wants to send you there, she does favor you a lot. At this moment, she needs more support. I hope that you would give her strong support in the near future," Ai Fu La said with a serious countenance.

Apparently, he was quite loyal and dedicated to Princess Zi Yao. He had always thought for Zi Yao. As long as something benefited her, he wouldn't hesitate to do it. He would fulfill everything Zi Yao asked him to do.

"Alright, I got it. Thanks again." Shi Yan said heavily, then got in the amethyst war chariot. He found that all the restrictions and barriers were lifted. He could use his Soul Consciousness to drive the chariot directly.

Shi Yan sent his Soul Consciousness into the station of the amethyst war chariot. A constellation map arose, showing the location of the Glorious Amethyst Star and the Purgatory Star. At first glance, Shi Yan learned his route immediately.

Shi Yan knew that Zi Yao had prepared everything for him before she left. She even set the map for him, so he didn't need to do anything.

"You should check it carefully. This war chariot has been used by so many people. I've seen Ao Gera's men adjust it too." Ai Fu La suddenly said, his words implying something.

Shi Yan was surprised. He released his Soul Consciousness to sense the energy fluctuation in this war chariot. Afterward, he smiled. "It's alright."

"Many members of the Princess had pledged to die for her. They could risk their lives in many dangers. However, some of them have disappeared inexplicably..." Ai Fu La muttered, throwing a glance towards the Amethyst Palace.

Shi Yan's eyes changed as he was scared.

When he bid farewell to Ka Tuo, the man had also advised him to be cautious with Zi Yao. He told him that many of her escorts had disappeared for unknown reasons. He said that Zi Yao was an extremely toxic character.

Connected to what Ai Fu La had just told him, Shi Yan suddenly understood something as a flash of thought crossed his mind.

"You should be careful." Ai Fu La didn't talk more. He nodded and waved his hand, then left.

After his figured disappeared, Shi Yan used his Soul Consciousness to drive the amethyst war chariot, turning into purple lightning and soaring into space.

The amethyst war chariot was made of amethyst, which was a special crystal that could be added with Divine Crystal energy. Each war chariot had been installed with Divine Crystals to supplement the energy. The war chariot flew up and accelerated towards the sky. As he was looking outside from the chariot, Shi Yan suddenly felt something.

Standing in the war chariot, Shi Yan looked at the Amethyst Palace, especially at a central floor of the Amethyst Palace, where a tall, open platform was installed.

The blonde Ao Gera's small figure was sitting neatly. A wisp of energy fluctuated from his soul altar. He suddenly lifted his head, glaring at Shi Yan's war chariot.

Shi Yan's eyes and his locked each other from a distance of around ten thousand meters.

Swoosh!

It felt like a flame blooming in the void, bringing up a sharp, hostile aura. Shi Yan beamed a faint smile, his face brutal and cold.

Ao Gera sat firmly and slowly closed his eyes, his aura quiet and archaic.

Translator's Thoughts

Sigma Sigma

Hi guys! GOS will go Premium this April 11th

I hope that u guys can keep supporting me :smiley:

My new website [sigmanovel.com](http://sigmanovel.com) just launched 4 new novels a few days ago.

I hope that u guys can support my website also.

Btw, if GOS can make it way back to top 20 - I'll release 5 extra chapters

Top 15 - 8 extra chapters

Top 10 - 7 extra chapters each week in 2 weeks

# Chapter 760: Convergence of the Moon's brilliance!

---

The amethyst war chariot flew in the sky like purple lightning, tearing the cloud sea to enter the cold and dark outer space. He had stayed in the Glorious Amethyst Star for nearly a month. Since Zi Yao had left, he had to go into outer space the second time.

Sitting indifferently in the war chariot, Shi Yan watched the vast starry sea. His Soul Consciousness was blurry, as the thoughts in his mind started to scatter. He sat like that while his consciousness floated to somewhere.

The amethyst war chariot didn't require his soul energy to move. It was flying at lightning speed according to the set route.

The Glorious Amethyst Star and the Purgatory Star weren't too far away from each other. At this speed, it would take around half a month to reach the Purgatory Star and join the training in the so-called Extreme Purgatory Field.

Flying in the middle of the endless starry universe, he suddenly felt lonely. His tough mentality couldn't help but get softer.

The Raging Flame Star Area was endlessly vast. In this universe, he was just an outsider who had no friends or family, nothing familiar, or a lover to yearn for.

Everything about this place seemed to distance him. He was drifting alone in this star area. Instinctively, he recalled Bao Ao and Jie Ji.

'How are you guys doing?'

Those two experts of the Demon Clan had come here with him to save their clan and make it stronger. They had given up everything to enter outer space in the hope of finding a solution.

At this moment, he'd found the solution for the energy shortage



issue of the Grace Mainland.

However, he didn't know whether Bao Ao and Jie Ji were still alive or not. He had run away discreetly with Fergie. Since Bao Ao and Jie Jie had to stay and be involved in the battle, they would possibly become sacrifices.

Shi Yan was begrudging. Looking at the stars in the sky, he forced a smile. "Don't blame me. Even if I stayed, I would be of no help. Whether you are alive or not, when I get back to the Grace Mainland, I will give the Demon Clan a place to live and grow. I will bring them out of the Grace Mainland."

He had never forgotten the reason he left his homeland. For his family, his friends, and his people in the Grace Mainland, he had to hurry up to find a safe life star in the Raging Flame Star Area and bring his people there.

The Glorious Amethyst Star was a good place, but the premise was that he had to solve the hidden trouble named Ao Gera.

A cold smile hung on the corner of his mouth. Shi Yan pondered for a while and then touched his glabella.

A soul thought run directly to the heaven flame tier in his soul altar, targeting the Vermilion Bird True Flame. "How long does it take from our homeland to the Raging Flame Star Area? Oh, I mean, when we use the amethyst war chariot. Give me an exact number."

"Ah," the Vermilion Bird True Flame was startled. It was anxious for a while before replying. "It will take a long time. At least more than ten years. When I left my homeland and followed the aura of the Vermilion Bird, running to this place, it took me more than one hundred years. If this war chariot runs at its max speed, it will take around twenty years to return to our homeland. But it's in the case everything goes smoothly."

Shi Yan's eyes shrank. "Such a long time?"

"At least twenty years," the Vermilion Bird True Flame affirmed. "If you have bad luck, it would take one hundred years. It's normal though."

"Why do you say so?"

"From our homeland to the Raging Flame Star Area, we need to cross so many cold and isolated star areas. Those star areas have no living beings or life stars. They've been drained long ago. However, formidable dangers are hiding there. Take one step wrong, and your soul will be shattered. Even though I'm in the soul form, I had encountered so many perilous events along the way. If you use this amethyst war chariot, when you enter a perilous area, your chariot will explode. And you, you will be destroyed by the tremendous power of outer space."

Shi Yan's brows slammed together tightly.

He knew the Vermilion Bird True Flame didn't fabricate things. Since he had been in the Raging Flame Star Area, he had a precise perception of the common dangers that could be seen in outer space. He knew there would be many hazardous places like the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field.

And, to make it worse, those places were situated on the main routes. People had to cross them to reach their destination.

If they were careless for even a moment, the dangers in those areas would crush their soul altar instantly.

He suddenly quieted down, not knowing whether he should laugh or cry, as the distance to his homeland seemed to be out of reach. The plan he had seemed impossible for now.

"If you want to go back, you can use a very simple way. You don't need to travel all the way." The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame sent him its thought from his Sea of Consciousness.

Among the heaven flames, the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame didn't have the highest level, but it was ranked the third,

which spoke for the fact of how mighty it used to be. In most cases, his perception of the situation was much better than the other flames.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened a little bit. "Which simple method do you mention?"

"If your understanding of space power can reach a profound realm, you can make a space bridge that connects your homeland and where you are. It's like a space tunnel." The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame regarded him. "As long as you can sense that area and you know the general location, with a better understanding of space power, you can cross layers of spaces. It's just like when you built the Teleport Formation, you can connect the Grace Mainland and the Raging Flame Star Area directly!"

Shi Yan was struck, as light shot out from his eyes in amazement.

Yeah!

The Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame had given him a simple solution, and it was the most likely to be successful. Space power was one of the most magical powers Upanishad in this era. People who cultivated this power Upanishad would face no difficult with space connection.

However, the preconditions were that his perception of space power Upanishad should reach a profound realm, and his competence should be formidable.

Shi Yan considered this possibility for a while and then cracked a smile. The most difficult problem that had troubled him seemed to be solved easily.

He calmed down, while the amethyst war chariot continued moving like a wild thunderbolt.

On this day, as he was trying to perceive the mysteries of space power with his eyes closed, he suddenly woke up, his face astounded.

A massive Moon Star appeared in front of him. The moonlight was radiating shinningly like running water diverging in so many streams, entering outer space and illuminating the life stars around it.

It was one of the moons he had seen when he was in the Glorious Amethyst Star. Together with two other moons in the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, it brought light to eleven life stars. Its moonlight was bright and pure, keeping those life stars from the perpetual darkness. They would immerse in the clear but cold moonlight forever.

The moon in his eyes was round and big, as if it had filled both of his eyes. He was approaching the closest moon to him.

As he was getting close to the halo of that moon, he felt so refreshed and comfortable, as if a stream of cool river water was pouring on his head, chilling his entire body. He almost shouted with delight, as he felt so good.

Stretching both his arms, Shi Yan closed his eyes, starting to concentrate his thought to create a strong bond with his soul altar, which would help him gather more moonlight.

Both the Solar Star and the Moon Star were part of the immense sea of stars. To the Star power Upanishad, understanding the moon and the sun was required for advancing further.

In the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, he had used the Sun Original Essence to gain his own knowledge of how the Solar Star was formed and evolved. That was why he could collect the flaming solar energy and control the meteorolites in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, which helped him trouble the space pirates, whose realms were much higher than his.

Since the Sun was a part of stars in the sky, this encounter was a motivation for him to ascend his Star power Upanishad.

Likewise, the shining moon was a part of the stars as well. The

perception of the formation and development of the moon, along with the varieties of the moon power were a part of the knowledge of the Star power Upanishad.

Shi Yan stayed still on the amethyst war chariot. His soul altar slightly trembled, as the Seal of Star power Upanishad was stimulated.

Shi Yan closed his eyes, relaxing his whole body to immerse in the water-like moonlight. He calmed his mind to learn and feel the clear but cold moonlight. He could realize how the energy was changing on that moon.

In his heart, his Sea of Consciousness, and his soul altar, an image of the moon appeared like its reflection in water. It floated while releasing the faint moon energy.

His aura became deep and seemingly ever-lasting. There was also a feeble beam of moonlight in his aura.

Gradually, the moonlight creeping on his body seemed to turn into real water, magically seeping into his body through his pores. An immense white halo appeared on his body, looking inexplicable and magnificent.

In this isolated outer space, under the shining moon, an amethyst war chariot hovered still like a massive purple crystal.

A man with stretched arms stood in the war chariot, as if he wanted to hug the shining moon. His face was passionate, as if he were possessed. Only the faint moon aura was seeping out of his body little by little.

Time seemed to stop at this moment. Under the bright moon, it looked a little bit strange.

More than ten one-thousand-meters long battleships made of bizarre white bones lined up in a spear formation, flying slowly by the moon.

Warriors with tremendous power guarded on each battleship.

Many warriors were moving back and forth on the battleships. They were talking and laughing with each other; some were gambling or throwing their leftovers into outer space, making this place their garbage dump.

Many warriors on the battleships noticed Shi Yan's weird posture under the moonlight. They mocked and laughed at him with disdainful eyes. No one paid him any attention.

The battleships slowly came close to the amethyst war chariot, reaching ten thousand meters away.

Shortly, it was unknown why, but Shi Yan's amethyst battleship suddenly rippled with waves of purple light. Those waves carried sharp blue spots which expanded slowly. The feeble energy aura amplified billions of times in just a blink!

A cold, brutal female voice arose from the leading battleships. "Move away from that amethyst war chariot. Quickly! It's the Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion! Damn it!"

Her shout echoed to every battleship. The experts on all the battleships paled as if they had met a spooky ghost. They immediately urged their battleship to stay away from Shi Yan's amethyst war chariot.

What she called 'Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion' seemed to come from Shi Yan's amethyst war chariot.

# Chapter 761: Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion

---

Shi Yan suddenly woke up as a terrible tremor was emitted from his amethyst war chariot. Instantly, the amethyst chariot cracked with so many fine slits, while a tremendously destructive power was about to burst off!

This terrifying energy was much fiercer than the Volcano Crystal Nucleus Zi Yao had used. It seemed to be able to blow off an entire life star! Inexplicably evil!

As though he had encountered spooky ghosts, Shi Yan didn't have any time to think. Space power flew out of his soul altar, while the energy in his entire body was boosted to the acme instantly.

Shi Yan's Space power Upanishad and the energy of outer space had created a marvelous resonance. At this moment, multiple fine space slits appeared near him, with five-colored lights sticking out.

Waves of space energy rippled in front of his eyes. He had urged all energies in his body, which made his body shrivel in just a blink. The third Sky of Rampage Realm was activated. His negative energy was urged, as Shi Yan recklessly stormed into layers of space splits. He wildly dashed towards the Moon Star in front of him.

The earth-shaking energy tremor under his feet had been stimulated to the max. The explosion that could tear the whole sky burst off abruptly!

In that instance, dazzling light beams shot out everywhere like the sharpest sabers.

The shockwave created by the explosion moved at a shockingly fast speed. Even Shi Yan, who had crossed the space slits, saw them getting shattered. A space energy flood that naked eye could see

furiously spurted out of the slits.

Light bloomed, as if the sun or the moon was exploding. Billions of fierce light beams smashed the space slits behind him into so many fragments. That exploding energy was rumblingly bombarding behind his back.

Shortly, his back was torn into a mess, his dark gold bones getting exposed.

Shi Yan tried his best to urge the energy in his entire body. His soul altar was still spinning fast as he shot towards the Moon Star like a fading shadow.

The furious energy had burst off his back, waist, and nape. His tenacious body couldn't resist the mighty power of the shockwave. His soul was trembling, as he was intensely exhausted. He was put in a coma shortly, with a darkness swallowing his mind.

Under the Moon Star, the intimidating energy expanded like a vast sea, while light beams swept through the entire area. The battleships couldn't endure this brutal, formidable energy.

The battleship closest to the core of the explosion was fragmented in just a blink of an eye. Warriors from different races who were gambling and drinking on the battleship were turned into powder immediately, leaving nothing.

Even experts at King God Realm with God Bodies and God Domain couldn't escape the shockwaves. Although their God Bodies were tougher than rock or iron, they were still bleeding badly. Blocks of flesh were peeled off their bones, turning them into bloody skeletons. Only their soul altar could escape in that instant.

A brutal, wild shout arose from the leading battleship as a woman in black clothes appeared in the center of the explosion. She had an appealing body, accompanied by a frighteningly scarred face.



Waves of crystal-like energy rippled from her God Domain, strongly changing the principles of heaven and earth, creating a flood current which guided the energy generated from the explosion to one side. With a somber face, she continually urged her supernatural powers, pulling the tremendous energy created by the explosion towards the immense darkness.

The woman in black with a scarred face shivered in anger. She looked as ferocious as a wailing ghost, with indignation sparkling in her eyes.

Under her power, the furious energy flood generated from the Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion was pushed aside, saving the other battleships from this fatal attack.

Only the first exploded battleship was now a total ruin. Besides the bloody skeletons in that area, soul altars were floating here and there, as a resentful aura shot out from them.

The impact of the Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion had paled the warriors who were lucky enough to not get involved in this. They gritted their teeth with blood-red eyes, looking at the Moon Star like a pack of wolves.

This formidable explosion had smashed a one-thousand-meters-long battleship. Several hundred warriors at different levels were killed. Around twenty King God Realm experts had lost their God Bodies, leaving only their soul altars. Many materials carried on that ship were now mere powder, becoming a part of the space debris wandering in the dark universe.

The smell of blood permeated the area, which was so nauseating. Although they had lost their God Bodies, their soul altars were alright. Their God Souls hissed and cried mournfully like wailing ghosts. All of a sudden, they flew rapidly towards the Moon Star.

The woman in black was still floating in the center of the explosion. Her dark green eyes were as cold as sabers. A wild, furious murderous aura shot out from her, sending shivers down

the other warriors' spines.

The woman wore a cold visage. Each scar on her face looked like a small snake crawling under her skin. A flame of anger seemed to be ignited in her heart, as she looked ready to erupt at any minute like a volcano.

"Ma'am," A handsome Third Sky of King God Realm expert in heavy dark iron armor kneeled down in the void. "That man was sitting in an amethyst war chariot."

The woman in black shouted ruthlessly like demons hissing and crying in Hell. Her voice pierced people eardrums. "I want him alive!" She roared through her gritted teeth.

The good-looking man in black iron armor had a heavy smell of blood about him, as if he had been soaked in the sea of blood for years. His armor had many blood stains as well. He nodded, then shot out like a bloody light, heading towards the shining Moon without saying anything.

On the barren Moon, the ground was silver, like some kind of metal, shining with a magical halo.

Shi Yan with his torn flesh body had almost turned into a bloody skeleton. His vessels and tendons were all broken, and some of his dark gold bones were also cracked. If it were a normal person, he would have died immediately.

However, his vitality was still there as he was lying quietly on the icy cold metal ground. His eyes were blurry while he was bearing the utmost pain to adjust his body's condition.

The amethyst war chariot suddenly exploded, creating the shockwave that could even crush a small-sized life star. Such a powerful explosion was something he had never seen before. Also, he had never thought that an explosion could reach such a level.

If he hadn't known the Space power Upanishad, and he hadn't urged all of his energy, which even hurt his soul to create the space

slit, he would have turned into dust by now.

However, even if he had escaped rapidly, his body was almost crushed under the shockwave of that explosion. His soul altar was also damaged badly. At this moment, his consciousness was blurred, and he couldn't even rebuild his thoughts.

While he was still muddling and couldn't respond, he had fallen into that furious energy impact.

Shadows of ghosts roaring in the soul altar crossed the sea of cold moonlight, appearing in his view.

Those ghost shadows were the God Souls of the warriors who had lost their God Bodies. They were riding their soul altars as if they were riding horses, appearing one by one in his view.

The God Souls of the warriors acted as if someone had killed their parents. They were extremely resentful as they showed themselves one by one. The soul altar spun, as they were about to urge the God Domain to bombard him.

Shi Yan was frightened.

A hunky man wearing heavy black iron armor suddenly intervened, shouting. "Our boss wants him alive!"

A stream of dark energy was fired from his arms. Just like a gloomy long river descending from the sky, it covered Shi Yan's bloody body entirely.

Under that gloomy energy's effect, Shi Yan was lifted, without any room to wiggle. Even his Immortal Martial Spirit stopped healing his flesh and bones. Soon, he was brought to that man.

The God Souls sat neatly on their soul altars, looking at him just like a pack of hungry wolves. They hated that they could gnaw at his bones, crush him and swallow him wholly.

Under the binding of that dark river, Shi Yan couldn't move at all. He was forcefully dragged out of the Moon Star and brought to

the affected area of the previous explosion.

Although his body's functions were all damaged, Shi Yan could see fragments of the battleship, along with pieces of bones and blood floating around. He could even smell the thick scent of blood.

Flows of energy that naked eyes couldn't see quietly surged and seeped into his body quietly.

Those were the beams of Essence Qi of the warriors who got crushed to death in that explosion. His Mysterious Martial Spirit was taking them in using a method that no one could detect. The energy was absorbed into his body, filling his acupuncture points with negative energy. The brutal, desperate, and resentful auras in this area had become so sharp and clear that they were able to affect people's mind.

As he floated in the dark river, his acupuncture points automatically attracted the remnants of the energy, which made him understand their feelings before they died.

They were scared and desperate. They missed this world when they were about to die. And, they were extremely indignant!

Shi Yan squeezed a forced smile inwardly. He looked at his body, which was bleeding badly. At this moment, he couldn't say anything.

"Not died yet, good! Very good!" A savage female voice echoed not too far from him. In the next moment, the woman in black appeared in his view. This woman grabbed something in the void, and a flow of mysterious energy intruded Shi Yan's head.

His soul altar didn't listen to him anymore. It trembled and flew out of his head, floating alone above his mutilated body.

He had so many wounds that went deep to the bones. Broken bones were stuck into his internal organs, while his tendons and vessels were cut. After his God Soul skimmed over his body, the

damages he had were reflected clearly in his soul.

Shi Yan couldn't help but beam a wry smile. His God Soul sent him a distressed feeling. He gradually calmed down when his soul altar was still moving.

'Ah!'

At the first glance itself, his God Soul was shaken on seeing the woman's appearance. He thought he had seen a wailing ghost from Hell, making him feel uncomfortable.

"Ah!"

The woman in black forcefully dragged his soul altar out of his head, her eyes focused on it. Suddenly, she exhaled in surprise for a second. Then, she shouted abruptly. "All of you get out of here! Now!"

Many resentful warriors wanted to storm over. As they hadn't had time to check Shi Yan's soul altar, her shout made their soul tremble. They all hastened to flee away.

There was no one near her and Shi Yan. No experts dared to come close. This woman was clearly the commander of those battleships.

The dark green eyes of the woman in black sparkled with a strange light while they were gazing at Shi Yan's soul altar, astounded.

# Chapter 762: Scarlet Mark!

---

Shi Yan's soul altar was apparently different from the others. His soul altar also had three tiers. However, the second tier was divided into three sections.

Star, Space, and Death and Life power Upanishads were circulating in one section, while the other section held several heaven flames, which had formed a real shape. The last section was a dark place that looked like a black hole. No aura or energy fluctuation was detected there, giving people an inexplicably mysterious feeling.

Shi Yan's God Soul was floating above the soul altar. At this moment, his God Soul had turned into a hollow figure of himself. A miniature version of him, around ten times smaller, was sitting neatly like a gloomy shadow on the soul altar of powers Upanishad, heaven flames, and something mysterious.

The shadow of his God Soul was as faint as a ghost. A magical mark appeared in its glabella.

It was a scarlet mark created by five clusters of blood clouds.

This mark used to appear right at his glabella. When he had condensed the mysterious section of the soul altar, that blood-cloud mark, the Inner World Five Devils, and the Soul Gathering Pearl had fused into one, as the mark disappeared from his glabella. Together, they created the mysterious section in his soul altar.

Turned out that the mark had never disappeared, but imprinted in his God Soul as the prominent mark on his God Soul's forehead.

Five clusters of blood clouds arrayed in a pentagon, which looked like an evil, peculiar sea of blood, portrayed deep in his God Soul.

What the woman in black was gazing at was the scarlet mark on Shi Yan's God Soul. Her dark green eyes showed a complicated

emotion, as she was immersing in some perplexing memories.

Shi Yan didn't dare to act rashly. He could feel an energy aura from this woman which made his soul feel empty. He believed that if she wanted to kill him, it would be like a piece of cake.

Shi Yan didn't know of the mark's existence on the forehead of his God Soul or the fact that the woman in black was gazing at that scarlet mark.

After a while, the mysterious woman in black seemed to wake up. She looked at him strangely. "Where are you from?"

Shi Yan was surprised. He was baffled for a while before sending his soul thought. "Can I return to my body first?"

"Do you think you can use your body again?" The woman in black curled her lips, her face mocking. "Even if it's the God Body of a King God Realm warrior, with such damages, it will never be recovered fully. Can you do that?"

"Yes," Shi Yan sent his soul thought.

His Soul Consciousness flickered. Shi Yan found that the force subduing his soul altar had retreated like the low tide. He gained control of his soul altar again.

The soul altar floated and turned into a bunch of lights, disappearing into his body.

Shi Yan opened his eyes, feeling the utmost pain in his body. He lied on his one side in the void, floating and trying to lift his head to look at the woman in black. He squeezed a forced smile. "I didn't want to hurt you guys."

Nodding her head, the woman in black regarded him indifferently. "I can see that. You know nothing. The other wanted to make you a sacrificial pawn. That person didn't want to spare your life."

Shi Yan's eyes were cold, as rage was rolling in his heart.

He could confirm that the one who had touched this amethyst war chariot could estimate precisely that he would stop by the Moon Star. Also, that one knew the woman in black would pass by this area. That stealthy person had installed something terrible in his war chariot and triggered it.

That person's purpose was to kill him and damage that woman's battleships at the same time.

This was absolutely a big wild scheme. Someone was having so many plans to set him up and that woman in black.

"First, if it happened as what the other had planned," the woman in black was still calm, "if the Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion had completely burst off, you would have died. Nothing could have been left remaining. Some of my battleships would be crushed, and I would have some big trouble. Since you've come using the amethyst war chariot, the chariot of Princess Zi Yao, I would pour this debt on Zi Yao, making her pay a big price for it..." Shi Yan nodded, but his neck was torn painfully. "Yeah, someone wants to trigger the grudge between you and Princess Zi Yao, making you and her stand on the opposite sides, which would make you take revenge on her."

"Who is that?" The woman in black mumbled, then asked all of a sudden. "Who are you? Where are you from? How do you relate to Zi Yao? Why did you come here?"

The woman in black seemed to be concerned about Shi Yan's identity more. A gleam of surprise crossed her green eyes.

"Ah..." Shi Yan was bewildered. He arranged his thoughts and then answered. "I'm from a low-level continent. I've been a member of Princess Zi Yao's cortege not for a long time. I'm holding the Purgatory Token Princess granted me. I'm going to the Extreme Purgatory Field to train myself. My name is Shi Yan."

"A low-level continent?" A strange light sparkled from her eyes. "Are you sure?"



"I'm sure," Shi Yan nodded. "In my continent, the strongest warriors are only at the True God Realm. Before, I came to the Raging Flame Star Area, I had never left my continent. As I've gotten here, I got to know so many mysteries of the vast universe."

The woman in black looked at him for a while but didn't say anything. After a long time of staying quiet, she groaned something in her throat. Shi Yan couldn't hear it.

"I'm so sorry. I didn't want to see this, either." Shi Yan tried to move his limbs in pain. He suddenly felt his body recovery starting again. His broken tendons and vessels slightly moved, as they were about to be connected.

The woman in black got lost in her thoughts, not paying attention to his body condition. After a while, she spoke up again. "Who do you suspect?"

"A man called Ao Gera. I heard... he's Ao Gu Duo's nephew. Ao Gu Dou favors him a lot. The Purgatory Token in my hand was supposed to be his. Perhaps he has a grudge because of it. He wants to kill me," Shi Yan answered without any hesitation.

This is his assumption, and he believed it was the truth.

He asked himself who he had provoked in the Glorious Amethyst Star. He didn't feel wicked intentions from anybody else but Ao Gera.

"Ao Gera, Ao Gu Duo's nephew..." The woman in black mumbled. Her dark green eyes sparkled as she harrumphed coldly. "This kid doesn't treasure his life."

Shi Yan was scared. He could feel the brutal murderous intentions of this woman. Her murderous thought seemed to be as real as a fire that could burn everything.

He suddenly realized that Ao Gera had caused a big trouble.

"You must have had a marvelous encounter, right?" The woman in black pondered for a while and then asked suddenly. "Your God

Soul has a scarlet mark on the glabella. Where did you get that magical mark?" Her eyes became evilly sharp, as if Shi Yan had to give her a proper answer, or she would kill him brutally. She would never give him the second chance.

Shi Yan was baffled.

After a while, he condensed a beam of Soul Consciousness and found the mark, which had disappeared before, on his glabella. However, this strange mark faded, and was about to disappear after the soul altar returned to the Sea of Consciousness.

"I got it in our continent. Because of my special cultivating method, I didn't know I had it. Until now, I don't even know what it is. I don't know what it can do and what it represents." Pausing for a while, he looked at the woman in black without blinking. He vaguely realized that the reason why this woman hadn't killed him yet could be because of the mark. He should try to ask for more information.

The woman in black didn't answer. She still gazed at him, as if she wanted to detect whether he was lying to her or not.

Shi Yan didn't dare to look around. He contemplated while looking at her, but he didn't say anything.

After a while, the woman snorted. "You're lucky today."

Afterward, she didn't pay attention to Shi Yan anymore, flying away suddenly. When she approached her subordinates, she shouted. "He's going to the Extreme Purgatory Field. You take him with us. Put him in prison."

The buff man at the Third Sky of King God Realm in heavy dark armor slightly changed his visage. "Ma'am, he almost destroyed us all..."

"Hmm?" The woman in black frowned.

The husky man in black armor shut his mouth. He flew over and dragged Shi Yan with him into the leading bone battleship. He

threw him into a dark cell, speaking ruthlessly. "Kid, although I don't know why my boss didn't torture you to death, you won't live for long. As soon as my boss changes her mind, I will make you taste all kinds of extreme tortures in this world. I will take revenge for my brothers."

This cell had no light, so it was completely dark, such that Shi Yan couldn't even see his own fingers. The cell was protected by a fierce energy magnetic field. It looked like if Shi Yan touched it, it would blow him off instantly.

"Hey, can I ask something? Who are you guys?" Shi Yan asked while frowning in the dark cell.

"Bloody Legion of Ma'am Leona," The man in black armor harrumphed. He disappeared shortly, leaving no other words.

Shi Yan lay defenselessly in the dark cell. His face changed dramatically as a respectful feeling arose in his heart.

Bloody Legion, Ma'am Leona...

He knew the other's identity now.

The Dark Firmament Divine Nation had five great feudal vassals ruling different areas. They were quite powerful, as they were the extreme Five under Du Tian Ji.

The five great feudal vassals were all mighty, expanding the territory of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. They were the legends, the formidable existences at the Original God Realm.

Only one woman stayed in that group of five, and the Blood Legion was under her command. In the Raging Flame Star Area, they had caused so many bloody cases. Compared to Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo, they were much more savage. They had destroyed so many life stars.

The evil reputation of this woman echoed around the Raging Flame Star Area. Even the Underworld League and the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce didn't dare to fight face to face with her.

Du Tian Ji trusted her a lot. She had more of his favors than the other princes and princesses. She was a bloody saber of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, which could slaughter everywhere.

This woman was called Leona, the 'Bloody Night Brutal Devil' female butcher, the leader of the five great feudal vassals.

## Chapter 763: Demon Blood molds the body!

---

In the dark cell where Shi Yan couldn't even see his own fingers, he was lying still, relaxing his soul to sense the changes of his body. A drop of scarlet Immortal Demon Blood broke inside his vessel. A blood-red halo expanded, turning into a magical recovery energy that flooded his bones, tendons, and flesh.

The speedy recovery of the Immortal Rebirth Secret depended both on the Immortal Martial Spirit and the Immortal Demon Blood. The more Demon Blood he had, the faster his recovery could be.

More than ten drops of Immortal Demon Blood turned into a pure fountain of recovery energy, murmuring in his entire body like his blood. Wherever the Immortal Demon Blood flowed by, his broken tendons and vessels received an enormous vitality, growing back vigorously.

Each of his tendons was many times tougher than cattle tendons, moving slowly and rhythmically. A bloody light shimmered at the cut section and turned viscous, connecting the vessels and tendons.

His fragmented bones grew back under the effect of the Immortal Demon Blood, creating a thick layer of hard bones. After that, his bones could gather the energy from his blood and flesh, and the pure energy from the Essence Qi ancient tree to work on the bone layers, making it tough like iron miraculously.

Each block of muscles in his body was covered in a blood-red liquid, which was full of vitality. His muscles were growing vigorously.

Lying on the ground, he didn't think about anything as he relaxed his mind and soul, just letting the Immortal Demon Blood work to restore his body.

If anyone saw him at this moment, they would find that he was covered in a shimmering blood halo. Veins and tendons in his entire body were shivering, while cracking sounds were echoing from his bones. It looked like his blood and flesh were filled with air. Every cell of his was revived.

The pain and fatigue he felt during the recovery process by the Immortal Demon Blood and the Immortal Rebirth Secret faded away.

After an unknown period, Shi Yan gradually woke up, feeling so weak. All of a sudden, he paled. However, not long after that, his eyes lit up as he cracked a bizarre smile in the dark.

The ruthless power of the Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion had crushed one of Leona's battleships entirely. Several hundred warriors died on the spot, including at least ten King God Realm experts. Since they hadn't escaped, their bodies were destroyed, leaving only their soul altars.

After Leona's guard had dragged him to the center of the explosion, the Essence Qi of the dead warriors had flooded his acupuncture points while he was talking to her.

The way those flows of energy had been gathered and poured into his body was mysteriously discreet. Even Leona, an expert at the Original God Realm – the leading expert among the five great feudal vassals of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, couldn't detect any anomaly. She didn't know what he had gotten in his bloody pathetic situation.

Abundant energy rolled torrentially in his acupuncture points. Using his Soul Consciousness to check, Shi Yan could see the mysterious vortexes wildly spinning in his acupuncture points.

Amazing changes were happening in each of his acupuncture points, as the vortexes were rotating rapidly to extract the negative energy. From the center of the vortexes, bits of mysterious energy would appear continually. Once formed, beams of mysterious

energy from the vortexes would fly out and become the source of greatly useful energy for his whole body.

Each of his seven hundred and twenty acupuncture points in his body seemed to turn into a mysterious world. They were filtering the Essence Qi of the dead and turning it into his mysterious but marvelous energy.

He lied on the ground still. However, he could feel the earth-shaking changes in his acupuncture points. It was like each of those tiny worlds had become the extension of his consciousness, a new world his soul could control.

Seven hundred and twenty new worlds hidden in his acupuncture points had the mysterious power to refill all of his energy.

The negative energy generated during the filtration process had flooded the acupuncture points and expanded them continually.

As his Soul Consciousness was moving in his acupuncture points, he seemed to be having some hallucination. He had become the only lord of seven hundred and twenty bizarre worlds in his acupuncture points. He could hold everything in his hand. He even felt that the mysterious mini-worlds in his acupuncture points seemed to be real.

They all were waiting for him to explore, feel, and harvest the mysteries they carried.

The dense negative mood rippled in the lake in his heart, generating brutal, desperate, fearful, bloodthirsty, and resentful feelings. The negative moods were like a dark abyss that could drag his soul into it, pushing him into insanity.

Since he had experience when this happened, he immediately held his breath and kept his mind from overthinking, maintaining a quiet and pure soul altar.

The icy cold air of the Ice Cold Flame changed in his thought. It

quietly expanded, turning into a bright silver cold air that enveloped his God Soul.

The extremely cold aura stormed into his God Soul. His consciousness that was trembling due to the negative mood calmed down gradually. All of the vicious thoughts seemed to be frozen, preventing him from entering bedevilment.

His Sea of Consciousness seethed as it was supplemented. Flows of Soul Consciousness got longer and purer thanks to the heaven flame.

Shi Yan's God Soul trembled, as his soul altar spun like a windmill and accelerated steadily.

It seemed like Death and Life, Space, and Star power Upanishads in his power Upanishad tier had been trimmed and separated clearly. At the same time, a magical energy fluctuation expanded from this tier, making a marvelous connection with the ripples in his Sea of Consciousness. His soul was baffled, as he suddenly seemed to have a deep perception.

It seemed the cold moonlight of that moon star had connected the Sun Original Essence, the same way when he was in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field.

At this moment, he didn't even recognize himself. His God Soul seemed to have turned into a wandering ghost in the starry sky, taking a trip around to sense the heaven and earth energy, and the basis of different power Upanishads in the world.

Under this unconscious condition, his shattered body recovered at speed naked eyes could see.

Tendons and veins in his body were moving like worms. They wiggled and connected with each other, creating a complex drawing of vessels in his body.

Blocks of flesh and each of his muscles were filled with the mysterious energy. With the resonance of the muscles, his body



bulged into a stocky look. He gradually became as tough as the most rigid stone and iron. Shi Yan could feel a bursting power in his body.

Bones in his entire body echoed cracking sounds as pungent, viscous substances oozed out of his pores. Those were the contaminants his Immortal Demon Blood had extracted from his body.

When a warrior ascended, he would take in a large amount of heaven and earth energy. Energy from the Divine Crystals, the broken Essence Qi ancient tree of the dead, and pellets all had the magical energy that was useful to the flesh body.

However, no matter what energy it was, it wasn't really clean, as it always contained dregs.

When a warrior refined his body, he must discharge these dregs out to purify his body. That was how he could facilitate the energies to move faster in his vessels.

Discharging the contaminants in the body was something the warriors had to do regularly. At any stage of cultivation, as long as a warrior still practiced his martial path, taking in energy from heaven and earth or from pellets would always generate dregs and contaminants.

Those dregs of energy would affect the flow of energy circulating in the body, which would create leaks. When the body wasn't clear enough, it wouldn't be tenacious, and external energies could seep into the body through these leaks.

The main activity in quenching the body was to discharge the dregs and contaminants.

When the Immortal Rebirth Secret rebuilt his body, one of the fundamental effects was eliminating the dregs in his body.

However, after each time of cleaning the body, new dregs would be generated when the warrior broke through the new realm or

took in more energy. Hence, it would affect the circulation of energy in the body.

Thus, after so many times of quenching the body, a warrior could make his body tougher and more tenacious. At the same time, discharging the dregs was also necessary.

Those stinky viscous substances were the dregs of the body, a challenge to make his body more flexible and firmer.

While he hadn't recognized it, the Immortal Demon Blood and the Immortal Rebirth Secret had worked together to wash his entire body. They reduced the leaks, which prevented the external energies from seeping through his body.

Inside the dark cell.

Shi Yan lied quietly. His soul felt empty, as he was falling in a magical condition of learning power Upanishads.

His body had recovered, and was in a marvelous quenching process.

What had benefited both his soul and body was the mysterious energy overflowing from his acupuncture points. The mysterious energy filling his entire body had not only helped him recover his body, but also refined his blood and flesh like refining secret treasures.

As his soul was resisting the negative moods, it became tranquil, using the Upanishad perception to avoid falling into bedevilment.

However, his soul hadn't been benefitted much compared to the previous time.

After fighting with Yin Spirit of the Dark Clan, a new section that looked like the black hole in his soul altar had flown out and swallowed that man's soul altar, which made his soul altar sublimate. That flow of energy had similar effects as his Mysterious Martial Spirit.

The only difference between them was that the Mysterious Martial Spirit absorbed the energy of the dead, which was the body's energy, while the black hole-like soul altar section aimed at the soul, devouring them to create the energy which sublimated his soul altar.

Although they were two different methods, they both brought him great benefits, especially to sublimate his soul altar, providing a major help to the power Upanishads and heaven flames. At the same time, his God Soul also received the pure energy.

Staying in this completely dark cell, Shi Yan wasn't disturbed, and nobody knew what he was doing. At this moment, he was temporarily forgotten.

Even Shi Yan's mind was empty. He hadn't recognized the changes happening in his body.

At this moment, a shadow that blended with the darkness appeared next to him in the cell.

A pair of dark green eyes gazed at him silently. She didn't say anything, just stood as if she were a part of the dark – the soul of darkness.

# Chapter 764: The dawn of blood changing

---

A series of fierce explosion reverberated. The battleship trembled as if it had halted somewhere. Then, another rumbling explosion resounded.

Shi Yan woke up all of a sudden in his dark cell, his eyes shining like bright stars.

His body had recovered fully. No wound could be found on his bones, tendons, and flesh. Furthermore, his body had reached another level of tenaciousness.

In the dark cell, he couldn't see his body, so he could only use the Soul Consciousness to sense. Closing his eyes, Shi Yan observed quietly, a grin forming on his face gradually. His grinned then cracked into a loud, insane laughter, echoing in the cell.

He felt that this body quenching process had brought him unimaginable advantages.

Thoughts flickered in his mind. His body was as tough as iron or great stone, that nothing could crush.

He didn't know what the God Body was like, but he thought that even if it were the God Body of a King God Realm expert, their unbreakable body would be only similar to his.

However, what made him laugh insanely weren't only the changes in his body. There was also his Essence Qi ancient tree and the new Immortal Demon Blood he had just condensed.

Experiencing the unexpected Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion, he had been hurt severely. However, with the aid from his Mysterious Martial Spirit, not only had Shi Yan recovered fully, but he had also gained big.

His Essence Qi ancient tree was full. Each crystal branch was filled with pure energy, shining like jades. Each detail of the branches was made of pure Essence Qi, carrying the surging,

torrential energy.

He wasn't sure about his realm, but in this condition, he was sure that his Essence Qi had reached the Peak of True God Realm.

In other words, his Essence Qi had reached a new height, which was enough to help him break through the new realm.

And, he had the Immortal Demon Blood.

Rebuilding the body had cost him ten drops of Immortal Demon Blood. He used to think that it was his loss this time. However, using his Soul Consciousness to check, he found that the Immortal Demon Blood drops he now had were fifty!

Fifty drops of Immortal Demon Blood! He had never seen this situation before. It seemed the Essence Qi from the dead had helped him tremendously. After it had filled his Essence Qi ancient tree, it helped him condense more Immortal Demon Blood.

In the Grace Mainland, killing hundreds of Sky Realm or Spirit Realm warriors could only help him generate several drops of Immortal Demon Blood.

The Essence Qi emitted after the True God Realm and King God Realm warriors died was much more than the previous two realms. As a result, Shi Yan couldn't press down his excitement.

When Bao Ao and Jie Ji told him that he could use the Immortal Demon Blood to replace his own blood, Shi Yan thought it would be impossible.

Today, he suddenly had an idea that since the Raging Flame Star Area had so many True God Realm and King God Realm warriors, his blood changing activity wouldn't be much of a problem.

Using the Immortal Demon Blood to replace his blood, he would reach a new height. As it was what Bao Ao and Jie Ji had shared with him, he believed the other two didn't just babble.

As he was the man who bore the Demon Blood, he was clearer

about its mysterious and mighty feature than the other two. If he could fill his body with Immortal Demon Blood one day, Shi Yan believed that he would have a tremendous transformation.

Slowly sitting up, his eyes brightened. Shi Yan hesitated for a while, then shot out a drop of scarlet Immortal Demon Blood from his fingertip.

A thought popped up in his mind. He sent his soul energy into that drop of Immortal Demon Blood and urged it with his secret technique. A face of a man appeared in his God Soul. It was Shi Jian.

The Immortal Demon Blood ignited. A magical energy fluctuation shot out from it, tore through space, and flew rapidly in outer space at an unimaginable speed.

It seemed he had formed a connection with Shi Jian. However, this connection was vague, as if it had encountered many layers of hindrance.

Not long after that, a drop of his Immortal Demon Blood was burned completely, leaving no energy remaining.

Shi Yan couldn't create the complete connection with Shi Jian or sense his Great Grandfather in the Grace Mainland.

Shi Yan wasn't distressed. However, his eyes lit up as he laughed dryly.

Of course, a drop of Immortal Demon Blood couldn't cross the endless space through several star areas to reach the Grace Mainland.

What if it weren't just a drop of Immortal Demon Blood? If he used more than ten drops of Immortal Demon Blood, would he be able to locate Shi Jian's location, his situation, or even... create a soul connection with him.

He grinned, confirming this assumption himself.

Shi Yan thought that the Nine Serenities Soul Devouring Flame's suggestion was absolutely possible.

Once his Space power Upanishad reached a new realm, when he used the Immortal Demon Blood to connect one of his relatives in the Grace Mainland and verify their location, he could use his great power to create the space passage, which could bring his family and friends in the Grace Mainland to the Raging Flame Star Area. This would overturn the problem that had troubled the Grace Mainland for so many years.

Shortage of energy?

The Raging Flame Star Area had so many life stars, and any of them could help the warriors continue their cultivation. They could use the enormous natural energy to create their God Bodies and break through to the King God Realm.

Also, they had different kinds of pellets and the Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. All of these could be the best chances for his relatives on the Grace Mainland to enter a new height, becoming his solid support in the Raging Flame Star Area. Perhaps, one day, they could be strong enough to be the rival of the three mighty forces in the Raging Flame Star Area.

Right when he was still laughing weirdly, a shout came from outside. "Get out."

A slit of light appeared in the dark where people couldn't see their own fingers as the door was opened.

Shi Yan was bewildered for a while. He halted his stupid laughter and walked out, appearing in the vision of one of Leona's subordinates.

When the hunky man wearing heavy dark armor turned around, he was stunned. His eyes reflected his disbelief. He gazed at Shi Yan without blinking. "You... Your body..."

Shi Yan smiled, moving his wrists, which caused some cracking

noise as he glared at the man. "What's up?"

"Oh sh\*t, you're a monster!" The man mumbled, his face frightened. "You can recover such severe damages. Even a King God Realm warrior, if he got damaged like that, he would choose to leave the body, finding a host somewhere or just be reborn. How could you recover?"

Of course, Shi Yan understood his uniqueness. He just smiled. "I just had some good fortune. I also had divine medicines to treat the wounds. It's normal that I could recover."

"Divine medicines?" The man was astounded. His eyes flared up for a while, then he nodded begrudgingly. "Oh, it's a medicine like that indeed. It can recover the God Body to the normal state. However, you are only at the True God Realm. It's not normal, is it?"

Shi Yan just smiled and didn't talk more.

The beefy man scrutinized him for a while, but couldn't find any possible reason. He then didn't talk more, and just snorted. "Madame wants to see you. I'm waiting for her order to kill you. I'll do it myself."

"She won't," Shi Yan's face was indifferent without a gleam of fear. "If Madame Leona wanted to kill me, I couldn't have lived until this moment. You will be disappointed. I won't die, but instead, will live vigorously."

Shi Yan didn't know why he always felt that he and that female butcher shared something originally. It should be related to the scarlet mark in his God Soul. Anyway, that butcher didn't explain anything, and Shi Yan couldn't ask her for more information, although he was kind of skeptical.

The hunky man led him out of the prison. While walking, Shi Yan couldn't help but look at the dark doors on the two sides of the passage. Each of those big doors was carved with complex patterns



and drawings, including flames, clouds, or water. Those patterns seemed to have some functions, just like barriers or restrictions to seal the world behind the door.

He couldn't sense what was behind those dark doors. Relating to his situation, Shi Yan vaguely thought that each door of them was used to imprison someone.

He pondered for a while and asked. "What is in there?"

"What's in there?" The brawny man grinned fiendishly. "Prisoners of the empire, space pirates, bandits, thieves, and insane serial killers, etc. They will be the grinding burrs of the Extreme Purgatory Field. If you can join the Extreme Purgatory Field, they will become your opponents."

"What do you mean?" Shi Yan was surprised, asking for more. "Are they related to the Extreme Purgatory Field?"

"You hold the f\*cking Purgatory Token but you don't know what the Extreme Purgatory Field is?" The beefy man's eyes were odd. "Are you even from the Raging Flame Star Area? Too ignorant, kid."

Shi Yan beamed a dry smile, but he didn't explain.

The man had walked to the end of the passage. He waved, not wanting to discuss more. "We've arrived at the Purgatory Star. If Madame lets you live, you will join the Extreme Purgatory Field. Then, you'll know what benefits you can receive."

While talking, the man walked out. Shi Yan followed him closely.

A dark light flashed as he appeared on the main deck of the bone battleship. This spooky green bone ship was quite strange, releasing a freezing blood aura.

Hundreds of warriors were standing on the deck of the ship. Their auras were strong, but not hurried. A thick smell of blood emitted from those warriors, gathering into a blood flood current that couldn't be seen with naked eyes, twirling around their body.

Shi Yan discolored. He had a feeling that he was swimming in the blood sea of Hell. He felt so uncomfortable.

Members of the Bloody Legion under Leona's commands were all insane butchers with bloodlust as their natural feature. They wandered around the Raging Flame Star Area, causing bloody instances that startled people on countless life stars. No one could count how many people they had killed till now.

Those warriors had a bloodthirsty aura. Since they had killed so many people, their bloody murderous aura was so thick that it could affect the warriors' souls directly.

Standing on the deck of the battleship, Shi Yan's soul was uneasy. He believed that someone with a weak mind would have his knees softened in this place. His realm would decrease dramatically, which would prevent him from generating the fighting will.

Standing in front of those warriors was a figure in black. She stood still, looking into the far distance, as though she was waiting for something.

"Madame's waiting for you."

The man pointed forward. His back was upright as he stood like tough rock. His eyes looked at that woman in black with the hottest admiration and respect.

In his eyes, that woman in black was his Goddess.

Shi Yan frowned, passing by each warrior that looked like block of bloody rock, his eyes raking here and there.

# Chapter 765: Purgatory Star

---

The sky here was pitch-black, without any sun, moon, or stars. Black ink water seemed to hover thickly in the sky, hindering all kind of lights. The cold and isolated aura permeated everywhere.

Further in their vision were mountains jutting up to the sky. However, they were carved and portrayed spookily. They looked as ferocious as the strong demon beasts in the Dawn of the planet, which could shake people's souls.

The ground was full of red blood. A bloodthirsty aura and the thick scent of blood invaded the whole land.

Leona stood on the main deck, looking like a wailing ghost of this Purgatory Star. She seemed to be waiting for something.

Shi Yan was discreetly careful. He sauntered to behind her, looking at her back and speaking respectfully. "Greetings, Madame."

Leona didn't turn around, still looking at the far area ahead of her. "How is your condition?"

"I'm recovered fully. No damage. It's because of your grace." Shi Yan slightly bent his body, his eyes focusing on her.

Standing near Leona were three other young warriors. One of them was at the Second Sky of King God Realm, and the other two were at the First Sky of King God Realm. They all wore pitch-black clothes, which had a dark sun crest – the unique mark of Leona.

The Second Sky of King God Realm warrior was a Dark Clan female. Although her appearance wasn't that outstanding, her body was mesmerizingly appealing. At the same time, her aura was quite intimidating.

The other two were young human males. From their similar appearances, they must be brothers. These two had a barrel-chested, muscular body, with haughty faces indicating they didn't

want to be controlled.

The reason why Shi Yan observed those three was neither because of their realms nor their special appearances. It was because all three of them wore a token on their waist, which had the drawing of a bloody crown – the Purgatory Token.

Apparently, these three were like him. They were going to join the Extreme Purgatory Field.

When he observed these three, they were also looking at him with a disdainful face. They obviously looked down on him.

Especially the Dark Clan's woman, who pursed her lips while talking faintly. "Only at the True God Realm. Trash! Once he gets into the Extreme Purgatory Field, he'll soon be killed."

Leona snorted.

Those three young people quieted down. Their eyes were somber, slightly bending their bodies as if they were waiting for her advice.

"I don't know what you will do after you get in there. In short, the one who can kill the most must be one of you three." Leona suddenly turned around. Her dark green eyes raked through the three young people. "If you lose my people, even if you can come out alive, I will kill you myself. I will destroy your clan too."

These three people shut their mouths. They immediately kneeled down on one knee, stooping. No one dared to talk anymore.

"This man will join the Extreme Purgatory Field as well. You guys pay attention to him." Leona pointed at Shi Yan and shouted her order. "In the Extreme Purgatory Field, if you encounter him, you can kill him. However, remember this, if he has to die, he must die in your hands. Whoever else dares touch him, skin them and draw their bones out for me! Confine their souls and torture them to death!"

The three nodded instantly. Their eyes looked at Shi Yan with a bloodthirsty visage.

Shi Yan shuddered inwardly. His face was cold as he stooped and grinned fiendishly.

"If you see Ao Gu Duo's men, don't show mercy. Kill them all. Especially Ao Gera, if you see him, bring his soul to me... I'll treat him myself," Leona shouted.

The two were shaken as they got stirred up immediately. Their eyes became blood-red, full of fighting will.

While Leona was talking, hissing sounds came from ahead of them. Not long afterward, ten-meters long war chariots appeared one by one in front of them. A handsome warrior in the leading war chariot pitched his voice. "Greetings, Madame Leona."

Leona nodded, gazing at Shi Yan. She pulled something in the air, and a white bone war chariot flew over. She got in the chariot and talked to her warriors. "Get in."

The three members of the Bloody Legion, who were going to join the Extreme Purgatory Field, got in the war chariot without saying a word.

Leona frowned, sweeping her eyes over Shi Yan.

Shi Yan nodded, his face indifferent. He walked to the war chariot as well.

His view became wider after he got into the war chariot. He suddenly found that only this white bone battleship appeared in the Purgatory Star. The other ships had disappeared somewhere.

Leona touched the void, and a beam of pitch-black light fell on the white bone battleship under their feet. Prison cells suddenly flew out of the battleship, each cell covered with a dark shadow. Around fifty cells floated in the air, looking like small suns.

Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness flickered. A gleam of fright flashed in his eyes as he looked at Leona.

He suddenly recognized that at the moment Leona used her

power and her God Domain, her body was covered entirely in the darkness, as if she had disappeared completely.

Dark Domain!

A beam of magical light crossed his brain like lightning. In the next moment, he vaguely got something. Dark Upanishad! It was the Dark power Upanishad!

Shi Yan was shaken. He suddenly released why he felt that he and Leona had something in common. Because, the Dark Upanishad the woman had was totally the same as the War Devil in his ring!

However, War Devil couldn't make the Dark Upanishad reach that status. Anyway, War Devil was just a puppet, a clone of Lao Luo. Since it didn't have a soul, it would never be able to touch the essence of the Dark power Upanishad Leona was different. She had reached the Original God Realm, so her perception and understanding of the Dark Upanishad wasn't something the War Devil could compare with.

However, the attribute of their power Upanishad and aura was the same. But, one was endlessly intimidating, while the other was much weaker.

"Welcome, Madame Leona," Warriors on the dark iron war chariot bent their bodies to greet her loudly.

Leona nodded as the white bone war chariot dashed forward rapidly. Around fifty clusters of dark light followed her like dark clouds. They were the cells controlled by her Dark power.

Apparently, those warriors were the receptionists. They led the way while Shi Yan and Leona were behind them.

Shi Yan then saw ranges of thousands of meters tall mountains, which were cut into the shapes of ghosts and monsters. This group of rock ghosts and monsters looked ferocious, with an evil, bloody aura. They appeared under the bone chariot, zoomed out, and

disappeared.

All of a sudden, Shi Yan saw another battleship by a three thousand meters tall mountain range. This one was made of platinum, shining dazzlingly in this dark Purgatory Star.

"Seems Rochester's here." Leona glared at the platinum battleship, then shifted her look away, talking indifferently.

"True. Sir Rochester arrived here the first. He's been idle here for half a month." The receptionist smiled, trying to earn her favor. "Besides Sir Rochester, Sir Carthew and Sir Da Lei have come. Until now, only Sir Ao Gu Duo's still on the way."

Shi Yan's eyes flared up strangely.

Besides Leona, Ao Gu Duo, and Da Lei, Rochester and Carthew were the other members of the five great feudal vassals of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation.

The five great feudal vassals guarded five different areas. To expand the territory of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, they engaged in bloody fights every day, building and expanding the endless divine nation. They were considered the five great pillars of the divine nation.

Among the five great feudal vassals, Leona had the strongest force. Ranked the second was Ao Gu Duo's, followed by Rochester, and Carthew. Da Lei, the one Shi Yan had met, was placed the last among the five. His force was the weakest.

The ranking of the five great feudal vassals didn't always stay the same. Depending on the land they could occupy, and the merits of their subordinates, their rankings would be classified transparently.

Rumors said that at the beginning, Leona had been ranked the last. When she became a feudal vassal, she had received severe criticism, saying that she wasn't eligible.

It was Du Jian Ji of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation who had

supported her, giving her a chance to show her competence. Finally, she stood firmly on the last position among the feudal vassals.

She didn't let Du Tian Ji down, making all who had criticized her shut their mouths. Shortly, after one hundred years, she had used bloody brutal deeds to contribute to the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. She had expanded the Dark Firmament Divine Nation's territory. From the last position among the feudal vassals, she now topped them all. She became the never-ending legend of the divine nation.

Today, she had used her attainment to gain fame. In the divine nation, no one dared to criticize or look down on her. Whenever they mentioned her, they would do it with admiration, respect, and fear.

Shortly, a ten-thousand-meters tall mountain range situated on an area over hundreds of miles wide appeared. It looked like a savage beast crouched on the ground. The rough cliffs were as sharp as thick fangs. The aura bursting out of this area was intimidating and tyrannical. At first glance, it could shake people's hearts.

Simple palaces built of blood-like rocks were present on the highest summit of this mountain range. The mountain was hollowed out with many pitch-black caves. Resentful, evil grunts, roars, and cries came out of those caves.

After Leona came here, the Dark Domain on her body moved slightly. Floating cells behind her rolled into those caves like black rubber balls.

Many warriors were waiting at the entrance of the caves to receive the prisoners from those cells.

She didn't pay attention to those caves, just standing on the white bone war chariot while looking at the spacious square on the highest mountain. Some warriors were waiting there.



Shi Yan followed her line of sight. As soon as he looked at the square, he spotted Da Lei and Da Meng. Besides them, there stood some other young people. Each of them had humongous auras, wearing the Purgatory Token on their waists. Apparently, they were going to join the extreme training course in the Extreme Purgatory Field.

"Hahaha! Madame Leona, finally you're here. I've been waiting for you for so long." An extraordinarily handsome middle-aged man in luxurious clothes stepped out of the group, laughing happily. He looked somewhat similar to Du Feng.

Leona didn't move. She just nodded, driving the white bone war chariot towards the square.

"Ah!" That middle-aged man sighed. His eyes raked through four people standing behind Leona, asking skeptically. "Hey, it's not correct. Your Bloody Legion has only three quotas. Why do you have one extra?"

This middle-aged man seemed to be one of the managers of the Extreme Purgatory Field. He understood the rules well, so he was astounded.

"He isn't from my Bloody Legion." Leona snorted, pointing at Shi Yan. "He's Princess Zi Yao's subordinate. I met him on the way here, so I just gave him a lift."

"Zi Yao's subordinate?" The old man became more astounded. "Didn't they choose Ao Gera from their internal meeting? How come they changed the participant all of a sudden? Weird."

## Chapter 766: Undercurrent

---

Not only was this middle-aged man surprised, besides Da Lei and Da Meng, most of the warriors here showed a bewildered face. All of a sudden, they all paid attention to Shi Yan.

"Ao Gera has a good Uncle. He doesn't need to worry about having a quota for the Extreme Purgatory Field. Zi Yao spent her quota for another one to train the new elite force for the divine nation. What makes you surprised?" Leona was calm, raking through those people on the mountain while speaking coldly.

The middle-aged man beamed a faint smile and nodded. "As long as he has the Purgatory Token, he can join the Extreme Purgatory Field. It's the rule. Whoever will join, I don't actually care."

"Shi Yan, little buddy, long time no see. I didn't expect that we would meet again shortly." Da Lei suddenly stepped forward with his smiling face.

Da Meng stood next to him. He contemplated for a while and then grinned, nodding at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan frowned, his visage relaxed. He smiled at the two, as if they had had a good relationship.

"Da Lei, you know this boy? What's his background?" A man wearing plain cotton garments with rough appearance asked loudly. "I remember no one named Shi Yan in Zi Yao's cortege. Hasn't he just followed Zi Yao recently?"

After he said that, many people put on a strange visage.

Especially Da Lei, he was uncomfortable. Of course, he wouldn't tell the others that his son got subdued by a stranger. He just smiled begrudgingly. "When Zi Yao passed by my place, she brought Shi Yan to be my guest for a few days. That's how I know him. Shi Yan, this little buddy isn't weak. Haha! Moreover, he's progressing rapidly. Two years ago, when I met him, he was just at

the Second Sky of True God Realm. I didn't expect that when I meet him again, he would have reached the Third Sky of True God Realm. It's Zi Yao and our empire's grace, indeed."

What Da Lei said was somehow serious.

Not many warriors standing on this square had actually known Shi Yan and his secrets. Even Leona didn't know that Shi Yan could use the Soul Burial Ground.

Many years ago, when that mysterious expert appeared in the Raging Flame Star Area, he had shown an invincible power, making many life stars fall in misery. If they had ever heard about the legends of that expert, once they felt that Shi Yan had something to do with that one, of course, they would highly appreciate him.

Da Lei thought that Shi Yan was quite lucky and excellent that he could go with Zi Yao and survive the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field.

Da Lei admired Zi Yao, as she could have such a mysterious escort. Since he knew the hidden things, although he didn't like Shi Yan – he even hated him a lot– he didn't dare to underestimate this young man anymore.

When people were watching Shi Yan, he was also eyeing them, discreetly putting up his guard.

Standing next to Leona and Da Lei, the middle-aged manager of the Extreme Purgatory Field in front of him was at the Peak of King God Realm. Since he looked much similar to Du Feng, Shi Yan guessed that this man perhaps was also a member of the royal family, Du Tian Ji's brother.

And, he noticed two other people almost right when he stepped on the ground.

One of them was the rude middle-aged man in plain cotton garments. Since Shi Yan couldn't sense his cultivation base and

aura, he should be the same as Leona and Da Lei, an expert at the Original God Realm.

With his understanding of the five great feudal vassals, this man should be Rochester, who was ranked right behind Ao Gu Duo. He was also a brutal and combative character.

The other one was young, good-looking, and coltish. His face was white, accompanied by a slender body. He should be one of the five feudal vassals, Carthew.

He was also an Original God Realm expert. Among the five feudal vassals, he was titled 'White-faced Bloody-handed.' Besides Leona, he was the youngest among the feudal vassals, and also a great legend of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation.

Although he had earned fame and powers when he was still young, Carthew was born a humble kid on an ordinary life star. At the first time he had received the power Upanishad in the Source of power Upanishad Inheritance, he had started to show his talents. Then, he enrolled in the military of the empire and started his life on the battlefields. His performance was so dazzling, which helped him earn the glory of being a feudal vassal.

Carthew had the worst background among the five. However, he had used his own power to reach the peak little by little. Eventually, he became a strong feudal vassal.

Carthew just smiled tenderly from the beginning, his visage mild and gently just like a teacher, who didn't give the others any dangerous feelings. They would instinctively relax in front of him and get charmed by his gentle aura.

However, in the eyes of the other forces outside the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, he was truly a demon. He had swaggered for so many years in outer space, hunting down countless space pirates and marauders.

Countless corpses of space pirates had built his foundation,

making him stand firmly in the divine nation. Whenever they mentioned his name, space pirates would always be hostile.

There was an unwritten saying space pirates shared with each other that whoever could kill Carthew would immediately become the only leader of the space pirates.

However, until now, Carthew had still run amuck around outer space, chasing and killing space pirates. He had robbed the pirates to collect a great deal of properties for the empire.

Wherever he passed by, space pirates would be petrified.

Until now, he still lived his life casually, while the space pirates always shivered on seeing him.

Marauding the marauders, his cruel deeds and ruthlessness weren't something ordinary people could think about and apply.

Carthew just smiled and said nothing. However, his phoenix eyes, which looked like a beautiful woman's eyes, often glared at Leona with a strange gleam.

Shi Yan observed for a while and felt weird. From the way Carthew looking at the other, he seemed to have some unclear feelings for Leona. It looked like he liked her a lot.

Shi Yan was baffled. He couldn't help but turn around, his eyes gliding over the woman standing next to him. A beam of strange thought flashed in his eyes.

This woman was a legend in the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, with bloody, brutal deeds. She was a noble person though. However, her appearance...wasn't any more beautiful than a wailing ghost.

Did Carthew have a special fetish? Was she his type?

Shi Yan couldn't understand.

"Ao Gu Duo hasn't arrived yet. We need to wait for him for several days more. He sent me a message saying that he would be

here in seven days max. Yeah, he said he got some stuff along the way here, which delayed him," The middle-aged man explained softly.

"Ao Gu Duo is making himself important, huh? He dares make me wait for him!" Although the others didn't say anything, Leona started to cause trouble with a cold face. Vicious hatred filled her dark green eyes.

Among this group, only she dared to scold Ao Gu Dou. It was because she was much stronger, and her bloody force was the mightiest force in the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. Even though she wasn't patient, no one dared to comment.

"Madame Leona, please calm down. Sir Ao Gu Duo has something that delays him. He said that when he comes here, he will make it up for you," The middle-aged man smiled dryly, continuing to explain.

"I want to see how Ao Gu Dou could make up for this." Leona swung her arm, and couldn't help but speak up. "I'm going to rest. When Ao Gu Duo comes here, tell him to come and talk to me face to face. Harrumph! I have something to discuss with him anyway."

Her eyes fell on Shi Yan, as if she had implied something.

Shi Yan was astounded. He immediately got that she would trouble Ao Gu Duo because of Ao Gera's dark trick, which destroyed one of her battleships.

While frowning, Shi Yan suddenly realized that he would be a witness, and that he would have to stand up and criticize Ao Gu Duo and Ao Gera.

However, it was obvious that they didn't have enough pieces of evidence. They actually had nothing to prove that Ao Gera had done that. And, they couldn't make it related to Ao Gu Duo either. Would that woman prepare to scold and force the others to accept their crime?

Leona excused that she was tired after a long trip, bringing the three young warriors under her command and leaving arrogantly. They stayed in a palace on this mountain.

This palace had a dark sun symbol. It seemed like the palace belonged to her. She didn't pay attention to Shi Yan. After they got into the palace, she intended to keep a distance from him, saying nothing.

Right after Leona had left, many warriors on the square started to scatter. Rochester, Carthew, and Da Lei brought their people and left to their own palaces. Each of them had a private place on the mountains of this mountain range. They had shown up here to show their respects to Leona.

Not long after Carthew had left, on the way to his palace, he suddenly stopped, turning around and waving at Shi Yan. "Buddy, if you don't mind, why don't you come and drink with me?"

On this spacious, grand mountain range, warriors had all scattered, and no one had thrown Shi Yan an eye. Even the middle-aged manager didn't have any intention to arrange a room for him.

As Zi Yao wasn't here, Shi Yan had no one to ask for information. Leona seemed not wanting to talk to him much. For the time being, he became an outsider.

While standing alone there with no clue about where to go, Shi Yan's eyes brightened up on seeing Carthew waving at him.

Looking here and there, as Shi Yan found that no one noticed them. He frowned, then relaxed, beaming a smile. He didn't care how bad Carthew's reputation was, walking directly to him and clasping his fists from a far distance to greet the other. "Then, I won't be too polite."

"It's okay," Carthew laughed. He asked his retinue to leave, then walked Shi Yan to his private palace.

It was a beautiful, blue crystal palace. As soon as the man

appeared, his maids came to receive him. Each of them was around twenty years old. They all looked inviting, with exposing clothes. They had just a thin silky fabric sheet on their bodies. People could see their private areas from time to time.

The maids served them good wine and food. Inside the blue crystal palace, Carthew was sitting on his chairman's seat, smiling warmly while raising his glass. "Come here, come here, drink with me, buddy. Don't be too polite."

Shi Yan was skeptical, as he didn't know why Carthew wanted to drink with him. He had never met this man before, so they didn't have any relationship.

And, he was just an unknown character in the Dark Firmament Divine Nation without any reputation. Most importantly, he was marked as a member of Zi Yao's retinue. It was impossible that Carthew wanted to recruit him.

Shi Yan frowned inwardly.



# Chapter 767: Kill a chicken with a butcher's knife

---

Inside the blue crystal palace, beautiful maids moved around, serving them good food and wine. Carthew and Shi Yan were drinking unceasingly.

Carthew was a man who loved wine as much as his own life. He knew so many good wines like the back of his hand, explaining them to Shi Yan nonstop.

Which wine was purely good, which wine was burning like a passionate flame, etc... Different good wines needed to be stored in different containers and conditions. Also, he was telling how the method of drinking them was another interesting thing to learn.

Shi Yan wasn't a sort of man who paid attention to details. He just nodded while putting up guard, as he didn't know what this man wanted to ask him.

Carthew and Shi Yan had never been close. Today was the first day they had met each other. Generally, the other shouldn't care about him that much.

However, in the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, Shi Yan was just a stranger with no reputation.

Although he was a famous character, compared to the members of the five great feudal vassals like Carthew, he was nothing, and he wasn't worth his special treatment.

Serving the other without a reason, if he weren't deceitful, he would be surely a robber. In Shi Yan's thoughts, Carthew should have some other intentions.

Indeed, when they were in the middle of their drinks, Carthew lowered his glass, his extraordinarily handsome face blushed like a beautiful woman. He laughed deliberately. "I have two things I can't explain. I hope you can help me out."

Shi Yan straightened his back, his face serious. "If I can explain, of course, I won't conceal. For the good wine you've treated me, I will tell you everything I know."

"That's good," Carthew was happy. "I heard that Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo had talked to you in person when you were in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. Then, he disappeared from there. He has given up chasing after you and Zi Yao. I want to know what you and Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo had discussed back there?"

Shi Yan changed his visage while he shuddered inwardly.

"No need to be tense. I'm just curious. I don't want to arrest you or interrogate you." Carthew waved his hands, telling him to not to be surprised. "With my position in the divine nation today, I have many relationships with the outer space pirates. Perhaps, you've heard about it. I've stepped on their corpses to reach this high position. That's why I always have a special concern about those space pirates. Of course, I have many insiders in their organizations. Also, many pirates will sell me intelligence. They want me to stay away from their business. It's normal that I know about you."

Shi Yan could relax a little bit. He took a deep breath while frowning, his face severe. "Sir, if you ask me something else, I will not conceal. However, I'm sorry that I can't tell you about this."

Carthew slightly squinted, as a flash of electric current appeared in his eyes. "Alright, I won't chase you about this stuff anymore. We should talk about another thing."

"Please ask, Sir."

"I understand Leona well. She isn't the sort of people who will poke her nose into the other's business. I don't know why she let you get on her battleship." Pausing for a while, Carthew's face darkened. "As far I've known, before Leona got here, one of her battleships was destroyed, and several hundred warriors had died.

Would you tell me what had happened? Is it related to you?"

Shi Yan's brows slammed together. Hesitating for a while, he said calmly. "Madame Leona's wrecked ship does relate to me."

"Hmm? Please elaborate."

"I departed from the Glorious Amethyst Star on an amethyst war chariot. When I passed by the Moon Star, an extreme explosion occurred. It seemed someone had installed a Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion in my chariot. The energy explosion had smashed Leona's battleship."

"Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion?"

Carthew discolored in fright. He slightly trembled and then continued. "Only the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce can fabricate that toy. It's so incredible. Even a small life star couldn't withstand it. It would crush the life star to powder. If warriors under Original God Realm are dragged into the Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion, both their God Bodies and soul altars would be ripped apart. If I were in that situation, I would be hurt badly. How did your amethyst war chariot have such a thing?"

"I don't know," Shi Yan beamed a forced smile.

Carthew suddenly quieted down, gazing at Shi Yan. He was bewildered for a while and then frowned. "If that explosion was set for you, it's a miracle that you could survive. I'm not amazed at the explosion. What surprises me a lot is that how could you survive?"

"Why do you say so?"

"Leona isn't a merciful person. Or else, she couldn't have her current attainments. I feel weird that even if you aren't the main cause, her battleship exploded because of you. With her bad temper, she would skin you alive. How could you... stay alive until now? "

"Hmm, I think you should ask Madame Leona. Even I don't know why. I'm curious too."

Carthew sank in his thought for a while and then smiled oddly. "You haven't explained either of my two questions fully."

"Haha! Sir, do you think that you're wasting a good party on me?" Shi Yan answered deliberately, his face calm and natural. He didn't reveal a beam of fear.

Carthew shook his head. "Drinking alone, even if you are drinking good wine, doesn't taste good. Sharing is a good drinking virtue, you know?" Pausing for a while, he waved his hand, talking casually. "You can stay in my place. When Ao Gu Duo arrives, the training of the Extreme Purgatory Field will begin. You have to join it right away. Although you didn't help me out with my suspicions, I won't be so mean to you. You can use my good wines here at will. No need to be too polite."

"Thank you in advance, Sir."

"Minor stuff."

...

Shi Yan then stayed in Carthew's palace.

This palace had some different training rooms, and it even had a one-hundred-times-heavier gravitational room. Shi Yan didn't care about the situation out there, as he entered the room and cultivated alone.

At the Third Sky of True God Realm, the effect of normal gravity on him was too little. However, this one-hundred-times-heavier gravitational room was quite useful for him, although walking in this room was extremely hard.

His body had been trained to the acme, making it tougher than iron and heavier than rock at the same volume. In the gravitational room, the weight he had to bear would be increased accordingly.

This gravitational room had many rocks of different shapes. Those rocks had some small holes and concave areas, that warriors could use to lift them up. All of them were heavy. Some weren't

big, but their mass was formidable like a mountain.

Staying in the gravitational room, Shi Yan used those rocks to practice.

Sitting neatly on the stone ground, Shi Yan squinted. His body was soaked in sweat. Not long after that, he stood up robustly, thrusting his hands deep into the concave spots on the rock. He didn't use the Essence Qi, just his physical strength to lift the rock and then dashing madly inside the gravitational room.

Not long afterward, he was exhausted. His body looked like it was congested. Veins bulged under his skin like worms, giving him a savage look.

Shi Yan wanted to check his limit. Those heavy rocks in the room were dozens of times heavier. Even though he had reached the Third Sky of True God Realm, moving them was a little difficult.

And that was how his potential power was stimulated. The energy hidden in his body would be pressed by the extreme gravity, making him shiver.

It was another time of insane training. Shi Yan had no sliver of power in his body by now, lying like soft pulp on the ground. He closed his eyes to feel the robust vitality in his blood and muscles, while thoughts traveled fast in his head. He suddenly got an idea.

He got up immediately, focusing and urging dozens of drops of Immortal blood in his body towards the left arm.

"Crack Crack Crack!"

The bones on his left arm resounded with a cracking sound. His body enlarged fiercely. Just like a dormant beast, an intimidating flow of energy expanded from him.

The Immortal Demon Blood replaced his blood in his left arm. An extreme pain struck him from the veins. His arm turned into a red hue, such that it looked like his blood was seeping through his pores. His arm felt like it was boiled. That bloody hue seemed quite

frightening.

He dashed forward rumblingly. A flow of brutal energy expanded from his arm, just like a savage beast struggling to get out of an abyss.

He lifted a dark golden rock on the ground using the fierce energy on his arm. A flow of scarlet light emitted from his body, generating a savage and furious power.

Shi Yan was cheered up. Joy filled his heart as he laughed crazily.

This dark gold rock was a relatively big one in this chamber. It was the Extinct Gold Stone, a particular stone in the Raging Flame Star Area which was hundreds of times heavier than normal rock.

The weight of the rock in his hand could be compared to a thousand-meters-tall mountain!

And, inside this gravitational room, the weight of this big chunk was increased dozens of times!

It was almost impossible for a King God Realm warrior to lift this rock. When one reached the Third Sky of King God Realm, perhaps they might be able to try.

Shi Yan had tried to lift this rock using only his physical power. However, after several attempts, he couldn't move it even an inch.

However, today, when he used the Immortal Demon Blood to fill his left hand, the bursting energy of it had helped him lift up the hefty rock. Such exploding power had frightened him as well.

After that moment, Shi Yan had a deeper understanding of the blood exchange Bao Ao and Jie Ji had mentioned.

If he could replace blood in his body with the Immortal Demon Blood, how tremendous could his body's bursting power be?

Shi Yan didn't even dare to imagine that.

Boom!

The big rock fell on the extremely rigid ground. On the spot where the rock fell, the ground was suddenly cracked and shattered. Cracks that naked eyes could see extended from under the rock.

Those cracks extended continually. Explosion resounded from the big rock as chips shot out everywhere like the sharpest blades.

"Oh f\*ck!"

A forthright voice came from the door of the gravitational room. A taut man who had the Purgatory Token on his waist came in. Flows of light emitted from his hands, crushing those chips, his face strange.

A delicate woman walked next to him. She coldly looked at Shi Yan, who was exhausted, sitting by the big rock.

She also had a Purgatory Token on her small waist.

These two were Carthew's subordinates, the famous warriors that would join the Extreme Purgatory Field.

# Chapter 768: Hiding weaknesses by keeping quiet

---

The two of them stood by the door, watching the rock chips fill the ground. They couldn't hide the surprise on their faces, their eyes odd.

So many rock chips appeared around the Extinct Gold Stone. Cracks on the ground were as thick as spider webs. From the location of that big stone, cracks covered almost the entire room, which startled people.

Apparently, it was created by the impact when the Extinct Gold Stone rumblingly fell on the ground. Unlike Shi Yan, these two people were familiar with this gravitational room and the formidable mass of the Extinct Gold Stone.

He was just a warrior at the True God Realm, but he was able to lift a chunk of Extinct Gold Stone and create such situation. Those two people used to look down on Shi Yan, but now, they became serious. A streak of fear flashed in their eyes when they looked at him.

Shi Yan was totally exhausted, lying on the ground. He didn't move, just frowned and assessed those two. He didn't try to talk to them first.

He understood that the other two came here to train as well. Perhaps, they didn't know that Shi Yan was in there.

The Purgatory Token on their waist showed their identity. They were Carthew's subordinates who were going to join the Extreme Purgatory Field. They should be outstanding characters as well.

Perhaps, these two were famous in the Dark Firmament Divine Nation.

"You created this situation?" The forthright man couldn't help but ask surprisingly. "Tough, man! You are only at the True God



Realm, but you can create such a commotion. Not bad, really! No wonder why you can join the Extreme Purgatory Field. I used to think that Princess Zi Yao sent you here just to fill her assigned number."

"Didn't you use other forces?" The delicate woman smiled coldly, her eyes skeptical. "If you use the Essence Qi, you still can lift that Extinct Gold Stone. Not a big deal. I have never seen a True God Realm warrior without a God Body lift an Extinct Gold Stone like that one."

She was suspicious, her face disdainful, and her mouth mocking faintly.

Each character that could join the Extreme Purgatory Field was an outstanding warrior in his or her force. They were all the talents that had performed well during this period.

Each of them had their own pride. Instinctively, they assumed that they were the strongest. When they saw someone stronger than them all of a sudden, their first reaction wasn't to recognize, but to be suspicious.

Hearing her, the forthright, taut man was also astounded for a while, as he began to be skeptical as well.

He wondered that even for himself, without using the Essence Qi and only using the physical strength of his God Body, it would be really hard to lift up that Extinct Gold Stone. Thus, he didn't believe that.

Shi Yan lied on the ground, without showing any change. He just smiled faintly and explained nothing. He understood that he didn't need to explain.

The others were Carthew's people. They didn't walk the same way with him. When they got into the Extreme Purgatory Field, perhaps they would become rivals. If they would become each other's rival, it was better to hide his real competence. That was

how he would have a better chance to survive.

When one could conceal one's competence, the others would underestimate him in a battle. This could pave the way for a marvelous change in the results.

To Shi Yan, who had experienced so many battles, of course, he knew what to do. He pondered for a while, using the others' words as he smiled and replied. "You're right. I used the Essence Qi in my body. Using only my physical strength, I can't lift up that Extinct Gold Metal. I just wanted to check how heavy this stone is. I did. It's really heavy, indeed."

"You've overestimated yourself."

The delicate woman showed that she understood, then snorted and relaxed her tense countenance. Perhaps, what Shi Yan had said had helped her keep her confidence up.

If Shi Yan had admitted that he had used only this body power to lift that Extinct Gold Stone, which she couldn't even move, it would have smashed her confidence, making her feel like a loser.

Shi Yan hiding his talents relaxed her, keeping her confidence high. When she looked at Shi Yan again, her visage was still cold.

"You, mate," The beefy man cracked out laughing. "People who come to the gravitational room to train won't use the Essence Qi, idiot. If you want to use Essence Qi here, you better not go. Because, you will gain nothing from it, right?"

Shi Yan tried to smile begrudgingly.

"Alright, how did you push Ao Gera out?" The muscular man was suddenly interested in him. "That man called Ao Gera's very famous in our Dark Firmament Divine Nation. After so many years, his speed in cultivating still makes many people bow to him. Even us two have to agree that we can't beat him in this field."

"Who said I'm not as excellent as him?" The dainty woman was cold and infuriated. "He's lucky that he has a good uncle. The time

is right, and geographical and social conditions are favorable for him as well. If he were like us, having no strong background, I don't think he would be stronger than me!"

"Yalan, admit it. That Ao Gera's a genius." The beefy man laughed. "As we've followed Sir Carthew, we've had many favorable things too. We can use his pellets and other resources at will. He has never been stingy. Talking about external resources, what we have isn't worse than what Ao Gera has. However, he's much younger than us."

"I don't believe it!" The fine woman called Yalan snorted.

Shi Yan grinned, looking at these two as he thought they were interesting.

"Cultivate!" Yalan rolled her eyes at the man standing next to her, as if she didn't want to discuss more. Her clothes suddenly ballooned as a flow of fierce energy bloomed out from her body. Then, she aimed at a big rock next to her, swinging her arm and throwing that rock away.

The muscular man beamed a hollow laugh. He didn't talk more and started to work out in this gravitational room. Energy surged through his body as he was showing his powerful energy.

These two didn't use their God Domains, the soul altar, or the Essence Qi. They were using the energy accumulated in their bodies.

These two were at the Second Sky of King God Realm. They all had attained God Bodies, with robust vitality and blood Qi. They looked like ancient monsters transformed into humans. Their physical strengths were tremendous.

Shi Yan lied on the ground, watching everything silently. His eyes gradually became severe.

Watching discreetly for a while, Shi Yan was frightened on seeing how formidable the flesh body of the King God Realm warriors

with the God Bodies was.

He could confirm that even his body, which had been quenched through many challenges, couldn't gain the upper hand in fighting against these two, unless he used the power of the Immortal Demon Blood, just like the time he put it in his left arm.

Such powerful and bursting energy could be enough to smash the confidence of those two, who had used only their physical power now. However, the Immortal Demon Blood in his body was just enough to strengthen one arm. It wasn't enough to make his entire body more vigorous.

Of course, with the status and his way of cultivating, once he could break through to the King God Realm and get a God Body like those two, he believed that he would gain the absolute domination in a combat of physical strength, even without the Immortal Demon Blood.

He had a strong belief in his body's bursting energy. Facing warriors at the same realm, no matter they were the Monster Clan or the Demon Clan who were famous for having a tenacious body, Shi Yan was confident that he could defeat them all.

Carthew's two subordinates were training themselves in the gravitation room. Shi Yan took a break for a while, then stood up, using the special features of this room to practice.

This time, he didn't use the power of the Immortal Demon Blood, but his own body strength to move the big rocks.

Even so, the bursting power of his body was tremendous. At least, the bodies of the experts at the same realm couldn't compare to his.

As they were in the same room, Yalan and Tie Mu, of course, paid attention to him. Although they had disdained him, after a while, they were surprised as they got a deeper understanding about Shi Yan.

Shi Yan, in his Third Sky of True God Realm, had earned their respect, even though he didn't use the Immortal Demon Blood.

From them, Shi Yan got the information of the Extreme Purgatory Field. Now, he could understand its situation better.

The so-called Extreme Purgatory Field was the other half of the Purgatory Star. It was unknown why warriors staying deep in that area would have a better sense of heaven and earth power Upanishad. From time to time, after a period, that Extreme Purgatory Field would generate a magical energy fluctuation from deep down underground.

That energy's fluctuation would cover the entire area of the Extreme Purgatory Field. At that time, when the warriors got in there, their sensibility of the heaven and earth power Upanishad would be enhanced formidably.

Naturally, it was quite helpful for warriors to cultivate and break through there.

Whenever this time came, they would put the prisoners from around the Purgatory Star, ominous people, killers, and space pirates captured by the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, in the Extreme Purgatory Field, where they would become the prey of the contestants.

Making those prisoners their prey, the contestants would use their power Upanishad and comprehend their powers better. This area would facilitate their progress greatly.

Through hunting those villains, contestants had to battle continually to train their fighting skills. At the same time, they could have chances to understand power Upanishads. Usually, they could break through to the next realm under such circumstances.

Of course, there wasn't an explicit division.

The divine nation had a rule that when the time was over, if the

prisoners in the Extreme Purgatory Field could survive and get a Purgatory Token, no matter what crime they had committed, they would be exempted and gain a new life.

That was why participants would not stop hunting them. At the same time, those villains would try to kill the contestants to survive and earn a new life.

That made the Extreme Purgatory Field a bloody place. Every time, from the beginning until the end, countless people had to die. The survivors could be the contestants or their prey. The villains could have a chance to create a new life. The contestants could have the most precious battles for their advancement, and even rewards from the divine nation.

## Chapter 769: Mutually losing face

---

Shi Yan was cultivating ascetically in the gravitational room together with Yalan and Tie Mu. Whenever they took a break, they would chat about the situation of the Extreme Purgatory Field. Through these two, his knowledge of the Extreme Purgatory Field became better.

After Yalan and Tie Mu found that Shi Yan could use his True God Realm cultivation base to train in the gravitational room, they didn't mock or provoke him anymore. They had stopped considering him as a small character.

However, his good days didn't last long.

On this day, while he was exhausted after a period of cultivation, he suddenly heard someone shouting. "Who's Shi Yan?"

In the next moment, a flow of intimidating energy wave came from the square out there. Shi Yan hadn't reacted, yet Yalan and Tie Mu jolted up immediately, their faces frightened.

"Who's that?" Shi Yan was astounded, asking hurriedly.

"Sir Ao Gu Duo," Jie Mu was anxious. "Why does he want to find you? From his voice, I think he wants to condemn you. Did you offend him?"

Shi Yan shook his head. "I'm not sure." Then, he stood up, frowning as he walked out of the gravitational room.

A two-meters-tall beefy man stood on the square. He was wearing a dark brown armor, which made him look as formidable as a savage deity. There were two other warriors wearing the Purgatory Token, standing next to this muscular man. Besides them, Ao Gera, who Shi Yan had met in the Glorious Amethyst Star, also stood there.

Carthew, Rochester, Da Lei, and Prince Du Tian Le also stormed out of their places. Du Tian Le was the younger brother of Du Tian

Ji – King of Dark Firmament Divine Nation. He was the handsome middle-aged man who was in charge of receiving the feudal vassals from everywhere that Shi Yan had met when he had just arrived here.

That man clasped his fist with a smiling face, talking to the muscular man. "Sir Ao Gu Duo, why do you shout?"

"Who is Shi Yan?" The brawny man that was as formidable as a Demogorgon shouted. His brutal eyes scanned the crowd. Warriors in his line of sight frowned, as they were all afraid of him.

Ao Gera suddenly smiled, brightly pointing at Shi Yan from a distance.

"Turns out you're that traitor!" Ao Gu Duo laughed ruthlessly. He grabbed something in the void, and a flow of energy like an immense sea rose up torrentially, covering Shi Yan in just a blink.

As Shi Yan was still exhausted from his training, he had no time to recover or respond. That flow of energy covered him and held him up, bobbing high above people's heads. He was tied entirely, not able to urge any bit of his powers.

Ao Gu Duo was one of the five great feudal vassals, with endless supernatural power at the Original God Realm.

Compared to him, Shi Yan was only at the True God Realm. They were two whole realms apart. Under the man's attack, Shi Yan had nothing to resist.

As that energy was binding him, Shi Yan's Essence Qi ancient tree seemed to be sealed. It couldn't circulate even a beam of energy. At the same time, his soul altar was hindered by a thin membrane, preventing it from rotating.

This was the true God Soul confinement! Ao Gu Duo was savagely infuriated as he laughed brutally. "Boy, you dared to join Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo to attack Princess Zi Yao? The reason why I'm late is that I had to stay and investigate this. I know everything



now. I want to show you what's the big price for planning a wild scheme on Princess Zi Yao!"

"Ao Gu Duo? What the heck you are playing?" Carthew frowned, his face cold. He scolded the other. "Shi Yan has the Purgatory Token. I've checked it. Princess Zi Yao granted him the token. Since the Princess gave him the token, she must have verified him before she did that. You should stop talking nonsense!"

Da Lei just frowned and said nothing. His face was dark. No one knew what he was thinking.

Rochester, one of the five feudal vassals, was composed, as if he was watching everything with interest. Obviously, he didn't want to join this argument.

All of a sudden, Du Tian Le screamed, "Sir Ao Gu Duo, did you mistake him? Since Shi Yan has the Purgatory Token, it proves that he has gained Zi Yao's trust. Zi Yao will never give the token to someone who has planned to harm her. I'm sure you're wrong."

"Haha. I'll make you guys be sincerely convinced!" Ao Gu Duo grinned fiendishly, waving his hand all of a sudden.

From a place pretty far from them, a shadow was dragged to them by some invisible force. Shortly, he appeared in people's sights. He floated face to face to Shi Yan in the void.

That was a young human man. He was good-looking, but his eyes were anxious. Seeing Shi Yan, he was astounded for a while and then screamed. "That's him! He had contacted Ka Tuo and disclosed Princess Zi Yao's whereabouts. That's why we could chase and blockade Princess Zi Yao in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field."

Shi Yan's face was cold, looking deeply at that man with a stern countenance.

'This man is a henchman of Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo. I met this man in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, where he had

served Ka Tuo. I had never thought that he would stand up and criticize me.'

Shi Yan suddenly felt chilled. He knew someone was trying to harm him. As that one couldn't kill him in the Moon Star, he now had another wicked plan.

His eyes couldn't help but fall on Ao Gera, showing an uncontrollable resentment and indignation.

It must be related to Ao Gera!

He was so sure about this. For the time being, he realized that perhaps it was also related to Ao Gera that Zi Yao was ambushed. With this thought, his heart sank into the abyss. Shi Yan understood that this mess was really serious.

The others were well-prepared. They even brought a witness. Apparently, they wanted to put him to death!

No one could know the relationship between Shi Yan and Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo. Also, he was sure that no one could overhear the conversation between him and Ka Tuo in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field.

Maybe someone was worried that his scheme would be disclosed soon. He wanted to get rid of all the related persons, and Shi Yan was the most dangerous factor that he should be eliminated as soon as possible.

Shi Yan became the victim in Zi Yao's event. He got involved, but he knew it all now.

"What more do you have to say?" Ao Gu Duo laughed brutally. "We got the witness here to tell everything related to Zi Yao's ambush. Let me see how you can deny it."

"If it is related to me, why did Princess Zi Yao give me the Purgatory Token? If I wanted to kill her, would she get out of the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field alive? Why did Ka Tuo suddenly give us up?"

Shi Yan contemplated, then defended himself, looking at Ao Gu Duo without any fear.

"Kid, you do know how to talk well. Haha! You earned Princess Zi Yao's trust to facilitate your bigger scheme!" Ao Gu Duo beamed a faint smile. "Getting to the Purgatory Star and joining the Extreme Purgatory Field is one of your conspiracies. You are a traitor. I don't know what you've planned. Anyway, killing you first is a good thing to do to prevent everything else!"

A flow of massive energy squeezed Shi Yan. Shi Yan suddenly felt so painful, as if a whole mountain was pressing down on him.

The bones in his entire body shivered, as if he could explode at any minute.

"Hold on!" Carthew suddenly opened his mouth. A flow of sharp energy shot out of him, falling on Shi Yan. A wild energy covered Shi Yan, creating a lot of invisible gaps. That was why Shi Yan wasn't exploded instantly.

"Carthew, what did you shout? I'm going to kill the empire's traitor. What does it matter to you?" Ao Gu Duo shouted, his face ruthless.

Carthew wasn't scared at all. He just smiled coldly. "He's Princess Zi Yao's subordinate. If he must be executed, Princess Zi Yao will handle it. Ao Gu Duo, aren't you trying to poke your nose in someone else's business?"

"My nephew, Ao Gera, is the Princess' escort. I'm going to eliminate the traitor on behalf of Zi Yao. Who says I'm interfering with the other's business?" Ao Gu Duo didn't talk more. He grinned fiendishly and was about to kill Shi Yan. "A traitor at the True God Realm, I can kill him at any minute. When Zi Yao asks about this, I will give her a proper answer."

Then, Ao Gu Dao roared. His energy surged like a collapsing mountain. He was about to kill Shi Yan.

Carthew paled, as if he was hesitant whether he would battle with Ao Gu Duo in this square to save Shi Yan. At that moment, his force relaxed a little bit.

Shi Yan felt tense the second time, as if so many invisible hands were strangling him. His breathing became strenuous.

In front of Ao Gu Duo at the Original God Realm, Shi Yan knew his realm was too low. Even if he could use all of his powers, he wasn't Ao Gu Duo's match. He would never have the chance to get rid of this.

He rolled his eyes, gazing at Ao Gu Duo and Ao Gera. He bit his lips and squeezed out a scarlet drop of blood. His eyes were filled with wicked resentment.

Boom!

An earth-destroying dark energy came from nowhere, covering his entire body. Instantly, he felt like he was put back to his dark cell. He couldn't see anything.

However, his painful body was relaxed in the dark. Shi Yan didn't feel pain anymore.

The tremendous flow of energy that came from Ao Gu Duo was washed away like the low tide. It disappeared shortly, as the aura Ao Gu Duo put on him was swept away.

At this moment, Ao Gu Duo's angry voice came from outside. "Leona, why does it matter to you? You shouldn't poke your nose in the other's business."

"I interfere in your business. So what?" Leona's cold and wicked voice arose.

In the next moment, Shi Yan suddenly heard Ao Gera screaming painfully, as if someone had just slapped him in the face.

"Leona, you hit my nephew? Do you want to fight with me?" Ao Gu Duo was enraged, shouting and screaming wildly.

"Oh yeah, I think I need a lesson." Leona was still composed. "Ao Gera tried to harm me. I want to capture him. You're his uncle. Perhaps you're involved in this too. I want to investigate both of you!"

At this point, the darkness was suddenly lifted.

The power controlling Shi Yan disappeared, leaving no trace at that instant. Shi Yan now floated in the air. He stooped and found Leona and Ao Gu Duo facing each other. There was no surging energy in them. However, their eyes had ignited with an unknown flame of endless fighting will.

The blonde Ao Gera had blood trickling from the corner of his mouth. One of his cheeks had a bloody handprint. He was so mad, his eyes full of grudges as he was looking at Leona.

That woman didn't even glare at Ao Gera. Her stiff mount showed her bloodthirsty and cold intentions. It looked like she could devour the light around her. Her surroundings slowly darkened, until not even a single beam of light remained.

# Chapter 770: Within one hundred years, I will take the head on your neck!

---

Leona and Ao Gu Duo were opposing each other with equal harshness, as if they could battle at any minute.

Since they were both feudal vassals of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation, they had to compete every day. Not long after Leona became a feudal vassal, she had suppressed Ao Gu Duo to become the strongest commander, with the strongest force among the feudal vassals. This irritated Ao Gu Duo a lot.

Today, Leona had interfered in his dealings with an anonymous kid. In his eyes, this was naked provocation!

Experts with a status and position like him would never let anyone provoke him like that. Thus, he was enraged. He would take Leona to make everyone understand that he was the top feudal vassal of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation.

In front of their confrontation, many people kept their mouths shut.

Carthew, Rochester, and Da Lei were calm and silent. They just watched, not bothering to give them advice or dig things further, as if they also wanted to see who was stronger.

In this place, the only person who could talk was Prince Du Tian Le. However, his realm was a little low, only at the Third Sky of King God Realm. While the two were facing each other fiercely, he had to stay away, as he was afraid that he would be involved in their battle.

Shi Yan felt pain in his whole body. He looked down with deep hatred and resentment in his eyes.

In front of so many people, Ao Gu Duo had restrained him and given him a possible crime. He almost couldn't survive.

Too humiliating!

Since he had revealed his talents in the Grace Mainland, he had never been humiliated like this. The anger in his heart right now was inexplicable. However, Shi Yan understood that with his current realm, he couldn't resist Ao Gu Duo to take his face back.

The time he had spent in there was too short. He hadn't mingled well in this star area. Without an organization and his realm being low, he didn't even have the right to voice here.

Quietly watching what was happening under his feet, Shi Yan's eyes gradually become resolute. His enthusiasm had been triggered.

He needed time!

He strongly believed that if he had enough time to grow, one day, he would make all of those who had disdained him shiver in fright. He would make Ao Gu Duo regret and pay a big price for what he had done to him today!

When the other two's confrontation was tense, Prince Du Tian Le suddenly screamed. "Wait a minute!"

Everyone couldn't help but look at him, including Leona and Ao Gu Duo, who were about to attack each other. They all stopped, frowning at him and waiting for him to talk.

"The King says, no confrontation." Du Tian Le was holding a special metal token with a crown carved on it in his hand. It didn't look like silver or gold. He caressed the crown and touched it again.

A flow of magical soul fluctuation shot out of the crown, which diverged and then fell on Leona and Ao Gu Duo respectively. The two then quieted down and bent their bodies, as if they were listening to the King's advice.

Not long after that, the soul fluctuation from the crown in Du Tian Le's hand gradually vanished. At this moment, Leona and Ao

Gu Duo stood upright, glaring at each other, then snorted at the same time.

Du Tian Le laughed evilly. "As the five great feudal vassals are all here, we can start the Extreme Purgatory Field's training."

He suddenly pitched his voice, then threw the crown in his hand into the air. A magical energy scattered, falling on the Purgatory Tokens on the waists of all the contestants. At the same time, clusters of light shot out from the surrounding monster-shaped mountains one by one.

Each of the clusters confined an extreme inmate, flying towards an area far from this square.

Shi Yan skimmed over and found at least two hundred prisoners with different realms being delivered to somewhere. The lowest realm among them was the First Sky of King God Realm. Some were even at the Third Sky of King God Realm cultivation base. They were being dragged towards the Extreme Purgatory Field under an unknown force.

A magical energy fluctuation emitted from the Purgatory Token on his waist. It seemed like some seal had been lifted.

"Anyone with the Purgatory Token can join this competition. The Purgatory Token on your waist is the key to entering the field. Once you get in the Extreme Purgatory Field, you can't get out before the time is up." Du Tian Le lifted his head and explained slowly. "There are no rules in the Extreme Purgatory Field. You can kill anyone! Prisoners, contestants, even your partners! At the end, who kills the most will have a chance to meet the King and receive the rewards. The tokens on your waists have the life sensing power. You can detect your prey's location with its help. Assess your power, then choose your preys."

Leona and Ao Gu Duo didn't talk, just quietly listening to Du Tian Le.



No one knew what Du Tian Ji had told them using his soul energy. But, the two hostile feudal vassals had calmed down and said nothing. It seemed like Leona had never hit Ao Gera, and Ao Gu Duo had never set up any conspiracy against Shi Yan.

Carthew, Rochester, and Da Lei were busy giving advice and making arrangements for their people. Shi Yan noticed that Da Meng also had a Purgatory Token on his waist. Apparently, he was one of the contestants.

Da Lei was his father. He used to have two quotas, which he had assigned to two warriors under his command. He had another arrangement for Da Meng, which was Zi Yao's quota.

But, it failed. Thus, Da Lei had no other way around but to make one of his subordinates hand back the token, so that Da Meng could join the Extreme Purgatory Field to train himself.

Besides Da Lei, Ao Gera also had one token.

His token was granted by his Uncle Ao Gu Duo. Ao Gu Duo had three quotas, of which, he gave his nephew one. It was because Zi Yao had given Shi Yan Ao Gera's quota.

Among the five feudal vassals, since Leona and Ao Gu Duo had achieved the biggest attainments, they had three quotas each. The other three vassals had two. Since Zi Yao had one quota, the total contestants entering the Extreme Purgatory Field this time were thirteen.

At this moment, a contestant holding the Purgatory Token started to move.

Leona was talking to her three warriors with a cold visage. Her bloodthirsty green eyes often glared at Ao Gu Duo and his contestants. Most of the time, she gazed at Ao Gera.

She seemed to instruct her warriors to kill Ao Gera and the other two warriors of Ao Gu Duo's team in the Extreme Purgatory Field.

Ao Gu Duo was grinning fiendishly, as he didn't show that his

team was weaker than her team. Apparently, he had the same thought as Leona, that they would compete again in the Extreme Purgatory Field.

"Shi Yan, let's go."

Tie Mu laughed, then left Carthew together with Yalan, waving at him.

Shi Yan curled his lips into a smile, walking towards Tie Mu and Yalan. However, he didn't hasten to leave just yet.

Quite the contrary, he paused, looking at Ao Gu Duo and Ao Gera over there. He pondered, then said calmly. "Master Ao Gu Duo, all the humiliation I had to bear today, I will give it back to you ten times in the future!"

Ao Gu Duo sneered disdainfully. "With just you? What are you? Haha, kid, basically, you won't get out of the Extreme Purgatory Field alive."

Shi Yan was calm, pointing at the sky and talking faintly. "I, Shi Yan, swear that within one hundred years, I will take the head on your neck, Ao Gu Duo! Otherwise, within one hundred years, I will kill myself on the spot!"

Everybody was shaken, looking at him disbelievingly. Their eyes showed that what they just heard was unbelievable.

One hundred years was just a short period for a True God Realm warrior to break through the King God Realm. Many people couldn't enter the Original God Realm, no matter how hard they had tried during their whole life. And, Ao Gu Duo was at the Second Sky of Original God Realm. Did Shi Yan lose his mind when he made his pledge?

Ao Gu Duo laughed as he was crazy. "Good, good! I want to see if you can even live for one hundred years or not! Hahaha!"

Shi Yan wasn't affected. He pointed at Ao Gera, talking as if no one else was surrounding him. "I'll kill you in the Extreme

Purgatory Field. If you dare, get in there."

Everybody looked at him dazedly, as if he were an insane person.

He was only at the True God Realm. Among the contestants, his realm was the lowest. And, Ao Gera was at the Second Sky of King God Realm, a famous young expert.

Today, in front of the five great feudal vassals and Prince Du Tian Le, Shi Yan said that he wanted to kill Ao Gera in the Extreme Purgatory Field. Was it a funny joke?

Killing Ao Gu Duo within one hundred years, killing Ao Gera in the Extreme Purgatory Field... His rampancy and arrogance had stunned people. They all looked at him with odd faces, as they thought that this young man was quite crazy and funny.

However, they couldn't smile on seeing his resolute countenance. Apparently, he wasn't just joking. Although he had no tremendous aura on his body, the impression he gave the others wasn't ordinary.

"I'll wait for you there," Ao Gera's eyes became dark and sinister, "...if you dare to find me."

"Sir Ao Gu Duo, please try to restrain your sorrow and go with the flow to prepare a good coffin for your nephew." Shi Yan smiled and chinned up, then walked away. He passed by Yalan and Tie Mu, who were petrified, heading towards the Extreme Purgatory Field.

Ao Gu Duo put on a cold face while his eyes were flared up with fire. He continually sneered. "Ao Gera, if you can't torture that kid to death in the Extreme Purgatory Field, I don't have a nephew like you!"

"Don't worry, Uncle. I'll make him taste all the pains and sorrows of this world. I will use the Fantasy Stone to record the scene of his demise. You can save it and watch later," Ao Gera said deliberately and arrogantly.

"Go. I'm waiting for your good news," Ao Gu Duo waved his hand.

Ao Gera and the other two warriors bent to say goodbye, then flew up in Shi Yan's direction.

"Ao Gu Duo, wanna bet with me?" Leona said, "I'm going to use the next life star to bet with you. I bet that your nephew will die and Shi Yan will survive."

Carthew, Da Lei, Rochester, and Du Tian Le were baffled. They disbelievingly looked at the infamous woman, whose brutal reputation had been spread wide. They had no idea why she favored Shi Yan that much.

Did she just simply want to compete with Ao Gu Duo? Anyway, using a life star for that, was she insane?

"I'll play with you!" Ao Gu Duo shouted, his face ferocious.

# Chapter 771: Leaving alone

---

Shi Yan didn't know that Leona had used him to make a big bet with Ao Gu Duo. Using an entire life star to bet was something rare even here.

After leaving the mountain range, Shi Yan turned into a bunch of light, flying rapidly towards the Extreme Purgatory Field as guided by his Purgatory Token. Yalan and Tie Mu followed behind him, gazing at his back with fear.

Soon, Yalan and Tie Mu had caught up with him with their Second Sky of King God Realm.

"Kid, are you crazy? Ao Gera is at the Second Sky of King God Realm. Even we aren't sure whether we can kill him or not. You've just reached the True God Realm." Tie Mu tilted his head, eyeing him strangely. "Even if you want to compete with him, you shouldn't make it so explicit, should you? It isn't different from asking Ao Gera to kill you in the Extreme Purgatory Field, is it?"

Shi Yan frowned, talking in a low tone. "I believe that I can make Ao Gera not be able to leave the Extreme Purgatory Field alive." He had his confidence after all.

"Taking Ao Gu Duo's head within one hundred years... You do have the guts!" Yalan appraised him, shaking her head disbelievingly. "No need to mention you, in the entire Dark Firmament Divine Nation, besides our King, I don't know who can say those words like you. Even Madame Leona doesn't have such confidence.

This was something Yalan just couldn't believe.

Ao Gu Duo was one of the five great feudal vassals. In the divine nation, he was just under one person, but above tens of thousands of people. His competence and the force under his command were extremely mighty. He had so many brutal subordinates as well.

Even if he could reach the same realm as Ao Gu Duo, without a crazily strong background, he shouldn't even dream of defeating Ao Gu Duo, let alone killing him.

Original God Realm experts had their own ways to protect themselves. In case they couldn't resist anymore, they could always escape easily.

Ao Gu Duo was a Second Sky of Original God Realm warrior. If someone wanted to kill him, he should be at least at the Third Sky of Original God Realm. Only having one rank higher could guarantee the desired result.

This whole vast divine nation had only one warrior at the Third Sky of Original God Realm, who was also the King of the country, King Du Tian Ji.

The number of experts who were at the Third Sky of Original God Realm cultivation base in the entire Raging Flame Star Area could be counted with one's fingers. Each of them was the tyrant of an area or the freaky hermits, about whom no one knew whether they were still alive or not.

Compared to such existences, Shi Yan at the True God Realm was just a tiny ant. The high sky in front of him still hid so many unknown dangers.

Saying that he could kill Ao Gu Duo within one hundred years wasn't arrogant. It was idiotic!

Thus, no matter how high Yalan had evaluated Shi Yan, she didn't think that he had any basis for his haughty words. She thought he was mad at Ao Gu Duo, so he spoke up idiotically.

Hearing Yalan, Tie Mu beamed a forced smile while shaking his head. Although he didn't mock the other, his attitude and countenance were saying that he totally agreed with Yalan. He didn't believe that Shi Yan could fulfill his pledge.

Shi Yan didn't explain further, just accelerating towards the

Extreme Purgatory Field with cold eyes and a composed visage.

Groups of prisoners were driven by some unknown force and moved into the Extreme Purgatory Field. From time to time, a bunch of light darted by Shi Yan, Yalan, and Tie Mu. They all headed to a different side of the Extreme Purgatory Field.

The Extreme Purgatory Field was a vast place, situated on half of the Purgatory Star. Dangers hid in the mountains, lakes, and immense forests in this area.

Through Yalan and Tie Mu, Shi Yan got to know that highly authorized staff had created the barriers, formations, and restrictions in this area. They said that the Extreme Purgatory Field was a magical formation in itself, which had snatched the control of Nature. With the additional barriers and restrictions, it became the one of the most dangerous areas in the Dark Firmament Divine Nation.

Even without competition and the villains of the Raging Flame Star Area, warriors entering this area would encounter a lot of dangers. They had to be cautious about countering the manmade traps.

This area had so many terrifying places, which were much harsher than even the cold, dark outer space.

Anyway, the most dangerous place often hid the best fortunate encounters. The Extreme Purgatory Field was a place like that.

The Purgatory Token in his hand flashed suddenly as Shi Yan turned into a bunch of light, which was then dragged into an ash-gray halo instantly.

When his body appeared in that place, his soul altar was shaken hard. A light of surprise flashed in his eyes as he beamed a happy smile.

The rumor was true!

Staying in this place, Shi Yan didn't use any bit of his energy to

comprehend the Star, Space, or Death and Life power Upanishads, but he still felt so sensitive to them.

The Extreme Purgatory Field seemed to have an invisible energy that couldn't be seen or sensed by naked eyes and soul. In this place circled by that miraculous energy, any warrior could gain a deeper understanding of his own power Upanishad.

Holding his breath and concentrating, Shi Yan instinctively let his soul sink into the power Upanishad tier in his soul altar. The three powers Upanishad rippled with miraculous energy fluctuations.

This kind of a fluctuation could resonate with some energy in the Extreme Purgatory Field. Shortly, his sensibility of Space, Star, Death and Life powers Upanishad was connected. He instantly felt like he was sinking in the center of the magnetic exploding space, where space power twisted wildly.

The Death and Life Intent Domain proactively overflowed without the soul to guide them. In this moment, he felt like he had gotten back to the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, where he had used the Death and Life power Upanishad to heal Zi Yao.

Although he couldn't see the sun, moon, or stars in the gray sky of this area, his Star Martial Spirit was working miraculously.

Shi Yan concentrated on sensing more, sending his soul to the Star Martial Spirit. He felt like he was taking a trip to the immense starry sky, and, was sensitive enough to feel the trajectory of each star.

In this marvelous place, Shi Yan didn't think about anything else. He just closed his eyes and felt. He found that he could approach his power Upanishad endlessly. He could visualize the most mysterious changes of the heaven and earth. If he could quiet down and comprehend, the benefit it could bring to his realm would be immeasurable!



Swoosh Swoosh!

Two silhouettes landed next to him. Shi Yan turned around and found Yalan and Tie Mu.

Those two warriors under Carthew's command stood next to him and squinted, their faces passionate. Just like him, they closed their eyes and silently comprehended their powers.

"Such a magical place! The rumor's true. If we can cultivate here forever, our understanding of the realm would be formidably profound. Oh, I don't want to leave this place ever." Tie Mu laughed with a happy countenance. "Thank you, Master Carthew. He gave us his quotas. If I can survive this Extreme Purgatory Field, I think I will absolutely break through to the Third Sky of King God Realm."

"Good thought, anyway," Yalan snorted. "Don't you know that the Extreme Purgatory Field will open once every fifty years? Every time it opens, it lasts only for three years. Do you know how tremendous a quantity of materials we have to use to keep it open for three years?"

"Yeah?" Tie Mu looked like he didn't know anything.

Shi Yan was surprised. He stopped concentrating his mind, looking at Yalan seriously.

"I heard that the Extreme Purgatory Field's an incomparably magical formation. It could convert the power of Nature. However, it requires an enormous amount of energy and materials to maintain it. I heard that it needs at least ten thousand pieces of Divine Crystals for each year! And, they must be the medium quality pieces! Besides, it requires so many kinds of materials. Some of them are so rare that only the Land of God Punishment could have them."

Yalan paused for a while and then continued. "When our master came here, didn't you see that he brought a large number of

materials? Where do you think they would ship them? I'm telling you, they will be consumed all in the Extreme Purgatory Field!"

Shi Yan was stunned on listening to her.

He immediately got why Leona's battleships carried a massive amount of materials. They must be used to maintain the Extreme Purgatory Field.

It consumed ten thousand Divine Crystals each year, along with so many other rare materials. To retain this magnificent formation for three years, how big should the amount of the required materials be?

No wonder why the quotas to enter the Extreme Purgatory Field were too little. Da Lei only had two, and a noble princess like Zi Yao only had one.

Suddenly, he felt grateful to Zi Yao for giving him a chance.

The quota he had was snatched from Ao Gera's hand. The value of a Purgatory Token perhaps was much more precious than an amethyst battleship!

"Shi Yan, do you want to go with us or leave alone?" After explaining to the two men, Yalan hesitated for a while and then asked. "Your realm is too low. Walking alone in this perilous place will be too risky. If you go with us, we can back up each other. At least, Ao Gera can't kill you shortly."

She actually meant good for him.

Tie Mu grinned. "Yeah, we should go together. Besides the experts from the other feudal vassals, those villains won't dare to trespass on us here. We can kill them slowly. What do you think?"

During the time in the gravitational field, Shi Yan and these two had talked and become familiar with each other. It seemed like Carthew had advised them to protect him for a while.

However, Shi Yan didn't appreciate their treatment. He just

smiled and slightly bent his body. "I will keep your goodwill in my heart. But, I'm getting here to train myself. If I go with you, you will shield me from dangers, so I won't actually be able to train myself then. Yeah, we should part here. Don't worry about me. If I have the guts to get in the Extreme Purgatory Field, of course, I have means to protect myself."

"Are you sure?" Tie Mu was a little bit worried. "Ao Gera wants to kill you, and he isn't alone. The other two from Ao Gu Duo's team aren't good people either. When they go together, not many people dare to provoke them in the Extreme Purgatory Field."

"Do you believe in yourself that much?" Yalan snorted while frowning.

Shi Yan smiled and clasped his fist to greet them, then changed the direction, leaving alone. His figure flashed, then disappeared into the gap between two grand mountains. After a while, he disappeared completely from their sights.

# Chapter 772: Seek battle!

---

Inside the Extreme Purgatory Field.

Yalan and Tie Mu knitted their brows tightly, looking in the general direction where Shi Yan had left. They contemplated for a while.

"Master asked us to notice and see if he has any mysteries. Turns out our Master has wronged him." Yalan talked with a strange countenance. "He assumed that Shi Yan would go with us. But he's underestimated his arrogance. Perhaps, it's fearless ignorance."

"You say, did he know our intentions?" That's why he didn't want to go with us," asked Tie Mu.

Yalan shook her head. "I don't know. But I'm sure this man isn't simple. He has some big secrets. Or else, with his True God Realm cultivation base, it's impossible to be so haughty. You know... the time we were in the gravitational room."

Tie Mu's eyes flared with a strange light. "Yeah, he's not that simple. I have never met any True God Realm warriors who have such powerful physique. If he can break through to the King God Realm and condense the God Body with his current body, perhaps... he can give Ao Gera a painful headache."

"This Ao Gera's so disgusting. If we meet him, we should tear his face, too!" Yalan snorted. "I don't know why Zi Yao accepted him. Would she aim at Ao Gu Duo, his Uncle?"

"Maybe. Being princes and princesses, they have their special concerns. No one could read the King's mind. It seems he would let his children fight against each other until someone dies. Then he will choose his heir, the one who can suppress all of his or her siblings with great talents. In his eyes, perhaps only a character like that could bring the divine nation to a more prosperous future." Tie Mu shook his head, sighing. "Under his tacit

agreement, princes and princesses are trying to gather forces to subdue the others. I don't know if this kind of competition is good or bad."

"I think Shi Yan won't have a good ending. I heard Prince Du Feng went missing. Princess Zi Yao is a woman. In the divine nation, we've never had a ruling Queen. Princess Zi Yao's future will be troublesome." Yalan was a little discontented with the divine nation's gender discrimination.

"We're just normal citizens, we can't control that much. I just hope that our Master would make a right decision. Or else, we're also involved," Tie Mu beamed a forced smile.

Yalan didn't talk more. They prepared for a while, sending the Soul Consciousness to the token to sense. Then, they left in the opposite direction to Shi Yan.

-----

The Extreme Purgatory Field was extremely vast with endless rivers, mountain ranges, big lakes, and forest with luxuriant floras.

Shi Yan strolled aimlessly in the dark forest with hundred-meter-diameter trees. He had sent his Soul Consciousness into the Purgatory Token to sense.

The Extreme Purgatory Field was said to be a great formation of the ancient time. In this place, Soul Consciousness was limited. Even his Soul Consciousness added with space power seemed to be restrained by some invisible power. Shi Yan could only feel the living beings within one mile around.

His Soul Consciousness wasn't as good as the Purgatory Token in this area.

Each participant had a Purgatory Token, which they could use to sense the living energy of creatures around within the scale of five miles.

Within five miles, as long as there were magnetic fields of living beings, the contestants could detect them via the Purgatory Token. Since this token was stronger than his Soul Consciousness, in this forest, Shi Yan considered it his main secret treasure to sense around.

Of course, it didn't include the other participants.

Warriors with the Purgatory Token could prevent the others from detecting him using the Soul Consciousness. In other words, Shi Yan could only sense the hazardous inmates not Yalan, Tie Mu, or Ao Gera, who also held the Purgatory Token.

Anyway, they were also the participants, who came here to train their realm and hunt the inmates down.

The divine nation didn't encourage the contestants to kill each other. And, they neither had any document to prohibit this activity. In case they met their enemies in the Extreme Purgatory Field and wanted to kill the others, the divine nation wouldn't care about that.

The winner will get the throne. It's always been the principle of the divine nation. Because of bloody competitions, the divine nation had earned their today's attainment. Each of them had kept the smell of blood and fighting desire in their hearts so as they could resist and battle against the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce or the Underworld League.

A flow of Soul Consciousness was sent into the Purgatory Token, creating an invisible connection with his soul.

Shi Yan sauntered in the vast forest. He hadn't detected any commotions of the prisoners.

Prisoners put into the Extreme Purgatory Field were all at the King God Realm, from the First Sky to the Third Sky. There were several hundred of them in this place.

However, the Extreme Purgatory Field was endlessly vast. It

wasn't easy to meet several hundred people scattering in this area.

Shi Yan didn't hasten. The Soul Consciousness he had sent into the Purgatory Token was still sensing for living beings within five miles around. At the same time, he had released his Soul Consciousness to sense the commotions around him.

His Soul Consciousness was special with the support of space power. As long as a tiny energy movement was made, he would get it immediately.

Along his way, Shi Yan found at least six areas with signs of faint energy. From Tie Mu and Yalan, he knew that the Extreme Purgatory Field had so many perilous areas. If the inmates and the participants were careless entering there, they would have big trouble or even have their souls vanish.

Thus, whenever he detected strange energy fluctuations, he would proactively stay away. Shi Yan wouldn't take risks.

When he reached a bared hill, he stopped, sat down neatly on the peak, looking forward.

Strange drawings and patterns were carved under his feet. They were the restrictions and barriers he had learned from the Blacksmith's Secrets of Success in the Dark Magnetic Noxious Mist. He knew how to make the magical formations, restrictions, and barriers that naked eyes couldn't see. Only some special Soul Consciousness could sense them.

Shi Yan had set up this formation at the edge of the mountain range. Staying in there and with the hindrance provided naturally with the mist, people from the outside couldn't see anything but a dim place where naked eyes couldn't see through.

Sitting on the peak of the hill, Shi Yan looked nonchalantly at the further distance. He could only see peaks of mountains juttred in the clouds. Gray clouds and brown clouds hovered in those areas. From the far distance, they looked like a gloomy quilt.

Touching his forehead, Shi Yan's soul flew into the soul altar of the heaven flames. Shi Yan sent his thought. "Is your Soul Consciousness also affected in this area?"

"Yes."

The heaven flames sent him the same thought. It meant this area was somehow special with a magical power that could hinder the Soul Consciousness. Even the peculiar living beings like the heaven flames couldn't sense the commotions around clearly.

Frowning, Shi Yan suddenly shouted. "You guys scatter, staying five miles close to me. Watch everywhere for me. I need to stay quiet for a while."

Flames of heaven flames flew out from Shi Yan's soul altar. Shortly, they disappeared.

Heaven flames were his hidden trick. At the critical moment, they could help him overturn the situation, turning from defeat to victory. Besides, he could use them as his guards.

Since the heaven flames and Shi Yan were interlinked, once they sensed danger, they could send the information to his soul directly. Shi Yan would have more time to prepare.

After the heaven flames had left, Shi Yan gradually quieted down. He kept a flow of Soul Consciousness in the Purgatory Token. Sitting on this barren hill, he cleared his mind, making his soul empty, while paying attention to the power Upanishad tier, trying to take advantages of the resonance in this place.

Relaxed his mind, Shi Yan didn't think about the other burdens. His face was calm as he closed his eyes. His aura retreated little by little until he was like a motionless rock that seemed to be there for ten thousand years. Gradually, his living energy fluctuation also disappeared.

Shi Yan understood his weakness: low realm.

With the True God Realm cultivation base, killing Ao Gera was a



tough task especially when Ao Gera wasn't alone. If Shi Yan had to meet them shortly, he would have no chance to win.

He believed that he could break through to the King God Realm shortly. That's why he dared to boast his arrogant words.

With his innate background, when he broke into the King God Realm, his power Upanishad could advance to the God Domain. At the same time, he could get the God Body. Shi Yan believed that even Ao Gera who had the Second Sky of King God Realm cultivation base even he couldn't be his rival!

He has this confidence!

Many prisoners and participants in the Extreme Purgatory Field would become the resources for him to get stronger. In this place, he could step into the sky, advancing to the new level.

Shi Yan closed his eyes, staying atop the barren hill. He was using the miracle features of the Extreme Purgatory Field to relax and focus on his power Upanishad comprehension. Shi Yan didn't notice how time flies out there.

-----

Ten miles away from Shi Yan's location, three one-eyed prisoners stood shoulder by shoulder, alertly watching here and there.

These three people were at the First Sky of King God Realm. They seemed to be condemned for a serious crime. Not only was one of their eyes taken but they had also been carved with the terrifying inmate mark on their faces, which indicated their soon-to-be-executed status. The three of them were from the Sea Clan, which were rare in outer space. They had fish scales on their necks.

They were almost three meters tall, wearing ragged garments. Their deep green eyes were cautiously watching everywhere. Their bizarre eyes also showed their ferocious features.

They were all alert as they knew that they were the preys of the

participants. Once they meet a strong contestant, they would be killed soon, becoming the war achievement of the other.

Thus, on the way there, they had always tried to avoid the areas where experts might gather. They only aimed at the quiet and isolated areas to go.

While they didn't recognize it, they had entered the area where Shi Yan was staying.

Although Shi Yan's Purgatory Token hadn't reported him the living energy fluctuation, the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame, one of the heaven flames, had found them.

The immense blue flame squeezed itself on a leaf of a giant tree that kept it from the others' views. Those three King God Realm warriors didn't see anything abnormal. They still headed toward Shi Yan.

The Yin Spirit Ghost Flame had sent its thought directly to Shi Yan's soul altar.

As Shi Yan had just immersed in the miracle state not for long, he hadn't comprehended enough the mysteries of this place. He woke up all of a sudden with shaken appearance. "Which realm?"

"Stronger than you by a little bit. According to human warrior classification, they should be at the First Sky of King God Realm. However, they have three. I'm not sure you can handle them," said the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame.

"Three?" Shi Yan was startled. He hesitated for a while then said, "Only bloody battles could help learn the powers faster. These three come here in good time. Then, there they are!"

He stood up, took a deep breath then touched the void. Barriers and restrictions around him disappeared, showing a way. He sauntered, his face calm and cold while fierce fighting will surging in his eyes.

# Chapter 773: A much valuable battle

---

A big lake that looked like a clear shining mirror was situated in the corner of the Purgatory Star. This lake was so crystal clear that people could see its bottom.

Conical mountains surrounded this lake. Those mountains weren't too high as they were around one thousand meters more or less. Observation pavilions were built on each mountain. Beautiful maids and guards were serving the powerful officials of the divine nation.

At this moment, Du Tian Le, and the five feudal vassals Leona, Ao Gu Duo, Carthew, Rochester, and Da Lei were sitting neatly in different luxury pavilions to enjoy good food and wine.

The five feudal vassals had their retinue standing by their sides. They didn't say anything, but they were allowed to enjoy the food and wine with their masters.

Du Tian Le smiled tenderly. He stooped, looking at the lake underneath. A strange crown sparkled in his hand, it radiated beams of light shooting directly into the lake.

After the strange light shot into the crystal lake, it changed magically. Images started to appear on the lake.

The Extreme Purgatory Field on the other side of the Purgatory Star became the images projected on the lake surface. Layers of mountain ranges, large lakes, murmuring rivers and streams, and vast luxuriant forests were projected gradually. Even the lowest positions were shown clearly.

This lake was a giant mirror that was transferring what was happening in the Extreme Purgatory Field to this place. Everybody standing on the surrounding mountains could see the details of the battles taking place in the Extreme Purgatory Field.

At this moment, the lake mirror was showing some fierce battles.

Ao Gera was the outstanding contestant, who had already started to hunt inmates in the forest.

Ao Gera and the other two warriors under Ao Gu Duo were coldly surrounding two prisoners at a mountain foot.

Those two prisoners were at the Second Sky of King God Realm. At this moment, they were hurt badly, and they were trying with their last breaths to run away.

Ao Gera was deliberate even though he was busy. A gleam of arrogance sparkled in his eyes. He laughed like a howling hungry wolf gazing at one of the two prisoners.

The other two subordinates of Ao Gu Duo were joining hands to kill the other. They were all calm just like a hawk eyeing a sheep on the ground.

Shortly, they stormed over with brutal deeds. They used clusters of scorching light to block the man and torture him to death.

Ao Gera's battle also ended shortly. When his God Domain expanded, people could see a glorious gold halo rippling like water, extending everywhere.

Wherever his gold light crossed through everything was smashed. Ancient trees, big rocks, and even the rivers were exploded. The sharp gold energy had swept everything away as easy as breaking the dried branches of a tree.

The warrior, who had the same realm as Ao Gera, was blockaded in his God Domain. Shortly, the gold halo bound him. Frightening bleeding cuts appeared thickly on his God Body. That man resisted hard. He released his God Domain, which created a pressing energy wave.

Ao Gera faced the sky and shouted. The gold energy on his body slashed down from the sky like a sharp golden sword showering the land.

When Ao Gera used his true power, his entire body was covered

in a gold nimbus, giving people a brutal and vicious feeling that he could fiercely crush everything into pieces. Bunches of gold energy light shot out from him breaking that prisoner's God Domain. The bleeding cuts on his body also exploded at once.

Instantly, that man became a bloody corpse, as if he had been executed with the 'ten-thousand-cut' sentence. His death was terribly pathetic.

Ao Gera had been nonchalant from the beginning. He didn't even bother to look at the dead man, spat, mumbled something then leaped up. His figure flashed and he gathered with his two other teammates. They continued hunting.

The lake was projecting the same battle, which was happening with the three young people of Leona's team. All three had a bloody aura, their eyes were wild and brutal. They looked like the devils in Hell just like their master. Bloody murderous aura shot up to the sky.

The pupils of the only woman in that team of three showed a frightening faint color. The onlookers didn't know what secret technique she was cultivating, but on her way, murderous aura had condensed into real entities, turning into a dozens of meters blood python. It was animated and lively like a real object. It stuck its tongue out, facing the sky, emitting a tremendous energy fluctuation.

The woman who used to mock Shi Yan hid her hands in her sleeves, strolling as if she was taking a walk in her garden. And she just sauntered behind her blood python like that.

The python was like a real beast. Whenever it sensed signs of living beings, it would savagely dash away. This bloodthirsty commotion froze the prisoners, making them unable to run. Shortly, the python had swallowed three prisoners.

After one hour, the python would open its big mouth and spit out a bloody skeleton. The flesh on the skeleton seemed to be

butchered. Extremely horrible!

No one could resist this woman on her way. She hadn't performed any attack, but using only a blood python she had condensed from the bloodthirsty murderous aura. She had made the inmates snacks for her python.

Experts of Carthew's and Rochester's teams hadn't encountered enemies yet. High-realm prisoners had avoided them proactively as if they knew those four people weren't easy to mess with. They had tried their best to stay away from them.

Da Meng, son of Da Lei, had the Peak of True God Realm. However, the beasts flew out of his soul altar were all formidable. On his way, he didn't need to move his hands. People ran away as soon as they saw his beasts.

Da Meng was at the Peak of True God Realm like Shi Yan. His path was smooth, and he hadn't had a chance to show his talents.

The experts sitting in the mountains to watch the fun shown in the lake all concentrated on the battles in the mirror.

"Ah!"

Du Tian Le suddenly screamed. A strange light flashed in his eyes as he focused on an isolated area.

The blood crown on his hand sparkled. The area he was watching was zoomed in so many times. Everything there became clearer.

Leona, Ao Gu Duo, Carthew, Rochester, and Da Lei, the five great feudal vassals became interested in that scene. Their eyes like electric strikes shot at that area.

Shi Yan's figured appeared clearly in that area. At this moment, he was dashing crazily from the hill toward the three Sea Clan prisoners that the Yin Spirit Ghost Flame had sensed.

"Haha, a whole life star. Interesting. Interesting. I should watch carefully." Rochester laughed noisily. His eyes skimmed through

Leona and Ao Gu Duo.

Da Lei was shaken. He had a concealed gleam of hope in his eyes as if he hated that he couldn't make Shi Yan bury his body in the Extreme Purgatory Field and that the young man would never be able to get out of the Extreme Purgatory Field alive.

Carthew slightly frowned.

"Haha, that boy doesn't have a good fortune. Seems Ao Gera won't need to take action. Hmm, but I think he got good luck now. If he meets Ao Gera, he will die in the worst way!" Ao Gu Duo received the strong liquor the maid served him. He gulped several mouthfuls, laughing loudly.

Leona wore a cold and sinister face. Her eyes were as sharp as icicles. She beamed a faint smile. "Are you blind? Don't you see that Shi Yan's the one who proactively takes action?"

"Yeah, that kid has taken action first. One-on-three, people. And his opponents are the King God Realm experts. Is he insane? Does he have any tremendous background?" Du Tian Le continued then took a sip of his wine, his eyes strange.

"He's a madman. Muahaha. Dares to boast arrogantly saying that he would kill me within one hundred years. Isn't that crazy?" Ao Gu Duo finished a bottle of strong wine and threw it away. That bottle exploded in the air. He bared his teeth. His craziness appeared on his face. "Who dares say to kill me within one hundred years in the divine nation? I've been moving unhindered around the universe for years. I've seen so many different characters. He's just an ant! That motherf\*cker is telling jokes!"

He was still holding on to what Shi Yan had bragged. He couldn't just let it go no matter what.

"If I want to kill you, no need to wait for one hundred years, my dear. As long as our King nods his head, I'll kill you!" Leona smiled coldly like a devil, snapping back.

"Try me!" Ao Gu Duo was enraged, his face ferocious. "Haha, don't think that because you're ranked over me means you can actually defeat me. When I, Ao Gu Duo, had topped the feudal vassals, you were still struggling to be a feudal vassal. If the King didn't notice you, you motherf\*cker, you would have died in my hands already!"

"I do hope that the King would agree, so then I can cut your head off and make a nice chamber pot." Leona laughed like crazy. Her dark green eyes were filled with bloodthirsty intentions.

"Guys, could you please quiet down so we can watch the battle?" Carthew rubbing his forehead, couldn't help but scream.

Du Tian Le also advised them with his soft voice. "You've made a bet already. Just calm down and watch it. It's a whole life star you know. You should pay attention. Don't be hurried."

Hearing him, Leona and Ao Gu Duo snorted in unison then stopped quarreling. Their look fell on the lake underneath again to watch the clear scene projected.

At this moment, Shi Yan had faced the three Sea Clan prisoners. Their eyes locked. Sparks shot everywhere.

-----

Dark Firmament Star.

Deep inside the vast, grand palace sat on the throne a tall and sturdy man wearing brocade clothes. He looked at something in front of him.

Zi Yao sat cross-legged next to him, her beautiful eyes gazed at something.

A magical mirror appeared in the middle of the hall, which showed Shi Yan and the three Sea Clan prisoners.

"Is that him?" the man frowned, asking all of a sudden. "Are you sure he and the other have some relations?"



"It's true. Their powers Upanishad are alike, the Soul Burial Ground," Zi Yao confirmed.

The man nodded, grinning faintly. "Interesting. I need to watch carefully. If we can use him, he will be a sharp sword of the divine nation. I hope he would be like what you say: outstanding will and persistence. About his shallow cultivation base, it's alright. We can increase him gradually. The most important feature of a warrior is his fighting will! I need to watch carefully then."

"Father, you won't be disappointed." Zi Yao said anxiously as she was praying that Shi Yan could debut better and surprise the others. That would make them appreciate him.

It seemed his performance this time would determine his death or life, and his future.

# Chapter 774: Rip the sky!

---

It was out of Shi Yan's expectation that the three prisoners were more excited than he was when Shi Yan appeared.

The inmate marks on the faces of those one-eyed Sea Clan prisoners twisted as they were laughing crazily and excitedly.

"God loves the three of us!"

"Yes, it's God's love for us. Our first encounter is a lone warrior. And, he has only the True God Realm cultivation base!"

"Haha, it's so good. At least one of us can survive this time!"

The three Sea Clan prisoners were cheered up as they found the other had only the True God Realm cultivation base. They were stimulated, screaming strangely. They didn't wait until Shi Yan stopped moving, storming toward him.

King God Realm experts had the God Domain, and those three weren't an exception.

As they were the warriors of the Sea clan, most of them would cultivate water power Upanishad, which made their God Domain have the attributes of water. Once they urged it, water would murmur around their bodies.

Moisture aura flooded the place. Water waves that naked eyes could see wound around their bodies as if they were standing in the middle of a furious current, showing all the advantages of the Sea Clan.

Inside the Water God Domain, those Sea Clan prisoners felt like fish in the sea. Their powers and the God Domain had fused perfectly, which had doubled their speed and bursting energy. A fierce flow of energy swarmed over Shi Yan like the rolling flood current.

In that moment, Shi Yan was submerged in the seawater. His

powers were hindered by many layers. His body's movements also struggled. It was hard to activate his powers.

The God Domain of a warrior would bring him tremendous support. Different God Domains would affect each other. If these three had cultivated different powers Upanishad, once they joined hands, if they let their God Domains overlap, their powers would be reduced.

However, these three were from the same Sea Clan, and their power Upanishad was water, which made their God Domain's attributes unified.

Thus, when they activated their God Domains, they wouldn't affect but promote each other, expanding the coverage of the combined God Domain.

Shi Yan felt like he had fallen in a muddy puddle while his powers were weakened. Seeing the three prisoners furiously storming forward to attack him, his face became serious.

He had underestimated the might of the others and the mysteries of the overlapped God Domain. Right when the battle had started, he fell into a disadvantaged situation.

Seeing waves rolling torrentially inside the God Domain, Shi Yan cleared his mind. His eyes changed as all the impure thoughts in his head were washed away. Now his mind was as tranquil as an old well that had no ripples.

Touching his forehead, the soul altar suddenly spun. Marvelous flames appeared in his eyes.

A scorching aura burst out from his body. Instantly, he was covered in a sea of fire. Flame shot out dazzlingly, twirling around him.

This is the flaming power of the Sun Original Essence!

He had absorbed a large amount of flaming energy in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. As soon as his Star power

Upanishad flickered, the flaming solar energy stored in his chest would be stimulated at once.

He also borrowed the power of the Vermilion Bird True Flame and the Earth Flame.

Shortly, he turned into a fire freak with the blazing fire burning on his entire body and spread out to the environment from him.

The torrential power of water from the three prisoners' God Domain turned into white steam before it could touch Shi Yan's body. The soft power of water was dissolved rapidly, turned into mist and vanished. It couldn't gather again.

The Vermilion Bird True Flame and the Earth Flame were ones of the heaven flames. After so many years of refining, their flames had become extremely hot energy. The power they had contributed to Shi Yan had doubled his flaming solar energy.

Sizzle sizzle sizzle!

Thick white mist diffused everywhere. Shortly, Shi Yan and the three prisoners were hidden in the mist. Their figures disappeared temporarily.

Ao Gu Duo, Leona, and the other feudal vassals couldn't see what was happening in there. All were surprised.

Ao Gu Duo was astounded for a while then barked with his foul-mouth. "That motherf\*cker's cultivating the fire power Upanishad. No wonder why he dares to face those three prisoners directly. He's lucky, indeed."

Fire is always the nemesis of water. They have a natural dispute. If Shi Yan's fire energy was abundant, he could oppress the God Domain of water attribute.

Ao Gu Duo didn't know Shi Yan. Thus, when he saw the fire burning on his body, he immediately assumed that Shi Yan had cultivated fire power Upanishad. Leona knitted her brows as she was also surprised.

She had communicated with Shi Yan so she had a clear understanding of his secrets.

Leona mused discreetly.

If the mark on his forehead is real, his power Upanishad shouldn't be like this. Did I see it wrong?

Carthew and Rochester instinctively thought that Shi Yan's main power was Fire Upanishad. They got his intentions and appraised him for making a good decision in choosing the opponents. As he had found the Sea Clan men to fight, he had made a good use of the natural nemesis features between the powers Upanishad to subdue the Sea Clan prisoners.

Only Da Lei didn't have such thought. Among this group, he was the only one who had witnessed Shi Yan using the Soul Burial Ground.

He believed that if the man understood that wicked power Upanishad, he wouldn't consider another power Upanishad his main power to cultivate. He contemplated and reasoned. Afterward, he couldn't help but acclaim Shi Yan inwardly.

The king of the divine nation in the Dark Firmament Star far away also had a gleam of surprise. He stared at the magical mirror in front of him then turned to Princess Zi Yao. "Zao-er, you said that he cultivates the Death Upanishad... right?"

Zi Yao nodded to confirm then smiled deliberately. "Father, that man has many secrets. When we were in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field, he used the Star power Upanishad to connect with the Sun Original Essence and collected its flaming solar energy. The power he's using now is from his previous accumulation. He doesn't cultivate fire Upanishad."

Du Tian Ji grinned bizarrely. "The martial path doesn't have an end. Sometimes, mixing powers isn't always a good method. I hope this boy knew it already. If he's stubborn and cultivating

additional powers, he would get nothing in the end."

"Father, don't worry. I think he knows his goals," said Zi Yao smilingly.

Du Tian Ji nodded. He didn't talk more, and they got back to the battle in the mirror.

Sizzle Sizzle Sizzle!

Thick white mist diffused. The three Sea Clan prisoners' furious attack ended in a failure.

The three prisoners couldn't help but curse. They knew that they weren't lucky this time since Shi Yan had cultivated the Fire power Upanishad. With the nemesis feature, their attack was dissolved. They were totally enraged.

God Domain was still covering everywhere as they didn't intend to use all of their powers. They exchanged looks then diverged instantly, moving toward Shi Yan in a triangle formation.

In the white mist, three several-hundred-meter rivers were driven by their powers from ten miles away.

The three rivers flowed like the milky way with billions of tons of seawater showering from the sky. They were like three massive whips flogging toward Shi Yan.

These three were careful. Whenever they arrived at an area, they would check if it had lake or rivers or not. In critical times, they could borrow the force of the river and lake to resist the enemies.

Thus, within ten miles from where they appeared, there would be lakes or rivers.

Three hundred-meter heaven rivers grumblingly were condensed into three crystal white ribbons falling from the sky. Big ancient trees exploded all of a sudden as they couldn't bear the fierce attack of water. The dried trees and leaves also contributed to the mass of the rivers.

One of the three prisoners was cunning enough to make his river roll the big rocks along. The rocks moving fast in the river was so intimidating.

The milky ways dashed over from three different directions with terrifying energy accumulated in the furious water. The area where Shi Yan was standing had to bear a massive force, a formidable pressure, which had almost broken his body.

He was still calm. There was no panic sparkling in his eyes. It looked like he was numb as his eyes showed a boundless emptiness.

All of a sudden, his hands like two sharp claws thrust into the sky and ripped hard.

"Rip the sky!"

The void seemed to be grabbed by invisible formidable claws and torn forcefully. A dazzling slit appeared in the sky.

It's the space crack!

The sky is torn apart!

Space shooting light emerged from the slit gloriously and dazzlingly. Furious and chaotic lights from outer space gushed out from the space slit. It was so powerful it made souls shiver.

A distorted and wildly powerful suction force appeared from the slit. Just like a whale sucking water, that space slit had sucked all the water from the three fierce milky ways together with all the big trees, rocks, and dirt they carrying.

Not a single drop remained.

The Water power Upanishad that the three Sea Clan warriors had combined energy to perform, the torrential milky way, had been dissolved like that.

The three Sea Clan experts paled as the energy they had poured into the milky ways had been swallowed completely. The connection was cut off, so they couldn't retrieve any bit of the

amount they had mobilized.

King God Realm warriors could release or retreat their energy regularly. To condense three milky ways, they had used a lot of energy. Although their Rolling Milky Way couldn't achieve the desired result, they would still be able to retrieve the energy to prepare for the next attacks.

However, they could never imagine that the space crack would appear precisely at this moment and wolf all of their power. Even though they had seen everything, they couldn't retrieve a bit of their energy.

In such a short time, half of the energy in their bodies was consumed.

Their faces turned ash-gray.

-----

The corner of the Purgatory Star.

On the mountains surrounding the lake, five feudal vassals and Du Tian Le were quiet with gawking eyes. They looked at the scene projected in the mirror disbelievingly.

"Mwahahahaha!"

Suddenly, Leona burst out laughing with her savage appearance. Her laughter almost shook the sky.

Ao Gu Duo gritted his teeth, his face ferocious. He couldn't control his foul-mouth cursing loudly.



# Chapter 775: Dead Sky!

---

Inside the Extreme Purgatory Field.

The three First Sky of King God Realm experts of the Sea Clan lost their excited mood. They felt chilled, their faces paled.

Shi Yan's power Upanishad was strangely evil beyond their estimation. They didn't react timely. Due to their wrong assumption, they had spent half of the energy accumulated in their bodies to build three Milky Ways, which the space slit had swallowed all in just a blink of an eye.

The energy they had used was dragged into the space slit, they had not been able to take it back. Their energy had been reduced massively.

One side reduces; one side increases. Shi Yan had released his Soul Burial Ground for quite a long time. While they weren't aware of anything, the vitality of the three prisoners had been drawn significantly.

The Sea Clan warriors had used a large amount of energy while Shi Yan had taken in the light spots of their vitality. His spirit, soul, and Qi were filled, as he was brimmed with tremendous energy.

-----

Dark Firmament Star, the Grand Palace.

Du Tian Ji's eyes flared up while gluing to the big magical mirror in front of his eyes. He was apparently astounded. Then, he turned to Princess Zi Yao next to him. "Yao-er, this boy knows how to use Space power Upanishad, too?"

Zi Yao was a little bit embarrassed. She had just told him Shi Yan had focused on his main power cultivation, and now he suddenly performed Space power Upanishad, which abashed her. "Father, the powers Upanishad he's cultivating are mixed, indeed.

However..."

Du Tian Ji waved to stop her. He beamed a faint smile. "According to you, he knows what's he doing. I do want to see if he does know what to do."

Zi Yao gave a forced smile.

Du Tian Ji rubbed his chin. "Such a greedy kid. If someone else has the Dead power Upanishad, he will never lay his eyes on anything else. The Dead power Upanishad alone is rare in the Raging Flame Star Area. Not many people have the chance to see it before. He isn't satisfied with this power. He still cultivates different powers Upanishad. I don't know what this man wants."

"His understanding of Space power isn't shallow," explained Zi Yao.

Du Tian Ji nodded, "I can see that. As he's able to tear a space slit at the True God Realm, it's proven his understanding of space power isn't just ordinary. However, once he reaches the King God Realm, taking more than one at a time isn't good for his cultivation in the future. I'm not sure if it's a good thing."

Zi Yao felt a headache. "Yeah. But this man's quite special. He has many secrets. Father, take your time and watch him. Even I don't have a deep understanding of him. I can't see how many things he's concealing."

"Interesting," Du Tian Ji nodded, showing that he got interested.

-----

In the Extreme Purgatory Field.

Shi Yan retrieved the energy he had burst out above his head. The massive space slit faded away little by little.

Looking at the three experts of the Sea Clan with their pale faces, Shi Yan grinned. He strolled toward one of them.

His steps were firm, and everywhere he passed by, big trees and

beautiful foliage yellowed then shriveled; insects hiding deep underground stopped singing.

Da Lei's eyes sparkled. He was shaken inwardly, acclaiming in his head: Here it comes!

Whenever it was released, only the ones immersed in the Soul Burial Ground Dead Upanishad could sense it.

People standing outside couldn't detect the Soul Burial Ground on the images projected by the mirror lake. The reason why Da Lei could find that Shi Yan was using this power Upanishad was from the different conditions of the flowers, trees, and insects. Since he had witnessed this with his own eyes before, he knew the wicked and cruel signs of this power Upanishad.

Also, they couldn't see the tiny light spots like raindrops congregating at Shi Yan.

However, those onlookers could spot the difference wherever Shi Yan walked by. They were startled, but they didn't know what's happening there.

Besides Da Lei, Leona was the only one among the others who was sensitive enough to recognize it.

As soon as she saw that the foliage, flowers, and even the big trees shriveled, her dark green eyes sparkled. She stopped her wild laughter, pulling herself together to focus on the situation in the field.

Ao Gu Duo, Rochester, Carthew, and Du Tian Le hadn't realized anything. They just saw the three Sea Clan experts slowly had their eyes gloomier as if their Qi, spirit, and soul were taken away.

The decrease in their fighting will was easy to notice. In the opposite condition to them was Shi Yan's boiling fighting will. His eyes sparkled with exciting light. Just like a hungry beast walked out of the deep forest, he needed meat to fill his empty stomach.

"Dead Sky!"

Shi Yan sauntered, his face calm and cold. When he was around one thousand meters away from those three experts, he halted, stooped, and shouted.

A deadly, silent, and desperate aura suddenly diffused from him. Brutal, bloodthirsty, resentment, and other negative energy gushed out from his acupuncture points. Flows of energy weaved into an ash-gray mist, congregating atop of him, creating a massive gray curtain.

Inside that gray curtain was the thick aura of Death, which seemed to be able to cut all kind of vitality.

This is one of the supernatural martial techniques he had experimented and created with the Dead power Upanishad he had comprehended. With the Dead power Upanishad as the foundation, negative energy was condensed into an attack, creating a massive Dead Sky Curtain in the air, which was grumbly pressing down.

The Dead Sky Curtain covered the three experts of the Sea Clan. They were panicked, their faces gloomy.

Inside that gray sky, negative feelings multiplied. In their eyes, it was a world of death. They saw no hope of life. Everywhere was cold and deadly silent. But they could hear countless ghosts crying, calling for them from inside that dead world.

Being perplexed, they suddenly had a strange thought that they were part of that dead world, and it absolutely belonged to them no matter what.

When this negative mood arose, it meant their fighting will and belief had been smashed. Now they couldn't create a complete thought. Naturally, they could never urge the energy in their body wholly.

The confusedness in their eyes became clearer, and the three of them seemed to be completely foolish. They stood still at their

spots, just letting the Dead Sky fall on them.

The deadly energy inside the Dead Sky condensed and created the massive Death Seal. They grumbly exploded in the ash-gray clouds, and instantly pressed down on the three prisoners. At that perilous moment, they woke up instinctively.

They urged the God Domain one more time, trying to stimulate the leftover energy in their bodies. With the loud sound of a furious water current, a flow of tenacious water power extended, creating the white waves swarming toward the sky.

"Burn!"

Shi Yan didn't change his face. A thought popped up in his soul.

The powers of the Earth Flame, the Vermilion Bird True Flame, and the flaming solar energy in his body fused into one furious and wild flame, flying out from his sleeve. The flaming dragon stormed toward the water waves the other three had created.

The fire dragon wound, marching forward. Shriveled, dried plants ignited and burned. Even the rigid rocks were melted into a strange viscous substance. Shortly, the area of several thousand meters in front of Shi Yan had become a fire sea.

Flames covered everywhere. The Earth Flame and the Vermilion Bird True Flame seized the chance and flew out discreetly, releasing their flaming energy into the sea of fire.

The God Domain that the three prisoners had created with efforts was burned by the furious, rolling flame. Their energy was consumed faster. The Sea Clan was always afraid of fire. It's their nature. That's why they were petrified again.

The evil energy of the Dead Sky had affected their Soul Consciousness, storming into their soul altar and affecting their God Souls.

Three poor Sea Clan experts at the First Sky of King God Realm had made wrong assumptions, which helped Shi Yan's wicked and

cruel force break their souls. The Dead Sky then controlled their mind, making them walk toward the Dead Sky and the sea of fire.

Shi Yan's face was calm. He released his Soul Consciousness to watch each of their commotions. He didn't dare to be careless.

The onlookers were dazed, gazing at the mirror lake. They all wore a bizarre face.

Since they weren't inside the Dead Sky, they didn't know how the evil energy there had affected the souls of the prisoners. In their view, they saw only the three experts of the Sea Clan got stunned then got crazy as they proactively walked toward the fire sea and let the ash-gray mist cover them.

At that moment, the onlookers suddenly realized that the three Sea Clan experts were about to be finished under Shi Yan's strange and wicked powers. They had no hope of overturning the situation.

And it was true.

The three experts of the Sea clan walked into the fire sea. Their God Bodies couldn't resist the burning force of the Earth Flame and the Vermilion Bird True Flame. Shortly, they were melted turning into a puddle of blood, which was then evaporated into a blood-red mist.

The strangest thing was they didn't feel pain, just standing dazedly as if their souls had gone away. They weren't aware of their God Bodies being melted gradually.

People watching the battle from a corner of the Purgatory Star had their eyes sparkling looking at the warriors in the mirror lake. They suddenly felt a chill sent down their spines. A cold and fearful feeling arose from their hearts.

The deaths of the three Sea Clan experts weren't bloody or tragic. But they were so evil and bizarre, which was like watching something virtual and eerie.

Who doesn't treasure his life? Who can keep silent being burned? Who will go upon his own initiative to die?

The calmer the deaths of the three prisoners of the Sea Clan were, the more frightened the onlookers were when they looked at Shi Yan in the Extreme Purgatory Field. They all felt their scalp numb.

This kid is thorny and scary. No one knows what he has done to the enemies and made them willing to die without feeling pain or fright. What kind of power Upanishad is that?

Ao Gu Duo, Rochester, and Carthew put on the dark and gloomy face. A gleam of fear flashed in their eyes. They were discreetly putting up guard, thinking that Shi Yan wasn't an easy opponent. They didn't know which power Upanishad he was cultivating that had such evil and sinister effects.

Da Lei was uncertain. He didn't say a word, knitting his brows tightly.

Only Leona had gained back her calmness as if she had finally verified something. She strangely relaxed, eating the crystal clear fruits. She looked calm and deliberate as if her question had been answered.

# Chapter 776: Pick the Tough Target to Start!

---

Three warriors of the Sea Clan at the King God Realm were burned down, leaving only bone dust on the ground.

Shi Yan stood in the center of the rolling fire and retrieved his Dead power Upanishad with negative energy. He squinted, absorbing the Essence Qi of the three King God Realm warriors into his body. He held a look of indifference with no traces of fatigue after a fierce battle.

In fact, Shi Yan didn't consume much energy at all.

With the Earth Flame and the Vermilion Bird Flame's assistance, he could simply destroy the opponents' Water power Upanishad. His Space power Upanishad had swallowed an enormous part of their energy. He expected a smooth victory.

Shi Yan didn't have enough time to calm down in his sea of fire. Shortly, he frowned and then snorted.

The Purgatory Token on his waist sent him eight energy flows of living beings. Apparently, his battle with the three Sea Clan experts had alerted the prisoners around here. They silently gathered.

At the other corner of the Purgatory Star, the five feudal vassals were still sinking in fright. At this moment, they were sensitive to any changes. They were all clearly shaken. Their eyes shifted to the mirror, holding their own gaze.

"Mwahahaha!" Ao Gu Duo laughed fiendishly. He didn't say anything but his face said it all.

In Ao Gu Duo's eyes, Shi Yan had just finished a tough battle killing three Sea Clan experts. Therefore, he must have consumed a lot of his energy.

At this moment, more and more prisoners were coming to him. One of them had reached the Second Sky of King God Realm. With



his experience, Ao Gu Duo believed that that warrior wouldn't control himself and instead burst out and kill Shi Yan to take the Purgatory Token, which would help him survive the Extreme Purgatory Field and gain a new life.

Carthew and Rochester had the same thought. They frowned, observing.

Only Leona stayed calm and cold. She glared at Ao Gu Duo's group and mockingly snorted.

"It's over for him," Ao Gu Duo spread his arms, laughing cheerily. "You should prepare to hand me your life star."

The corner of Carthew's mouth twitched. He looked at Ao Gu Duo, and then Leona. He didn't say anything, his face strange.

"Hand you my life star? Ao Gu Duo, are you blind? Watch it!" Leona smiled faintly. Apparently, she wasn't someone who would yield easily.

"Zi Yao has chosen a good guard. If he can pass the challenge in the Extreme Purgatory Field, his attainment in the future is something we can't assess." Du Tian Le said with emotions. "Battling with higher realm when he's at only the Third Sky of True God Realm and he won easily. I don't think many juniors in our divine nation can achieve such a feat."

Rochester nodded. "This kid does have some tricks. No wonder why Zi Yao gave him the quota, which should be Ao Gera's. Yeah, I think that little girl's correct again. Her vision is getting sharper indeed."

"Damn it!" Ao Gu Duo looked at him indignantly, shouting. "My nephew Ao Gera didn't want to compete with him. He knew he would receive a quota from me. That's why he gave the other his. Harrumph, I want to see if he can survive or not!"

"Then you should watch carefully," Rochester lifted his head, looking at him without fear. "I don't know why I suddenly believe

that that boy will get out of the Extreme Purgatory Field alive."

"Rochester, you mean my nephew would die?" Ao Gu Duo spat out coldly with a ferocious look on his face.

Nodded, Rochester grinned. "True. If Shi Yan could break through the King God Realm shortly, I believe he can survive. Your nephew? Perhaps he will die. Hahaha."

Ao Gu Duo grimaced. He harrumphed indignantly, his eyes giving off a savage gaze as if his wild nature had been aroused.

Anyway, since Carthew and Rochester were feudal vassals like him, of course they wouldn't be afraid of him. Sometimes, they would mock him, which enraged him badly.

He gazed at the mirror lake. If his look could cross that lake, with his cultivation base, perhaps he could use his look to pierce Shi Yan to death.

Too bad, Du Tian Ji had hired specialists to create this lake. It hid a great mystery that he couldn't use his soul to get through it.

-----

Dark Firmament Star.

"Not bad," King Du Tian Ji of the divine nation nodded and rubbed his chin. "Not bad at all," he continued.

Zi Yao was happy. "I told you, Father. This man is so mysterious. It's not easy to make him lose."

"You little girl. Your eyes had always been sharp. I am proud of you." DJ looked at her deeply. After a while, he sighed. "Unfortunately, you are not a man. Otherwise, I wouldn't have such a headache."

Zi Yao's face darkened as sorrow pierced her heart. She just sighed and said nothing.

Inside the furious fire, the temperature was getting higher and higher. The ancient trees around had contributed to this mighty

fire. The burning fire got beautifully fiercer. In the fire sea, Shi Yan was calm, standing upright like a spear, watching here and there.

Deep inside the dark forest, eight prisoners were hiding. One of them was at the Second Sky of King God Realm. His life magnetic field was obviously stronger than the others'. Shi Yan spotted them via his Purgatory Token.

Shi Yan didn't dare to act rashly. There were seven First Sky of King God Realm warriors and one Second Sky of King God Realm warrior. Even if he was more arrogant, he wouldn't dare say that he could defeat this force, especially since he had just finished a battle. Absorbing the Essence Qi of the Sea Clan experts would take time to filter. If he engaged in another battle at this moment, it would be too unfavorable to him.

Shi Yan didn't dare show a trace of fatigue.

He knew that when those hungry wolves saw that he was tired, they would swarm over wildly and slash him, grinding him to take his Purgatory Token.

At this moment, he became calmer, pondering in the sea of fire. Abruptly, he faced the sky and laughed crazily. In the ear-piercing whistle, he took action first.

Clusters of flaming energy balled next to him. Just like the burning meteors from the sky, they started to precisely bombard those hiding warriors.

Rumble Rumble Rumble!

With the fireballs falling, those who were hiding urged their God Domain to retreat or to use their powers to resist.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The fierce whistle that could prickle people's eardrums exploded inside the field.

Although nobody could detect the source of the hissing, they all felt an extremely sharp force. Three Bone Thorns darted so fast that no one could actually see them move. With space power, they glided and disappeared, leaving only the terrifying whistle.

The God Domain of one of the hiding people was pierced instantly. A Bone Thorn appeared, flying towards his neck.

Boom!

A low, rumbling sound echoed from that man's direction. In just a blink, that man showed himself. He was an expert of the Dark Spirit Clan, the one who had the highest realm among the prisoners hiding here.

Second Sky of King God Realm!

Boom Boom!

Two other Bone Thorns appeared from the shadows, furiously stabbing.

The Dark Spirit Clan's expert put on a grim face while both of his hands were making hand seals and different techniques in the air. Light sparkled gloriously.

Just like the blooming firework, the Bone Thorns and his hand seals brought more light which flashed dazzlingly, hurting people's eyes.

His hand seals and techniques turned into special symbols of the Dark Spirit Clan. Just like living creatures, they stopped the furious Bone Thorns. However, he had to retreat.

Massive fireballs flew toward seven other warriors. They quietly retreated, not daring to stay and sneak into this battle.

The Second Sky of King God Realm Dark Spirit Clan expert had to make the hand seals continuously while the three Bone Thorns were chasing after him like the spooky ghosts. No matter how hard he wiggled, he couldn't get rid of them. After one futile attempt,

they would disappear. Immediately, they would reappear from a cunning angle, which made the other struggle hard to dodge and resist.

Shortly, that man glared at Shi Yan from a far distance, snorted, then ran away.

When the other seven saw the Second Sky of King God Realm running away, they didn't stop to think and immediately ran for their lives.

In just a blink, no one was hiding near Shi Yan.

At this moment, sweat started to bead on his forehead. His tense nerves relaxed. He hastened to use pellets to adjust his conditions.

The man at the Second Sky of King God Realm was truly strong. Shi Yan had used the Bone Thorns with space power but he couldn't pierce through his God Domain shortly to attack his God Body.

Shi Yan had tried his best to apply the knowledge of space power to his attack. He had even added Star energy into the Bone Thorns. However, it was only enough to make his opponents afraid of him, not sufficient to deal any damage.

The reason why the expert retreated was because he couldn't estimate Shi Yan's real competence. He was afraid that once he fought with him, both would receive damage, which was the best chance for the other seven prisoners to attack them. In the end, he couldn't get the Purgatory Token and he could have been wounded badly or even gotten killed.

Shi Yan understood that if there weren't so many people hiding and waiting for a chance around them, that Dark Spirit Clan's expert probably would not have given up his scheme. He would do everything he can to kill Shi Yan.

The main reason why the other had left, besides Shi Yan's beyond-realm performance, was that he was afraid of stealthy

operations of the others. Thus, he had to leave for now.

Choosing the strongest to attack had given the best intimidation effect. It happened all according to Shi Yan's plan. Although he had to use a lot of his energy, no one dared to stay near him now. He had assumed correctly. He found the way to deal with them.

If he had chosen a First Sky of King God Realm warrior to attack, the result wouldn't have been as desired. He wouldn't have created the scaring effect. Instead, he would have created the chance for that Second Sky of King God Realm warrior to kill him with one strike. In the end, he would have died pitifully here.

"Watch out. Cover ten miles around. Tell me immediately when any creature approaches!"

His Soul Consciousness sensed a while in the Purgatory Token. He ordered the heaven flames resolutely. When all the heaven flames flew out of the fire sea, he left the place immediately, crazily flying toward the more perilous and isolated area.

Shortly, his image disappeared in the view of Leona and the other. His figure wasn't projected in the mirror lake anymore.

"Very clever. He has many fighting experiences, too. Being calm at a critical moment like that... he's truly a character." The master of the divine nation suddenly laughed in the Dark Firmament Star far from them. He nodded, "Indeed, he's not bad. Not worse than Ao Gera. I'm anticipating that he and Ao Gera could have a battle. I think it would be more interesting."

Zi Yao's face was gloomy. A gleam of begrudging sorrow sparkled in her eyes.

Ao Gera and Shi Yan were her subordinates. No matter who won or lost, she would suffer from grief.

# Chapter 777: Getting Stronger!

---

Shi Yan didn't know that both Leona and Ao Gu Duo had placed a big bet on him or the fact that the master of the divine nation in the Dark Firmament Star was watching him.

In the Extreme Purgatory Field, after killing three First Sky of King God Realm Sea Clan warriors, he immediately ran one thousand miles away and found a cave in a quiet mountain to absorb the Essence Qi of the three King God Realm warriors.

Since he had reached the Peak of True God Realm, his acupuncture points had expanded and were able to store more energy.

In addition, he found himself unable to fall into bedevilment easily. The negative moods couldn't drag him into insanity anymore and he could focus with greater clarity..

This change had arisen earlier. When he was in the sea of meteorites, he had always concentrated on exploiting ores which cleared his mind and purified his God Soul.

He found that when he focused on achieving a certain task and keeping his mind clear, he wouldn't fall into bedevilment easily.

When he killed that expert of the Dark Clan, the Soul Gathering Pearl, the mark on his forehead, and the Inner World Five Devils had fused together, creating a section in the soul altar. When that section in his soul altar was built, his soul and mind became tougher and more relaxed.

He thought that the reason why he wouldn't fall into bedevilment easily was related to the establishment of his soul altar.

Shi Yan sat cross-legged in the dim cave, staying in the slits between the big rocks in the case. He closed his eyes to more clearly feel the changes in his body.

The mysterious, refined energy didn't move this time to his Essence Qi ancient tree since it was brimmed now. Unless he could break through to the King God Realm, which would expand his Essence Qi ancient tree several times, he wouldn't receive any benefit from this mysterious energy anymore.

The mysterious energy diverged into two pathways into his body. One flooded his muscles, blood, and bones, increasing their strength and refining them one more time.

The energy going through the other path was converted into his Immortal Demon Blood. Half of the Essence Qi of the three First Sky of King God Realm warriors were turned into Immortal Demon Blood.

There were about twenty-some drops of Immortal Demon Blood. He stored them in a place in his body. He could use these to fight back his enemies in an emergency.

Shi Yan had tried the bursting power of the Immortal Demon Blood in Carthew's gravitational room. Shi Yan decided that he must collect the Immortal Demon Blood by hunting experts in the Extreme Purgatory Field as he expected to carry out his plan to change his blood.

At the moment, he had more than seventy drops of Immortal Demon Blood stored in his body. Although it was still far from the quantity he needed, he felt hopeful.

Every time he adjusted his breath and conditions to refine his body, he calmed down and sensed his three powers Upanishad: Space, Star, and Death and Life.

Every time he engaged in battle, he would use these three powers to utilize supernatural martial techniques depending on the circumstance. Gradually, his understanding of the three powers Upanishad deepened.

It was quite different from the warriors. When Shi Yan broke



through the True God realm, he had the three powers Upanishad create a tier of his soul altar.

Perhaps this was why he was unable decide which would be his main power and which would be his supportive power. In his point of view, all three powers Upanishad were all profound. None of them were weak. To him, they all provided tremendous support.

The fight with three warriors of the Sea Clan made him realize the extent of assistance that all the three powers had given him.

If he hadn't had space power, he would have never dissolved their formidable attacks and defeat them. Without the Dead Upanishad, their souls wouldn't have been affected, which led them to an unknowing death.

His resolute victory also related to other powers Upanishad that he had been cultivating. Using the correct of the three powers Upanishad precisely during a battle was the key to winning battles.

To him, the three powers Upanishad were all his main powers. He didn't want to give up any of them. He strongly believed that his three powers Upanishad could thrive together. In the future, they could boost his fighting competence to its maximum potential.

While quietly looking further ahead and retrieving the Soul Consciousness, Shi Yan felt changes in his body. He sent his soul into the soul altar and slowly understood.

After a while, he grinned. Touching the Purgatory Token, he flew out of the cave.

A flow of Soul Consciousness was poured into the Purgatory Token. Signs of energy of living beings within ten miles around would be shown in the token, which Shi Yan could check easily.

Shi Yan crossed through the vast forest aimlessly. He wanted to seek for a possible battle.

A flow of feeble energy sent out from the Purgatory Token. Shi

Yan concentrated and sensed it. He grinned fiendishly and accelerated towards a lake.

After one hour.

The battle ended. A First Sky of King God Realm prisoner floated in the lake. His life was cut off.

He squinted, standing quietly by the lake. After a while, he departed.

He became a hunter. Prisoners in the adjacent areas became his prey. Of course, the roles were all relative. Some prisoners would initially consider Shi Yan delicious prey.

He was still at the True God Realm. Prisoners who detected him all thought that he was a soft persimmon that they could squeeze easily. From his death, they would earn the Purgatory Token.

Most of the time, whenever he showed up, his target would laugh crazily, leaving him no time to talk. They would attack him first.

Upon entering the Extreme Purgatory Field, he found only villains. And, the participants' realms were also high. The Third Sky of True God Realm was the entry level. There was no target better than such a contestant at the True God Realm. Thus, whenever a prisoner found him, they immediately became excited.

However,, those prisoners would quickly find that Shi Yan was actually the chewiest bone among the contestants in this Extreme Purgatory Field.

Through the Purgatory Token, Shi Yan found his prey unceasingly. Once locating the one to attack, he would immediately entangle his prey and kill him. Afterward, he would take the dead man's Essence Qi to restore his energy, refine his bones and body, and condense the Immortal Demon Blood.

Time flies quickly.

Three months had passed just like a blink of an eye. Shi Yan

didn't remember how many battles he had engaged and how many people he had killed. His fighting will remained full and his energy had always been at the peak of his realm.

Through battling during this period, the number of Immortal Demon Blood in his body had reached a frightening figure of three hundred!

This was a record he had never reached before.

Three hundred drops of Immortal Demon Blood could replace his blood in both of his arms. He had tried it. Once he replaced the blood in his arms with the Immortal Demon Blood, his arms felt like they had endless energy. He felt like he could tear the God Body of a King God Realm like he could rip off a sheet of paper.

The Immortal Demon Blood hid some kind of evil, torrential energy that could fuse perfectly with his power. However, Shi Yan had never tried this kind of energy during his battles.

However, he believed that when he was backed into a corner, he would stimulate all the energy of the Immortal Demon Blood to overturn whatever situation. He could become the winner from what would seem like a clear loss.

After three months of fighting, he had used his opponents to perceive the essence of his three powers Upanishad.

The Extreme Purgatory Field was an incomparably magical place. In this area, his perception and sensibility toward the powers became very sensitive.

In each fight, he had used the three powers Upanishad to kill his enemies. Afterward, he would obtain a new level of comprehension of the three powers Upanishad. After each battle, when he was refining the Immortal Demon Blood, he would summarize his mistakes he made during the battle and learn new skills in using the power.

Gradually, his understanding and perception of the three powers

Upanishad became profound.

Today, he had hunted down five First Sky of King God Realm warriors. Seeing the pieces of bodies he had shattered lying in the blood puddles around the place, his face was cold, eyes shining like diamonds.

His body slightly shivered as he tried to calm his mind to learn the essence of using his power Upanishad in the previous fight. His soul reached back to the past to learn something from his fight.

A blinding light flashed gloriously in his soul altar. He was baffled. His eyes sparkled with a strange light. Starlight twirled around his body. Death and Life, the two different attributes, scattered uncontrollably around him.

Fine space slits sizzled and appeared spontaneously in the void near him. Space seemed to be in an uncontrollable chaos.

He was standing indifferently while his Soul Consciousness floated and entered some mysterious domain.

After a while, he made a passionate expression as if he saw something wonderful. He quickly stormed out of his place, flashing like a beam of light to find a place for his ascetical training.

He now had a good grasp of those mysteries. He just needed a way to continue studying. As long as he could harvest something, the threshold of the new realm, which had troubled him for a long time, would be wide open.

Once he reached the King God Realm, he believed that the realm of his prey in the Extreme Purgatory Field would be upgraded from the First Sky of King God Realm to the Second and Third Sky of King God Realm. When that happened, his Immortal Demon Blood could be condensed faster.

Shortly, he disappeared.

-----

In a corner of Purgatory Star, the five feudal vassals were sitting on their mountains together with Du Tian Le and watching the scenes in the lake.

The mirror lake had been divided into some smaller sections in which one of the villains was showing off his talents.

The lake would clearly project the battles. That's why Leona, Ao Gu Duo, and the others could watch most of the battles happening in the Extreme Purgatory Field.

In every battle, the three young people of Leona's team and three members of Ao Gera's team were like sharp weapons that could pierce through anything. Wherever they passed, most of the prisoners would be torn into pieces. Only the Third Sky of King God Realm warriors would proactively stay away from these pointy weapons to save their lives.

Besides those two forces, Yalan and Tie Mu under Carthew's command, and the other two warriors under Rochester's didn't meet many troubles.

However, they had fewer achievements compared to Leona and Ao Gera's team. They could kill only a small number of prisoners.

Shi Yan was alone, so he could be considered a force himself. His achievement was relatively normal.

# Chapter 778: True Colors

---

In three months, Shi Yan had killed many people. His achievement wasn't a small number, but it was still much smaller compared to the other five forces.

The warriors he had killed were all at the First Sky of King God Realm. He hadn't killed any Second Sky of King God Realm warriors. Moreover, after each battle, he would disappear for several days, a different habit compared to the other five forces. The other forces would continue their slaughter as if they had never been exhausted.

The achievement contestants could complete in the Extreme Purgatory Field did not only depend on the number they killed but also the realms of the ones they killed.

According to Du Tian Ji's rule, killing a Second Sky of King God Realm expert was equal to killing ten First Sky of King God Realm warriors. Leona's team and Ao Gera's team had killed several Second Sky of King God Realm experts. Their number wasn't something Shi Yan could compete with at the moment.

Since his real realm was still the True God Realm, he was limited. For the time being, he didn't dare battle the warriors at the Second Sky of King God Realm.

Only after he had entered the King God Realm could he skip the level and battle with the others. When that time came, he would be confident that he wouldn't get himself killed.

In his current condition, maybe he could kill a Second Sky of King God Realm warrior but it wouldn't be easy. He would get hurt, and possibly suffer from severe wounds. The Extreme Purgatory Field hid dangers at every place and at all times. There wasn't a single peaceful moment in this place.

When the warriors battled against each other, they would

generate tremendous energy fluctuation that would attract the other prisoners.

When someone sees you tired or wounded, he will not talk about rules. He will kill you instantly.

Since Shi Yan had a precise assumption to the situation, he hadn't dared to provoke the Second Sky of King God Realm warriors.

It wasn't that he was afraid of defeat. He was afraid of bad wounds which would make him the prey of prisoners hiding elsewhere.

Shi Yan had his own rules. Perhaps it was because of his cautiousness that he was able to survive until this moment, continue getting stronger and accumulate energy, and wait for a chance to break through.

Today, after three months of collecting Immortal Demon Blood and being patient, his chance has finally arrived.

-----

A corner of the Purgatory Star.

Leona, Ao Gu Duo, and the others were still watching their teams fight in different areas. Their faces were cold and indifferent. However, they didn't quarrel or mock each other anymore.

The result of this competition became gradually clear. If nothing unexpected happens, Leona's team and Ao Gera's team will become the forces that have killed the most and claim victory.

Yalan, Tie Mu, Rochester's team, and Da Meng's team hadn't faced any difficult situations yet. However, from the current scores, it would be difficult for them to win.

In their eyes, after three months, the winners would be Leona's and Ao Gera's teams.

And, what made people wait was the big bet between Leona and

Ao Gu Duo.

They were waiting in silence for the encounter between Shi Yan and Ao Gera in the Extreme Purgatory Field.

However, the Extreme Purgatory Field was really vast, approximately half of the Purgatory Star. The chance for them to meet each other on the field was very slim.

Unless they proactively searched for each other.

This was how Ao Gera searched for Shi Yan. Before he killed someone, he would ask about Shi Yan's whereabouts. He wanted to locate Shi Yan quickly to start his bloody slaughter.

He remembered Ao Gu Duo's words. His resentment towards Shi Yan had enraged him daily.

However, the prisoners who had met Shi Yan were all killed. Ao Gera couldn't find any news of Shi Yan's location. He was quite irritated.

Today, Ao Gera's chance came as he met the Dark Spirit Clan Second Sky of King God Realm warrior who had encountered Shi Yan. As they were at the same realm, being the God's favored one, Ao Gera was stronger than him. Moreover, Ao Gera wasn't alone.

That man's fate was determined.

He was defeated and wounded badly. His body and soul were detained.

At this moment, Ao Gera didn't hasten to finish him. He asked with a cold stare, "Do you know anything about a True God Realm contestant? He's one of us, one of the two weakest. But he doesn't know how to summon the beasts. Tell me what you know and I will let you die intact."

The Dark Spirit Clan warrior had both his soul and energy restrained. He had heard about Ao Gera and his brutal methods before. Thus, he hesitated a bit then spat out, "I know his general



location."

Ao Gera's eyes brightened. He was surprised. "You just need to tell me the estimated location. I can let you die without pain. I'll keep your God Body intact."

"I met him three months ago. Then, I hid for a while. I know where he is." the man pondered for a few seconds. He knew that he couldn't avoid Ao Gera's slaughter. If the other dragged his soul out and searched his soul using special techniques, his secret would be revealed. Thus, he shared what he knew about Shi Yan's whereabouts honestly.

Boom!

The man's body was ripped off by countless beams of gold light. Blood splashed like a rain shower. The thick smell of blood permeated the area.

Ao Gera didn't let the man die intact. He stooped and smiled evilly as if he had released out his anger. Gold lightning strikes shot out from his God Domain, grinding that man's flesh body.

"Finally, I found you," Ao Gera stooped, his eyes sinister with an evil intent. He suddenly said, "Change the direction. It is time to take that brat life."

The other two warriors under Ao Gu Duo understood his personality so they were not surprised by his emotions. They nodded, telling him that they understood.

This team of three followed in the direction the man had told them, moving fast.

-----

Dark Firmament Star.

"This man is brutal. He has no humanity. He doesn't talk rules. He even lied to the man who died. Well then, I like him." The master of the divine nation Du Tian Ji laughed slightly while

watching Ao Gera's operation.

A confused look sparkled in Zi Yao's beautiful eyes. Her bold brows knitted together, her face unnatural.

Until now, Ao Gera was always nice and gentle in front of her, giving her a feeling similar to a mild, spring breeze. She had never seen this other face of Ao Gera.

In this place today, she had finally witnessed Ao Gera's brutal deeds. She understood that the Ao Gera in front of her was one person. Behind her back, he was a completely different person.

The lake in her heart rippled as a small rock was thrown into it. She pondered.

That man had never hid his true self. From the beginning until now, he always acted cold and harsh. Compared to Ao Gera, he seemed to be... easier to approach.

She contemplated quietly. She was a little absent-minded. Ao Gera's deed had chilled her heart.

The master of the divine nation showed a faint smile as he was not bothered by Ao Gera. He laughed louder. "Zao-er, don't you feel lost? In our divine nation, Ao Gera is infamous indeed. After he's become your retinue, he's tried to control himself. You have never seen him in this manner I guess?"

Zi Yao nodded bitterly. "When he was with me, he was always nice and gentle. He treated people well and friendly. I let him handle my Glorious Amethyst Star. My people liked and respected him. They said that he was like a tender sunshine."

Du Tian Ji was surprised. "My silly little girl. It is because he is chasing you. That's why he had to show you his best face. Didn't you know his reputation before you met him? Did you just ignore it?"

Zi Yao pondered for a while. Then she said begrudgingly, "Perhaps when he was with me, he was too nice and gentle. It made

me not believe in the rumors."

Then, a new thought startled her.

That asshole didn't change his manner in front of me. He never wanted to show off his perfect features. He often told me cold words that made me hate him... Is it true that he doesn't think about me? That's why he doesn't mind what I think about him?

After thinking for a while, she felt lost somehow. She felt a little bit angry.

"It's normal. When your father chased your mother, I was always gentle and tender. I didn't show her my evil face. I tried to protect her because I cared. Although Ao Gera's infamous, he is honest to you. He has to eat the bitter fruits. I'm sure about this." Du Tian Ji smiled. "And about that boy, I think he doesn't have any bad will towards you. That's why he shows his true colors to you. It is good, anyway. If you wanted to use him and he always hid his honest thoughts, it would not be good for you."

"I don't like people pretending in front of me. Too fake. I'm willing to let Ao Gera show his true colors to me. I don't want him to wear a mask when he's with me." Zi Yao suddenly lifted up her head, looking behind the master of the divine nation. "I think staying with someone like Shi Yan is much easier."

Du Tian Ji stayed silent as if he was recalling something, his eyes showing mixed emotions. After a while, he muttered, "Perhaps I was wrong that year. Your mother got angry with me when she found out that I was so brutal. Perhaps, I shouldn't disguise myself. She wouldn't have questions in her mind."

Zi Yao's beautiful eyes flashed. "Father, how did my mother die?"

Du Tian Ji grimaced. He snorted and didn't talk more.

Since Zi Yao was anxious, she asked nothing else. However, her curiosity wouldn't die that easily.

Long afterwards, Du Tian Ji opened his mouth again. "Zao-er, if

you could choose between Ao Gera and Shi Yan, who would you choose? Ao Gu Duo stands behind Ao Gera. Although that boy's cultivating the Dead Upanishad, he seems to have nothing related to that person. From what I've observed, his potential is not as strong as Ao Gera. He can't assist you well. If you could choose one of them to be the survivor, who would you want?"

Zi Yao was surprised and she panicked. After a long time, she stooped and whined, "I don't know."

"In fact, you don't need to choose. Only one of them will survive. They will help you choose themselves." Du Tian Ji smiled faintly and his face relaxed. Zi Yao didn't know what her father was thinking.

# Chapter 779: A Frightening Change

---

Some lake in Purgatory Star.

Du Tian Le stooped to watch the lake, holding the blood crown in his hand.

All of a sudden, he made a stern expression and felt surprised. He couldn't help but cry, "Ah!"

Leona could feel something too. Her line of sight fell on an area in the lake. An uncontrollable joy crossed her dark, green eyes.

"What's happening? Earth and heaven energy in that area is changing. From this situation, perhaps someone is breaking into the new realm?" Du Tian Le was startled. Then, he recalled something. "Shi Yan is in that area."

Everybody was shaken.

Rochester, Carthew, and Da Lei were surprised. Strange light shot out from their eyes as they shifted their looks to that area.

Ao Gu Duo grimaced and couldn't hide his snort. He seemed to be very irritated.

In the mirror lake, massive energy was gathering inside a cave of a hill. That kind of energy looked like immense, gray clouds. The energy seemed to be tied by an invisible entity that kept pulling them, gathering them together. Strange beams of light shot out from that cluster as if they were refining energy.

At the beginning, the mass of that gray energy was as big as a room. Gradually, the energy in its core had pulled and gathered more earth and heaven energy. Shortly, the mass of energy clustered at that area had covered ten mu (1) of land.

Peculiar energy fluctuations appeared in that area. From time to time, they could see light shoot out from a small slit in the space.

From their perspective, they could only see energy continually

gathering. They could see neither what was happening inside the cave nor what Shi Yan was doing.

However, they knew that only one contestant knew how to use space power and make space crack. That person was Shi Yan.

So although they couldn't see his figure, they were sure he was the one who was creating such a tremendous commotion.

Earth and heaven energy condensed and refined unceasingly, creating the miraculous power that could change the body. This was the most evident sign that happened when a True God Realm warrior was breaking through to the King God Realm.

Apparently, at this moment, Shi Yan was immersing in his breakthrough.

"It's been just three months, a short period and he can make it to this step. Not bad. In fact, he's good." Carthew was sinking in thought. He was astounded for a while before talking, instinctively looking at Leona.

Leona wasn't shaken. She was calm, and hope could be seen through her eyes.

"If this boy can get out alive, his future potential is immeasurable." Da Lei suddenly spoke up after many days of keeping silent. His eyes raked through people then said seriously. "I met him three years ago. At that time, he had only the Second Sky of True God Realm cultivation base."

He would never mistake it. The battle that took place three years ago had left a deep impression on his mind that he would never forget.

He would never forget that Shi Yan, at his Second Sky of True God Realm, had subdued his son Da Meng three years ago.

Through that battle, he could see a shadow behind Shi Yan. The shadow that had disappeared for so many years, but he still respected it out of fear.

That's also why he didn't dare kill Shi Yan even though he felt so ashamed. He didn't dare attack him himself but he had planned some stealthy plans.

He was afraid of the shadow behind Shi Yan. He was afraid that if he made a wrong assumption, disaster would fall on him and his family.

That man was an undying legend of the Raging Flame Star Area. Whoever had known about his legend would never dare face him.

Da Lei's cold explanation had attracted many people.

Ao Gu Duo couldn't stay calm. He shot up from his seat, trying to hide the fright on his face. "Da Lei, are you sure? That kid had only the Second Sky of True God Realm cultivation base three years ago?"

Rochester expressed his admiration. "Zi Yao's good fortune is here. Finally, I know why she wanted to give Ao Gera's quota to Shi Yan. I got it now. That little girl isn't bad."

Carthew was shaken. His eyes brightened as he took a deep breath. "Three years. He needed just three years to enter the Third Sky of True God Realm from the Second Sky of True God Realm. If he had accumulated for many years, it wouldn't have been a big surprise. However, his Third Sky of True God Realm has just been established after three years. And now he was able to walk through the door leading to the King God Realm. Three years. He has used only three years. He's a monster! Such a monster!"

Carthew's eyes brightened.

In their eyes, when Shi Yan was still at the Second Sky of True God Realm, he could have a lot of time accumulating energy and perceiving his realm. Breaking through the Third Sky of True God Realm in three years wasn't something too special to achieve.

They thought that Shi Yan must have had a long time cultivating before that.

But this was different.

The time he took to enter the King God Realm from the Third Sky of True God Realm had taken him less than three years.

How can someone comprehend that?

The five great feudal vassals and Du Tian Le were startled. They all fell into silence.

"I think after a warrior reached the Third Sky of True God Realm, even if he uses magical pellets and medicine every day, he can't fill the Essence Qi ancient tree within three years, let alone spend countless days comprehending his powers Upanishad. Three years is just a flash in our life, a small ripple in the long river of life. It isn't worth mentioning. But he..." Rochester shook his head, forcing a smile. "I had spent almost one hundred years to find a chance to leap up from the Third Sky of True God Realm. This is considered fast already. Many have spent several hundred years to reach the King God Realm!"

Everybody stayed silent..

Even foul-mouthed Ao Gu Duo had zipped his mouth with a gloomy and uncertain face. No one knew what he was thinking.

"If he can maintain this cultivating speed," Leona gloomy voice arose before pausing from looking at the grimaced Ao Gu Duo, "his boasting words can become true. Within one hundred years, he can take the head on your neck, Ao Gu Duo. These are no longer the words of a madman."

Everybody else recalled this event. They shifted their strange looks toward Ao Gu Duo.

Under their scrutinizing looks, Ao Gu Duo darkened his face and said nothing. He grimaced more, his sturdy body trembling. Apparently, the other had poked his wound.

"I think she had just bragged. I never thought that I had underestimated him." Carthew suddenly laughed. He picked up the



strong liquor from the maid standing next to him, gulped, then laughed louder. "I've drunk and chatted with him. Perhaps I can brag about this later. Haha. Interesting. Maybe I can witness a miracle. A new star is rising in the sky of the divine nation with its glorious light."

"Seems I will have to flatter him when he gets out of there. Haha." Rochester added with an odd look.

Ao Gu Duo looked like he was about to shoot fire from his eyes. He was shivering indignantly. His face had darkened to the acme.

"Don't get too excited. Breaking in the Extreme Purgatory Field isn't always a good thing. Did you forget where he is?" Du Tian Le suddenly spoke up, frowning deeply. "How many could have a decent end breaking to a new realm in this Extreme Purgatory Field?"

Hearing him, the shaken Ao Gu Duo laughed sinisterly. "Oh yeah. No matter how endless his potential is, risking his life to break through the new realm in the Extreme Purgatory Field is no different from finding a way to death. Haha!"

Leona remembered the special features of the Extreme Purgatory Field. She couldn't hide her pale face as she felt a little anxious.

What happened was not different from what they anticipated.

After Du Tian Le finished, new changes happened in Shi Yan's area.

Within one hundred miles around, many prisoners were hiding. From the peculiar change of earth and heaven energy, they knew what was happening.

Someone was about to break through in the Extreme Purgatory Field! This realization stirred up the prisoners. They didn't hesitate. All started to move toward Shi Yan's location.

Any warrior breaking through to the new realm shouldn't be disturbed. Especially when they were about to break through a big

realm! This breakthrough needed to be carried out discreetly. They even needed strong warriors to guard them. Once they got attacked, it wasn't uncommon if they got killed.

It was different from the time Shi Yan broke through to the True God Realm. To reach the King God Realm, he needed to gather earth and heaven energy, which couldn't be done quickly.

At this moment, he couldn't be distracted so he couldn't urge his power to resist the enemies. He needed to focus wholeheartedly to break through. If he got a lot of enemies waiting for this moment, he would be surrounded and have no means to withstand.

Every one of the prisoners knew that it was convenient for them to attack him at this moment. Thus, all of them started to flood this place.

Soon, savage villains appeared one by one in front of Shi Yan's cave. There were around ten with several Second Sky of King God Realm warriors.

"Haha, everyone has their own fate. He doesn't know the dangerous features of the Extreme Purgatory Field, and he dares take such risks. Haha." Ao Gu Duo calmed down as the big rock hanging in his heart seemed to disappear. He could smile now.

Rochester, Carthew, and Du Tian Le were solemn. They all frowned and sighed inwardly. They thought that Shi Yan was acting rashly. He wasn't careful as he had made so many ferocious villains surround him.

Even Leona was restlessly agitated. She scolded him in her mind, thinking that Shi Yan was too arrogant. He understood the perilous characteristics of the Extreme Purgatory Field, but he dared to break through in this evil place.

Her worries weren't only because of a life star but something else...

Shi Yan's life was related to one of her secrets and even her

future. She shouldn't be tense, but she didn't want to stand and stare at the prisoners taking Shi Yan's life while he was in the middle of his breakthrough.

(1) Ten mu is about 66,700 square meters

# Chapter 780: The King's Heart

---

The Grand Palace of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation.

Du Tian Ji rubbed his chin, smiling in a relaxed manner. "That kid doesn't value his life."

Zi Yao's bold brows knitted tightly. She clenched her teeth and mumbled, "I don't know what he's thinking. He knows how dangerous the Extreme Purgatory Field is but he still decided to act rashly."

Ao Gu Duo, Rochester, and Leona had the same concerns.. More than ten hungry-wolf prisoners gathered outside the cave where Shi Yan was cultivating. They all gazed at the cave.

There were no good guys in this pack. They were all the felons of the divine nation. Their thirst for blood was their basic instinct.

To confine them, the five great feudal vassals had put a lot of effort. Many of them were infamous in the Raging Flame Star Area for their bloody hands.

Many warriors would shake like a leaf seeing them outside.

Today, they were gathering here for a sole purpose. The Purgatory Token.

Purgatory Star, the biggest prison of the empire, only imprisoned the death-sentenced inmates. Once they were kept in the Purgatory Star, no one even dreamed about breaking out.

Hotshots guarded this place year round and the prison also had intimidating restrictions and barriers. If they took risks and broke out, death would be their only consequence.

The reason why they were kept alive was because the empire needed them. It needed them to die in a valuable way. The Extreme Purgatory Field was their stage, their blood and fire fate.

With their forsaken destiny, they had only one way to live which

was through the Purgatory Token.

Taking the Purgatory Token was the only way for them to get out of the Purgatory Star. No matter how serious their crimes were, the empire would clear them all.

A Purgatory Token meant life, a dawn of hope.

At this moment, that dawn was in front of them. It was also easy to reach.

What prisoner wouldn't be excited?

"Seems like we can't wait for he and Ao Gera to engage in battle. Warriors have to concentrate wholeheartedly while breaking through. He won't be an exception." Du Tian Ji smiled faintly. "What a pity, his potential wasn't bad. He was just too rash."

Zi Yao gritted her teeth. She was worried and felt chills.

She didn't know why she didn't want to see Shi Yan experiencing bad situations. This thought was much stronger than her worry for Ao Gera's life.

Upon seeing the villains gathering more and more, looking like they were about to take action, some images flashed in her mind.

Da Meng fought with Shi Yan, which frightened Da Lei, to save her imperial dignity. She and Shi Yan ran away in the amethyst war chariot through the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. She remembered the moment he controlled the flaming meteorites bombarding the others wildly in the strange forbidden place. The time they spent together in the barren and isolated land. Each of his jokes, his actions...

Those images played in her head and she couldn't wash them away.

A wisp of bitterness rippled in the lake of her heart, expanding to her whole body. While she didn't realize that, her beautiful eyes sparkled, expressing worry and tension which had never happened

before.

It's been so many years and she had never met a man who could make her yearn for him, worried about him like that. She was worried that he would be killed.

Ao Gera had stood behind her for so many years, but she had never felt the same way towards him.

Suddenly, Zi Yao knew that the man who came from an unknown continent had rooted deep in her heart, occupying an important position she could never dismiss.

"You're confused," Du Tian Ji frowned, talking coldly and heartlessly. "People who plan for big schemes won't notice the minor details. They won't let anything distract their minds. No matter who he is, he is just a sword in your hand, the support you need to move forward. You have to remember that the sword in your hand is just a tool and you should never let the sword stab yourself!"

Zi Yao was shaken. She woke up from her thought, shaking her head miserably. She said nothing.

"Without a callous heart, how could you survive the cruel and harsh competition? If you're not cold and calm enough, you will harm not only yourself but also your people." Du Tian Ji snorted. "Girl, you can't compete with your brother Du Jia in these manners. You're soft hearted. How will you succeed?"

"To get the throne, Du Jia attacked me and my brother. Is this the necessary quality to be a King?" Zi Yao's beautiful eyes shown with anger. "Father, were you just like my brother that year?"

"I was more heartless than him," Du Tian Ji parted his lips with a cold and sinister face. "You and Du Jia aren't blood siblings. You have different mothers. It is normal for him to attack you guys. That year, no need to mention my siblings born from other mothers; I even killed my own brothers. My own brothers who

stood in my way, I killed them.

Zi Yao face lost color in fright.

"If I could get back to that time, I would still do the same. For the apex of the martial path, for the prosperity of the divine nation, there is no man that I wouldn't kill!" Du Tian Ji snorted, his face heartless and resolute.

-----

Extreme Purgatory Field.

Inside the cave, strange energy was rippling. Earth and heaven energy gathered thickly on an area more than ten mu. Sparks were sent into the sky with lots of energy.

Flows of earth and heaven energy became purer, oozing out from the energy area. They streamed out and then were pulled into the cave by some unknown force.

In the adjacent areas by the river, in the forest, or even underground, the prisoners couldn't wait any longer. They showed up one by one, gazing at the cave like a pack of hungry wolves.

"Furlow, you've been watching for a while. Why haven't you attacked yet?" A Ghost Mark Clan warrior at the Second Sky of King God Realm turned and looked at the other.

These people were imprisoned for a long time so they knew each other well.

The man named Furlow was a Sea Clan warrior who had lost one arm. He also had the Second Sky of King God Realm cultivation base. He snorted, "Larkey, if you want the Purgatory Token, you should go now. Haha. Don't worry. I won't compete against you. Go now."

He and Larkey were the two Second Sky of King God Realm warriors in this group. They understood each other, and they knew that they were all tough and cruel.

They were secretly afraid of each other.

"Haha, I'm not in a hurry. I've been imprisoned for too long. I'm not going to act impatiently now." Larkey cracked a smile, showing his yellow teeth. "But you, I remember you saying that you have a son. His life is tough out there. Since you've been jailed, he has suffered a lot. I can't say if he would still be alive now."

Hearing him, Furlow's face drained of color and snorted again.

The truth was that he couldn't wait. His son suffered and was bullied frequently out there. He calculated that his son was about to break through to the Sky Realm.

Furlow knew that the Sky Realm breakthrough required a lot of materials and lucky encounters. It would be better if he could have the divine pellets for support and received a good power Upanishad from the Source of Power Upanishad Inheritance. His Sky Realm was an important turning point.

He must leave this place. He must help his son break through. Thus, he felt panicked.

"Li Mu!" Furlow pondered for a while before calling a First Sky of King God Realm warrior standing near him with a savage look on his face. "You get in there and check it out. If you help me take the Purgatory Token, I promise you, that I will take care of your daughter well after I get out."

The warrior whose name was called hesitated with a cold look.

"If you won't go, then don't blame me!" Furlow rolled his eyes and showed his ferocious face. "You should take the chance that I'm giving you while you still can!"

Li Mu reared back from Furlow's furious gaze. He felt like a snake was slithering around his neck. He was scared.

He hesitated for a while. Keeping his daughter in mind, he gritted his teeth. "Boss, promise me. If I die and you get out, please take care of my daughter."



"I will" Furlow nodded, "if I get out alive."

Li Mu didn't say more. He bit his lips and stormed out of the crowd, dashing straight to Shi Yan's cave.

The crowd of prisoners and villains were restless. They gathered uncontrollably, getting inevitably closer to Shi Yan's cave.

At the same time, Leona and the others brightened their eyes, focusing their view on the lake to see if Shi Yan would resist this attack.

When he was breaking through his new realm, anyone could simply land attacks on him if he hadn't prepared.

Li Mu dashed like lightning. While he was in the air, he had urged his God Domain. His God Body strengthened like a tree trunk. Bark grew on his skin and his body looked like a giant root of a ten-thousand-year old tree. When he released his God Domain, the plants around him also shook. Big branches were twisted and broken. His God Domain drew the broken branches, turning them into sharp wooden swords, darting toward the cave.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The wooden swords brought their sharp power and exploded one by one at the entrance.

Li Mu took this to chance to disappear into the cave.

The people observing waited for something to happen.

There was no commotion, no aura, or even a single sound. Li Mu was like a droplet that caused no ripple when fallen into the sea.

The crowd of prisoners and villains were tense. They looked at the cave confusedly. An unknown chill rose in their hearts.

Leona's eyes brightened again. In a relaxed manner, she picked up another piece of fruit, taking a bite while still looking at the lake.

If there was nothing reported by Li Mu, it meant Shi Yan had

prepared something in the cave which proved that Shi Yan knew what he was doing. Knowing this, Leona relaxed a little. She knew that it wouldn't be easy to kill Shi Yan.

"Sa Lou! You try!" Larkey grinned fiendishly. "If you die, I will take care of your family. Now move."

He was another warrior at the First Sky of King God Realm. Under such a threat, he had to jump into the cave.

The same thing happened. There was no sound or commotion of a furious battle. Those who entered the cave seemed to disappear into thin air.

Everybody could feel the shivers down their spines.

# Chapter 781: Create a Miracle!

---

Under Larkey and Furlow's command, the two First Sky of King God Realm warriors disappeared like a stone that left no ripple after sinking into the ocean.

Then, the prisoners, villains, and lunatics showed up. They calmed down and grimaced.

From the results of the two First Sky of King God Realm warriors, Larkey and Furlow's threat wouldn't be effective. No one was stupid enough to get out there and die in vain.

Some didn't leave immediately. They stared at the cave entrance for a while before retreating quietly. Their silhouettes flashed, leaving no trace behind.

Those who stayed didn't move and only half of them remained. They were the ones who had a reason to leave this Extreme Purgatory Field as quickly as possible. They had reasons to survive.

In the world out there, they had someone they cared about or grudges they needed to resolve. The danger that the cave showed didn't scare them or make them leave.

Larkey and Furlow were of the latter type. They stayed. The two Second Sky of King God Realm exchanged uncertain looks.

After a while, Larkey suddenly said, "That kid must have arranged something in that cave. If we send a single warrior in there, he will likely be in danger. But if everyone goes in at the same time, I think the traps he has set won't work against them all."

Pausing for a while, he looked at Furlow. "What do you say?"

"Harrumph, you know I must leave soon. How can I give up just like that?" Furlow gritted his teeth. "No matter how strong he is, he must be weak while in his breakthrough to the new realm. As long as we break his barriers and see him, we can kill him easily."

Many agreed with him.

They soon finished discussing and joined hands to attack.

They gawked for a while. Then, the onlookers started dashing forward. They turned into many silhouettes and urged their God Domain, advancing towards the cave.

Both Leona's group in the Purgatory Star and the two in the Grand Palace in the Dark Firmament Star felt excited again. Their eyes were glued to the lake.

As they knew it would be perilous inside, they had boosted their power as much as they could, releasing the God Domain.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

All of a sudden, space slits appeared at the cave entrance like floating sharp swords that sparkled dazzlingly.

Three warriors who jumped into the cave first didn't have time to scream as space slits had ripped their bodies and sucked their dismembered bodies in. They disappeared silently.

Many villains screamed in fright and attempted to retreat. They didn't dare move further inside

However, as soon as the space slits appeared, they scattered. In the area where energy was gathering outside the cave, similar space slits emerged in every corner.

Those space slits were long and narrow, but they were enough to dismember the warriors, leaving no trace of their prior existence.

Although some were quick enough to dodge, they were attacked by the space splits. When the slits passed through them, their limbs disappeared bizarrely. Some were so unlucky that their heads disappeared into the void.

Instantly, another six First Sky of King God Realm died tragically.

"F\*ck! It's Space Power!"

"My God, it's f\*cking bad! A warrior cultivating space power is breaking through!"

"Damn! Too bad, I knew it wouldn't be easy!"

". . ."

Screams and curses resonated from the crowd. They were all ashen. They felt as if their hearts were torn apart, unable to think logically from extreme fright.

Both Larkey and Furlow were scared out of their wits. Those space slits had frightened them. They froze, not moving a single muscle.

Leona relaxed and ate the crystal green fruits. She cast a glance at Ao Gu Duo, who looked pale now. She mocked, "Did you think that everybody was an idiot? He dares to break through in the Extreme Purgatory Field. Of course he knows how to protect himself. Check it out and see the results of those idiots like you."

"Breaking powers Upanishad and stirring up space. This kid... is space power his main power Upanishad that is going through a break through?" Carthew was baffled. He suddenly found his words. "I told you. He doesn't look like a careless man. Would he break through without arranging his defense?"

"In the cultivation of space power, when a warrior breaks through the important realm and creates the God Domain, space slits will appear thickly around him. It seems that we didn't consider this. No wonder why he isn't scared." Rochester also understood. He grinned. "Seems like this brutal kid has planned this ahead of time. Those who wanted to take his life deserved to fall."

While they were joking and discussing, space slits appeared more densely at the cave entrance in the Extreme Purgatory Field.

The oncoming warriors gawked. They halted in the area filled with space slits. No one dared to move an inch. They all became

seriously cautious.

At this moment, a magical intent domain expanded from the cave. It seemed to fuse with earth and heaven energy covering their heads.

A solitary aura flooded out. Under the wicked effects of the Dead Upanishad, those who stayed suddenly felt their soul fatigue and their energy was grabbed by an invisible hand that pulled it into the cave.

Fragmentary starlight flashed from time to time where earth and heaven energy had gathered. The starlight rolled like the Milky Way and became clearer.

The Extreme Purgatory Field seemed to not be able to conceal the starlight in this place. The starlight and the starry sea in outer space seemed to have a connection, creating a magnificent galaxy.

Thick space slits that were created by condensed space, were the God Domain of warriors cultivating Space power Upanishad. The Soul Burial Ground was the domain of warrior cultivating Dead Upanishad while the beautiful galaxy was the unique form of the Star power's God Domain.

Three different powers Upanishad performed the distinctive God Domains. The inmates who had jumped into this area wept without tears.

They would never have imagined that Shi Yan, who was hiding inside this cave, could have three cunning and mighty powers Upanishad at the same time. And what was hard to accept the most was that all his three powers Upanishad could create the God Domains!

This was unimaginable! It goes against the cultivating natural principles of warriors in the Raging Flame Star Area.

When a warrior broke through the King God Realm, only his main power could create the God Domain. No matter how

profound his auxiliary powers were, they would hardly be able to create the God Domain.

This was why each warrior had only one God Domain. Also, most of the warriors chose only one power Upanishad to cultivate for the rest of their lives.

The creation of the God Domain hid the magical mysteries and principles of Nature. Even the great sages couldn't tell how the God Domain was created or understand its mysteries.

Signs of three different God Domains created from Shi Yan's breakthrough not only shocked the intruders but also people in the Dark Firmament Star and the Purgatory Star.

"All three powers Upanishad creating the God Domains. This is a miracle!" Carthew muttered.

"How could he balance or fuse them?" Rochester's eyes expressed fright.

"F\*ck that brat!" Ao Gu Duo gritted his teeth.

An evil smile hung on the corner of Leona's mouth, but she didn't say a thing.

The master of the divine nation, Du Tian Ji, jolted up from his throne, his eyes blazing like torches. He gazed at the mirror in front of him, staying silent for a long while. His face distorted bizarrely.

Princess Zi Yao covered her mouth behind him as she couldn't believe what her eyes showed her. Strange, dazzling light shot out from her beautiful eyes. Her soft body shivered slightly.

"I don't think there are miracles in this world. I believe what I see." Du Tian Le stood up from his mountain, walking to the corner and gazing at the lake. "If he succeeds, he will bring another color to the Raging Flame Star Area. If he works for the divine nation, our territory would double shortly!"

No one doubted this.

Leona, Carthew, Rochester, Da Lei, and even Ao Gu Duo quieted down. They didn't oppose his idea.

Creating three God Domains while breaking through to the King God Realm meant that Shi Yan's attainment in three powers Upanishad was all profound. At the same time, he could balance his three powers miraculously.

They had never heard or seen anyone in the Raging Flame Star Area who had three God Domains.

Today, many witnessed Shi Yan achieve such a miracle. He had filled this vacancy.

His appearance told people that the martial path wasn't as narrow as they had always thought. They realized that a real, excellent warrior would not always cultivate just one power Upanishad and create only one God Domain.

This miracle broke this presumption, leaving a deep impression in people's hearts and revealing a brand new picture.

People started contemplating.

Even the master of the divine nation, the strongest warrior, Du Tian Ji, was baffled. He started to doubt the principles he had trusted. He couldn't help but be amazed at the magical features of the martial path.

"Are we all wrong about it?" Du Tian Ji muttered. "The general knowledge of warriors in the entire Raging Flame Star Area isn't complete, is it? Are we all wrong about the mysteries of the martial path? Is our current explanation of powers incomplete?"

"Father, perhaps people in the higher-level continents aren't like us. They can cultivate more powers at the same time. Shi Yan has the inheritance from that man and that man wasn't from our Raging Flame Star Area. Maybe he came from another higher-level star area where people know the truth of powers Upanishad. Our



understanding is shallow. At the very least, Shi Yan has proven that warriors could be able to create the God Domain of all powers Upanishad they cultivate."

Zi Yao looked at him, talking in a soft voice.

"He has opened a door for us. It makes me more determined. I must escape. I must break all the chains to see if the sky outside is this brilliant!" Du Tian Ji gave a low shout. His eyes expressed his resolution, proving that he has finally made up his mind.

# Chapter 782: King God Realm!

---

The sea star, thick space cracks, and the Soul Burial Ground were released. These three primitive forms of the God Domain were revealed at the entrance of the cave. Some strange phenomena had happened.

Prisoners of the Extreme Purgatory Field who intruded this place froze in the air. No one dared to move.

Hazardous space slits were operating around them. If they moved, space cracks would cut their bodies.

But, no movement did not necessarily mean no harm.

After the Soul Burial Ground appeared, the unique features of this God Domain were revealed. The prisoners soon felt their souls fatigue. They could even see the light specks that looked like fireflies flying out of their bodies. Just like the gathering energy, they congregated in that cave.

Everybody was frightened and restless. Witnessing the three God Domains with different attributes had shaken them.

Leona, Ao Gu Duo, and Du Tian Ji, the owner of the divine nation in the far-away Dark Firmament Star, were frightened. They realized that the principles they had believed for so many years could potentially be wrong.

Shi Yan's powers had opened a brand new door for those warriors. It told them that the martial path is constantly changing and that there was more than one way out. Cultivating many powers Upanishad at the same time could lead them to a wider and brighter road.

No one knew what was happening to Shi Yan in the cave.

However, they all knew that Shi Yan was in the most critical phase of his breakthrough. Once he got through this challenge, he could step up to the sky and dazzlingly suppress any youth who

was believed to be a genius.

-----

Inside the cave.

More and more space slits appeared in front of the cave. Three meters from the entrance of the cave, there were cut limbs of the two warriors who had jumped in first.

They didn't think that there were more space slits in the cave. The moment they stormed in, their bodies were divided into five or seven pieces and the larger portions of their bodies were dragged into the space slits. They would never see the bodies again.

Shi Yan sat indifferently inside the cave surrounded by many space slits.

From the outside, the pure earth and heaven energy that flowed looked like five-colored lightning strikes that entangled him and slithered into his body like snakes.

His body sent blazing sparks into the air. It looked like he was placed on the stone table, and the earth and heaven energy was the blacksmith that was forging him with the flaming iron hammer.

To the majority of True God Realm warriors, the pain of refining the God Body would make them wish for death.

However, Shi Yan's reaction was different. He was strangely calm. He had challenged things at the acme for his whole life. He could endure the pains normal people could even think about enduring. His tough mentality wasn't something people could comprehend.

The main reason for this was his strong foundation. His body had been quenched many times. He had felt all kinds of pains and tortures.

If he had to compare, his creation of the God Body today wasn't very hard to endure. Thus, he looked different compared to most

of the warriors. He was calm and even a little numb.

Earth and heaven energy brought the true power of the world. Just like a magical knife, it carved deep marks on his body to enhance it by a level.

He had swallowed the pellets he took from Zi Yao, which helped with the creation of God Body. Those pellets helped thicken earth and heaven energy, creating a fierce flood and accelerating his rate of absorption.

Earth and heaven energy proactively seeped through his flesh, blood, bones, internal organs, and each vessel of his body. This energy seemed to have a magical effect that flooded his entire body and enhanced his bone's toughness, tenaciousness of the vessels, muscles, and tendons.

He was like a divine weapon that was processed by different energies. He slowly became unbreakable. He was now as imposing as a mountain with tremendous, pure energy.

His changes weren't only in his blood and flesh: his soul altar seemed to also undergo changes.

The power Upanishad tier in his three-tiered soul altar was covered with a layer of mysterious light. However, Star, Space, Death, and Life powers Upanishad were still visible. They were all wonderfully connected with the energy in his God Soul, giving him a deeper knowledge of the nature of these three powers Upanishad.

He just sat neatly like that and patiently let his body be developed. His soul guided the three powers Upanishad.

The God Soul and the three powers Upanishad had fused perfectly. The three powers Upanishad rose magically in a deep place inside his God Soul. Each power became a chaotic, shining cluster, releasing an immense halo.

The lusters of the Seals of Upanishad were the signs of the God Domain. When he understood his Seal of Upanishad more clearly,

those lusters would expand gradually to magically change his soul.

Thus, the space slits appeared more and more outside his cave and their coverage also expanded.

The halo of the Dead Upanishad had two layers: one was vigorous while the other was cold and desolate. The vigorous layer covered his Sea of Upanishad and protected his God Soul and God Body. The dead layer dispersed and affected those around him, absorbing their souls.

This also made the prisoners and villains not dare to move outside the cave. They slowly lost their life force.

Those people were covered in the dead layer, which had pulled the light spots of their life force and drew them back to the vigorous layer to boost Shi Yan's living energy and increase his strength. This also frighteningly increased the power of the absorption force of the dead layer.

The dead layer took away the life force and sent it to the vigorous layer. Then, it benefited Shi Yan's soul and God Body, which would also boost the energy of the dead layer, making the Soul Burial Ground more imposing.

These two layers supported each other and increased their powers. And the one to receive these benefits was Shi Yan himself.

At the same time, the star sea was the performance of the Star Seal of Upanishad. The starry sea was the external sign of the Star Upanishad. The blinking stars in the sea of stars were thick and glorious.

However, it was different from the Dead Upanishad. The Starry Sea wouldn't initially attack living beings proactively. Shi Yan needed to use his soul to control it. As he was still in the critical time of his breakthrough, naturally, he couldn't do this, which meant the mysteries of the Starry Sea God Domain couldn't be performed.

Even so, space slits of Space power and the life absorption of the Dead power were enough to keep him safe. He wasn't afraid of anyone who came to attack him.

When the God Domain was created, it would create a significant commotion according to some principles of Nature, which led to the expansion of the Domain's coverage and power. This was especially true for his space power Upanishad that created the space slits – the terrifying defense like a grand mountain.

The Dead Upanishad was a cunning and evil power that could attack the others proactively. As long as there were living beings near him, the Dead Upanishad could show its nature and draw all of the creatures' life force.

Inside the cave, Shi Yan stayed safe and comprehended his three Seals of Upanishad and the magical powers of the God Domains. He didn't notice the situations out there.

Time flew hurriedly.

Soon, the prisoners and villains in front of the cave didn't dare to move. Since their life force was being drawn away, they became dizzy and foolish unknowingly.

With only one wrong step, they fell immediately into the space slits and died on the spot.

After they died, their Essence Qi wouldn't scatter away. Just like the gathering energy, they flew into the cave, pouring into Shi Yan's acupuncture points, becoming part of his powers.

Those warriors continued to fall one after another into the space slits. Before each tragic death, the victim's life force was already too feeble.

In the end, both Furlow and Larkey didn't have the luck to dodge the danger. They fell dizzily into some space slits eventually.

The two Second Sky of King God Realm were devoured. Their Essence Qi poured into the cave.

Deep inside the cave, Shi Yan didn't know what was happening out there. He still cultivated indifferently, refining his God Body and creating the God Domains. Without Shi Yan's consciousness, the Essence Qi ancient tree in his body had expanded three times larger.

The experts watching the scene fell silent, their eyes glued to the dark cave, waiting for something.

Time flew quietly.

-----

Seven days later.

Today, the God Domains created by three different powers Upanishad suddenly disappeared. Earth and heaven energy that gathered here for a while had also gone, leaving no beam or trace.

Outside the cave, cut limbs lay on the ground. No one died intact.

Everyone concentrated, holding their breath as if they were waiting for something to happen.

Even Leona was anxious as she didn't know the final results.

After a while, a sturdy figure appeared at the cave entrance. He frowned, looking at those cut limbs on the ground. He smiled evilly then walked away.

"He did it! He really did it!" Du Tian Le couldn't hold his surprise and screamed, "It seems like cultivating many powers at the same time is possible! Our belief has to change because of this kid."

"A man can have three God Domains at the same time, each of them in perfect harmony with the others. This man is a miracle," Carthew said emotionally.

"I think his real fighting in the Extreme Purgatory Field starts from now. Haha, at the True God Realm, he could kill the First Sky of King God Realm warriors. Today, he has finally reached the King God Realm. I think that the opponents he fights will change

from now." Rochester looked at Ao Gu Duo and laughed slightly. The hidden meaning in his words was explicit.

Ao Gera has only the Second Sky of King God Realm, would he become Shi Yan's prey?

"Ao Gu Duo, be prepared to give me a life star." Leona smiled darkly. Joy filled her eyes as she knew she was not wrong.

-----

Dark Firmament Star.

"Zao-er, your fortune isn't bad. You've met such a magical kid." Du Tian Ji glared at Zi Yao before smiling strangely. "Ao Gera is dead. I'm afraid that kid isn't weaker than him. If they encounter each other, I'm not sure who would win."

He had always evaluated Ao Gera with high value. However, at this moment, he wasn't sure of anything.

At this moment, Shi Yan had overturned his negative situation, breaking through to the King God Realm, striding to a brand new level.



# Chapter 783: Wear The Domains!

---

Shi Yan had never felt so fresh and powerful before.

The King God Realm in the Grace Mainland was the highest existence. He had been on that continent for so long but he had never seen anyone at the King God Realm.

Bao Ao, Jie Ji, Kante, and even Xuan Ming had tried for their whole life to reach the King God Realm. However, due to the energy-draining situation in the Grace Mainland, they were limited. Being unable to break through to this realm was the greatest regret of their lives.

The time he had stayed in the Raging Flame Star Area wasn't too long. It was just eight or nine years. However, in this short period, he had ascended from the True God Realm directly to the King God Realm and created the God Domains.

And he got three marvelous God Domains!

Strolling through the Extreme Purgatory Field, Shi Yan let all of his heaven flames fly back to the soul altar. He didn't need to be cautious anymore.

He was so confident. He believed that in the Extreme Purgatory Field now, only the Third Sky of King God Realm warriors could trouble him. And even they wouldn't be able to kill him.

Walking step by step, he immersed in the joy of the magical God Domains. Never had he felt so happy before.

From just a single thought, the God Domain of the Dead Upanishad was activated. A twenty-meter radius around Shi Yan was the maximum coverage of his Dead Domain. Big trees yellowed, flowers shriveled, and insects stopped crying.

With another thought, the Starry Sea appeared. Magical Starlight dots were created by his energy. They scattered beautifully and gloriously everywhere.

His soul altar spun slightly and his space power had activated its God Domain. A powerful energy that could control space was urged.

Within twenty meters around him, the wind stopped, foliage froze, and even earth and heaven energy were restrained; it couldn't move anymore.

The three powers Upanishad included Death and Life, Star, and Space would create the God Domain as his God Soul flickered.

The three God Domains had their own magical features. While moving, he tried them from time to time restlessly.

Staying inside the God Domain of the Dead and Life power Upanishad, Shi Yan could absorb the energy of living beings around him to strengthen himself. While the creatures themselves didn't notice, they had their soul energy taken out.

The God Domain created by Star power Upanishad was a space full of stars. Under this starry dome, his Star Martial Spirit became sensitive. As his soul flickered, he could immediately hide in any star.

Within twenty meters, he could change his location, disappear and reappear in any starlight dots, giving them his magnificent powers to attack his enemies.

The God Domain created by space power wasn't as dangerous as the space slits when he broke through the new realm. Shi Yan understood that only a deeper understanding of space power Upanishad and the God Domain could help him create the space slits that shielded him. When he gets to this point, he knew that no one would dare approach or ambush him.

Space God Domain had more magical features. Space of area that this God Domain covering was restrained tightly.

He only needed to urge his power and flicker a thought for all things inside his God Domain, including air, energy, rock, and

foliage to be imprisoned.

Imprisonment was the basic specialty of Space Upanishad, one of the derived foundations of Space power.

He believed that in a battle with an opponent, urging his space power and creating the God Domain would detain the other's body and soul in his space.

Unless the other was prepared or had a force that was mighty enough to untie his bind, that warrior would simply be killed.

Breaking through the King God Realm had given him chances to create three God Domains and enlarge his Essence Qi ancient tree several times.

Anyway, the benefits he had harvested weren't that simple.

The God Body is another advantage he got now. At this moment, the recovery ability of his Immortal Martial Spirit had been upgraded. At the same time, his Petrification Martial Spirit was also enhanced. His sturdy physique had reached a new level, which could be considered morbidly abnormal, under this great time of quenching by earth and heaven energy.

He had tried and found that even the three Bone Thorns he had forged couldn't break the defense of his God Body. He would need to use the maximum power to even pierce through his body.

Ordinary King God Realm warriors who dared to engage in close combat with him would be torn apart, leaving nothing, not even the bone dust.

Due to his strong foundation and excellent body conditions, the God Body he had condensed wasn't something ordinary King God Realm warriors could compare to.

He had a premonition that even the Third Sky of King God Realm warriors couldn't have a tough God Body like his.

As his power had been improved many times, his confidence was

boosted. He believed that if he had had his today's realm in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field that year, even if he didn't manipulate the flaming meteorites, he could have fought Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo without much struggle.

After his realm was upgraded, his vision widened, and he had a huge confidence boost. He decided not to hunt First Sky of King God Realm warriors.

His main targets were the prisoners and the villains at the Second Sky of King God Realm now!

Once the Purgatory Token had reported the living energy of Second Sky of King God Realm warriors, he would attack them proactively. This would help him accumulate Immortal Demon Blood.

-----

Hovering above a lake in the Extreme Purgatory Field, Shi Yan's face was cold and harsh. A bloodthirsty gleam flashed in his eyes. While his thought flickered, so many stars twirled around his body, arraying a magical formation. Abruptly, he attacked someone in front of him.

It was a Sea Clan brutal butcher at the Second Sky of King God Realm. They had fought for a half a day already. The other had thought that he had finally found a soft persimmon that he could squeeze to get a Purgatory Token.

Shortly, he knew he was wrong. Shi Yan wasn't a soft persimmon but a ferocious beast that didn't bare its fangs!

The God Domain of his Star power was created. Shi Yan's figure flashed in the starlight. Sometimes he disappeared, leaving no aura.

The brutal Sea Clan man had Water power. He was unceasingly expanding his God Domain. Ten thousand tons of water in the lake rolled into the sky, morphing into rough dragons. They attacked

Shi Yan furiously.

"Mwahaha!" Shi Yan sneered, waiting until the water dragons storming into his Star God Domain. He immediately created Space power Upanishad, creating the God Domain.

Transparent water dragons storming toward him suddenly halted in the air. They froze bizarrely in front of him, unable to even wiggle.

"Disperse!"

Shi Yan pointed and a strange light shot out, hitting each water dragon.

Furious sounds of water flowing echoed. Those water dragons had turned back into currents of water, falling into the lake underneath.

His figure moved. The lake was still, the wind stopped moving, and energy was restrained where he hovered. Except him, anything in his God Domain couldn't move.

The Sea Clan warrior grimaced. The three God Domains had almost collapsed his mentality. Every time he thought that he could do it, Shi Yan's God Domain changed to another kind, which made all his attacks fail.

On the still lake, Shi Yan sauntered. Suddenly, he roared like a savage beast, disappearing into the starlight.

In the next moment, he reappeared next to that Sea Clan expert. He retrieved his God Domain and bumped into the other with his physical strength.

Boom!

An earth-shaking explosion echoed from the transparent water barrier created by the Sea Clan expert. His crystal clear defense shattered like pieces of jade. Water-light shot out.

Shi Yan laughed louder, marching toward that warrior, engaging

in a battle inside his God Domain. He bombarded him with star power. Stars spun, and shot towards him.

The power of his body continued expanding endlessly. Light spots that scattered from the shattered crystal wall fiercely pierced his God Body. However, they couldn't damage him.

"Space Imprisonment!"

While he was battling enthusiastically, Shi Yan suddenly let out a low shout.

The man in his God Domain halted as if he was tied by so many ropes in the air. He didn't even move.

Shi Yan smiled while walking toward him. He patted the man's head. His big head exploded. Blood and brain scattered.

Retrieving his God Domain and taking in almost all of the Essence Qi in that dead man's body, Shi Yan grinned before standing up.

-----

Half a year had passed unknowingly.

Shi Yan became a God of Slaughter in the Extreme Purgatory Field. Wherever he passed through, any villains he could sense had become a source of his Immortal Demon Blood.

During this period, he had accumulated experiences in using the God Domains through many battles. His understanding of the three God Domains gradually became profound.

After each battle, he would quiet down and review to find the advantages and disadvantages of the God Domains. In the next battle, he would try to minimize the disadvantages and promote the intimidating features of his God Domains.

After half a year of battling, he became fluent in using God Domains. He didn't feel shaky when combining the power of the three powers. He gradually started to understand the secret of

coordinating the three powers to reach its most powerful potential.

Among the prisoners and villains he had killed, not only the First Sky of King God Realm, at least ten Second Sky of King God Realm prisoners were erased.

The number of Immortal Demon Blood he had accumulated was almost one thousand drops.

He used the Immortal Demon Blood to replace his own blood. In his eyes, this event was getting closer. He thought that if he had enough time and the number of brutal persons in the Extreme Purgatory Field was adequate, perhaps he could finish his blood replacement here.

The vast Extreme Purgatory Field was worth the most magical place in the entire Raging Flame Star Area. In this place, his perception of powers Upanishad had become much sensitive. After each battle, he always had a new harvest.

His perception and understanding of the three power Upanishads had increased every day.

Today, while he was searching his preys, he met his acquaintances.

Yalan and Tie Mu.

Their situation was apparently not good. They had wounds all over their bodies. They were distressed as if they were trying to run away from someone. They were moving towards him.

Shi Yan was surprised.

# Chapter 784: The Cunning Old Fellow

---

Yalan and Tie Mu were both at the Second Sky of King God Realm. They had followed Carthew for many years so they must have various fighting experiences. Who could make them run with such haste like this?

"Stop!"

Shi Yan suddenly shouted.

Yalan and Tie Mu didn't stop. In fact, upon seeing him, they started to attack.

Yalan cultivated the Earth power Upanishad. As soon as she activated her God Domain, the land in her area suddenly twirled. Boundless earth energy immediately turned into a mist of dust, snatching over Shi Yan.

Tie Mu didn't hesitate. Gusts flew around his body. The wind blades sparkled like shining knives, cutting hundreds of trees around him into pieces.

Since they had been together for a while in the gravitational room, Shi Yan understood their powers Upanishad well. They were using Wind and Earth powers Upanishad. Once they urged the God Domains, they could cooperate well which made people not be able to fly to the sky or to get underground seeking escape.

This is also why Carthew let them two enter the Extreme Purgatory Field together.

The two powers Upanishad exploded together. The gray dust rolled on the ground working with the tornados in the air, covering Shi Yan's instantly.

Shi Yan's consciousness was affected badly. Staying in that grey area, he couldn't locate their positions. Energy tornados were marching furiously, uprooting the giant trees. Such energy movement was strong enough to cut his body into small pieces.



It was different from the prisoners Shi Yan had encountered. Yalan and Tie Mu's forces were tremendous individuals as their understanding of earth and heaven powers were more profound.

Their God Domains had coordinated their attack together. After Shi Yan got covered, he couldn't get rid of it. The tornado rolled his body into the air, spinning it. Shi Yan felt dizzy immediately.

Yalan and Tie Mu were the experienced warriors with long battling times in outer space. They had so many divine pellets. They trained their bodies marvelously while also using their wonderful powers Upanishad.

As Shi Yan stayed in their God Domains, he had to be very careful. He immediately released his Space God Domain.

Shortly, the energies of earth and tornado were frozen for three seconds.

But he could hold them only for three seconds.

After three seconds, their two powers got rid of his constraint and moved towards him again.

However, three seconds to the King God Realm warriors like Shi Yan were more than enough. Especially in fighting, it was enough for him to do many things.

He escaped Yalan and Tie Mu's God Domain, approaching them shortly. He shouted angrily. "What the heck are you doing?"

While shouting at him, he accumulated the energy of his God Body. Special powers of his twirled around him. Starlight spots as brilliant as diamond scattered around him thickly.

"Star Upanishad!" Tie Mu screamed in astonishment. He suddenly woke up, shouting, "Yalan, he's real!"

Yalan was startled. She scrutinized Shi Yan and then said, "In the gravitational field, you and I talked. How many siblings do I have?"

"An older brother and a younger sister," Shi Yan frowned

skeptically. "What did you ask that for?"

Yalan calmed down, exhaling in relief. "So you're real."

Tie Mu looked like he had finally put the burden aside. He panted. "I thought it came again. F\*ck it. That freak has almost made me collapse mentally. So many illusions. I can't help it anymore. I can't differentiate reality from an illusion."

Shi Yan was surprised. "What did you encounter?"

The two retrieved their powers. The God Domains disappeared. The area became calm again.

"You've broken through?" Tie Mu's eyes were sharp, screaming with astonishment. "You've broken through in this Extreme Purgatory Field?"

Yalan was frightened. She continued shouting 'monster.'

Frowning, Shi Yan expressed his impatience. "True. I've broken through, but it doesn't matter right now. Tell me what happened. What did you do? Why did you need to hide? Who in this Extreme Purgatory Field could put you into such a disordered state? Ao Gera's team or Madame Leona's team?"

"None of them," Yalan and Tie Mu forced a smile.

"Those prisoners? They besieged you?" Shi Yan was surprised, asking disbelievingly. "Although they aren't weak, you guys are experienced warriors who have been through perilous training. What happened?"

"An old fellow at the Third Sky of King God Realm. He cultivates a peculiar power Upanishad that could create illusions. People, scenes, rocks, rivers, mountains; he can create everything you can name, just like a real world." Tie Mu was still scared. "In his illusions, we were attacked by so many friends and even Sir Carthew. We almost got killed. Then, when we diverged, we would meet the illusion of each other. We would be ambushed wickedly. We are exhausted. He has been chasing us this entire time."

Yalan felt helpless. "Although the warriors in the Extreme Purgatory Field are all at the King God Realm, we aren't afraid of them when we join hands. However, that man has a special power. Until now, we haven't seen his real face. We only heard his sinister laughter."

Shi Yan couldn't help but be stern. "Third Sky of King God Realm? He knows how to create illusionary worlds and creatures. You guys couldn't use the Soul Consciousness to detect it?"

"Our realm is lower than his. We can't break the illusion. The illusionary characters he created also have living energy fluctuations. We can't say if it's real or not." Tie Mu shook his head, unable to avoid a headache. "Anyway, his power Upanishad's lethality isn't good. Otherwise, we wouldn't have survived until now. However, after getting deceived so many times, we're exhausted."

"Seems like your trouble isn't small," Shi Yan contemplated and then smiled. "If we meet him, just join hands. Is that old man still here?"

Then, his Soul Consciousness checked the Purgatory Token on his waist. Shi Yan sensed carefully for a while but he didn't find any beam of living energy. He relaxed his vigilance.

"I'm sure he is around here. This cunning old fellow is like a resentful ghost that will never disperse. He hasn't left yet. Oh f\*ck. He has targeted us for our Purgatory Token. It would help him survive!" Tie Mu cursed, facing the sky and yelling indignantly. "Hey f\*cking bastard, if you have the guts, come here and fight. What is interesting about your stealthy operations?"

"Hehehe. I like to hide the head and show the tail. I don't dare meet people. You guys should show mercy to me." A voice floated in the vast forest like a wind they couldn't catch or locate.

"Interesting. Another prey at the First Sky of King God Realm. Hehehe, I'm even more certain now that I could get out of this

damn place." The sound of the voice wound around many times, sounding close occasionally and far away at other times.

Shi Yan changed his visage.

He sensed the Purgatory Token the second time. His face darkened as he muttered. "He can avoid the Purgatory Token's sensing?"

Tie Mu and Yalan nodded miserably.

"How could he do that?" Shi Yan was baffled. "My Purgatory Token has never failed in the Extreme Purgatory Field. It's obvious that the old man's around but we can't detect his living trace?"

"We don't know. This is his dangerous feature. With the Purgatory Token, we would be the hunters. But now, he knows where we are but we can't detect him. We are under the light while he stays in the dark. We've become his prey." Yalan frowned and pulled her hair. "This cunning old man is familiar with the Extreme Purgatory Field. Seems like he hasn't been here only once. He can use his understanding of the topography and the special situation of each location to create illusions. If he didn't understand the terrain here like it was the back of his hand, he couldn't be so subtle."

"Little girl, you're right. Until today, I've been participating in the Extreme Purgatory Field five times. I've been the prey every time. However, I've been living for well over two hundred and fifty years. Hehehe, the Extreme Purgatory Field is a good place. If I haven't reached the bottleneck of my realm and I can't make a good use of the conditions here, I wouldn't have to leave urgently. Perhaps I could give you a chance to live." The inwardly evil-hearted ridicule arose timely as if he was about to ambush. No matter how much they lowered their voices, he could still hear them clearly.

What he had said paled Shi Yan, Yalan, and Tie Mu.

Participating in the Extreme Purgatory Field five times meant that he has been in the Extreme Purgatory Field for at least two hundred and fifty years. He was a condemned-to-death felon two hundred years ago. As he was able to withstand the Extreme Purgatory Field five times, he was definitely a tough character.

According to him, if he hadn't reached the bottleneck of the Peak of the King God Realm, he would stay for more.

With such a character watching them and their Purgatory Token, Yalan and Tie Mu didn't know what to say. They could only blame their bad luck.

"In fact, I'm a nice guy. Actually, I don't need your lives. If you guys give me a Purgatory Token, I won't continue watching you guys anymore. How does it sound?" The old man giggled in the dark, talking sinisterly. "Your little buddy at the First Sky of King God Realm is the weakest. It should be easy to kill him, right? Okay. Kill him and you will have an extra Purgatory Token to give to me. I'll let you guys go. What do you think?"

This old fellow said he was cunning and wicked enough to attempt to tear apart the relationship between Shi Yan and the other two.

Hearing his words, Yalan and Tie Mu became silent. Their eyes sparkled strangely.

Shi Yan shuddered inwardly. He couldn't help but snort. He looked at the two coldly and frowned, waiting for their decision.

There are no friends in the Extreme Purgatory Field. Except for oneself, one shouldn't believe trust anyone else. This is what Yalan and Tie Mu had taught him before.

Today, what they taught finally surfaced...

# Chapter 785: Thousand Fantasy Fields

## Domain

---

Outside the Extreme Purgatory Field, Du Tian Le and the five great feudal vassals were frowning as they had no idea what was happening in the crystal mirror lake.

A corner of the lake was covered by grey mist which concealed everything. Shi Yan, Yalan, and Tie Mu were there.

Carthew's face darkened. The light sparkling in his eyes showed his fright. He turned and shouted at Du Tian Le, "What is happening? The last time I saw my two soldiers was three days ago. Where did that gray mist come from? Why does it hinder our view?"

Du Tian Le frowned as he couldn't explain, either. "I'm not sure. Perhaps someone who knows the mysteries of the Extreme Purgatory Field has blocked the view from the outside, preventing us from seeing what is happening there."

"Who is that?" Carthew snorted. "How are my two troopers?"

Shaking his head, Du Tian Le answered begrudgingly, "I don't know, either. I'm not the ones who designed this Extreme Purgatory Field. It is a mysterious natural formation that is intertwined with the will of earth and heaven. Before our King was throned, the Extreme Purgatory Field had existed. It is the most magical area of our divine nation. I don't wish to learn all of its mysteries."

"There is trouble now. Shi Yan is also there and we don't know what is going on." Rochester spread his arms and shrugged. "I'm interested in this boy the most. But now, I can't see anything. It has become too boring."

"Yalan and Tie Mu would soon face Shi Yan. I don't know what would happen between them." Da Lei chuckled. "Although Yalan

and Tie Mu weren't ordinary, Shi Yan has reached the King God Realm. During this time, he has killed many warriors within the same realm. I'm really curious."

Carthew's face grimaced.

Of course, he knew that Shi Yan was tough. They had been watching Shi Yan the whole time. They paid attention to each of his battles. They noticed that the way he used energy and his Domains were getting more profound day by day.

They weren't surprised anymore seeing Shi Yan fight warriors whose realm was higher than his. None of the normal warriors at the Second Sky of King God Realm could flee from his hunt. After half a year, at least ten warriors had died in his hands.

While they hadn't noticed, the number of prisoners Shi Yan had killed had surpassed the records of Da Lei, Yalan and Tie Mu, and the two warriors under Rochester's command. His record was just a bit fewer than Leona's team and Ao Gera's team.

According to the current situation, it would not be long before Shi Yan's record surpassed Ao Gera's.

In the most critical time, Shi Yan, Yalan, and Tie Mu were all covered in the thick gray mist. As they couldn't see what was happening inside, everybody was irritated.

"Seems like someone is very familiar with the Extreme Purgatory Field. He can affect the energy moving inside and stay hidden from our view. This one is experienced and cunning. I think he will have a close fight against Shi Yan soon," said Leona, frowning.

Everybody was curious. They concentrated and gazed at the lake down there but they couldn't see anything.

Besides them, the master of the divine nation in the Dark Firmament Star also frowned, his face cold and harsh.

"Father, what is happening? Why can't you see?" Zi Yao was surprised. "When the Extreme Purgatory Field opened, wasn't it

under your control?"

Du Tian Ji's eyes sparkled with a strange light. He contemplated for a while before saying slowly, "I know how to open it but I did not make it. When I got the divine nation that year, the Extreme Purgatory Field had already existed. It has been there for tens of thousands of years! An Imperial Master of our divine nation had used the wonderful natural formation of the Extreme Purgatory Field to make it. The mysteries in that formation are the most subtle and magnificent ones. I'm not good at this evil stuff. Of course, I don't know all of its mysteries."

"Imperial Master?" Zi Yao was shaken. "The divine nation hasn't had an Imperial Master for quite a long time."

"It's true. The Imperial Master position has been vacant for so many years. I wanted to offer him that position, but he rejected it." A bit of loss sparkled in Du Tian Ji's eyes.

Zi Yao knew who he was talking about. The old man secluding in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field was one of the top alchemists in the Raging Flame Star Area. Several hundred years ago, he was famous in this star area.

"The previous Imperial Masters of our divine nations were all famous. They had deep understanding of the nature of powers Upanishad. Our Source of power Upanishad Inheritance was created by them. Unfortunately, there hasn't been an Imperial Master for several monarchies before my reign. Also, no one is qualified enough to hold this position." Du Tian Ji sighed. "Usually, the Imperial Master will be in charge of the Extreme Purgatory Field. But we don't have a suitable candidate so I have to do take charge myself. However, I've dedicated my life to the acme of power so I didn't study about the heaven way evil techniques. My understanding of the Extreme Purgatory Field isn't deep enough, so..."

"You don't know the reasons why?"



"Yes. This Limitless Divine Mirror of mine was made by the last Imperial Master of our divine nation. If it couldn't reflect the real situation of the Extreme Purgatory Field there, I have no other alternative."

"What are the requirements to become the Imperial Master?"

"Top-grade blacksmith and alchemist. He must acquire a firm grasp of natural formations, understand the nature of powers, be able to refine and force Divine Grade pellets and tools. He must also be able to carve formations, barriers, and restrictions. And achieve the best merit for the divine nation."

"Oh, Shi Yan's a blacksmith, too."

"Blacksmith?" Du Tian Ji burst out laughing, shaking his head. "This kid cultivates mixed powers indeed. He is greedy enough to have a bit of everything. Perhaps he is just an amateur blacksmith without a significant attainment."

"He can forge Divine Grade tools."

"Divine Grade?!?" Du Tian Ji was surprised. He couldn't help but shout, "How could it be?"

"I saw it with my own eyes."

Du Tian Ji's face changed. He got startled and expression was odd.

-----

Extreme Purgatory Field.

The cunning, old man was still trying to drive a wedge between Shi Yan and the other two. "You know, I'm only one person here, so I need only one token. Even if I had more, it would be useless. I just want to get out of here alive. I don't want to be imprisoned in the Extreme Purgatory Field. Our deal is quite simple. You kill that boy and give me his Purgatory Token. I will leave you alone. Simple, eh?"

He buzzed nonstop like a fly trying to manipulate Tie Mu and Yalan.

"You two are the Second Sky of King God Realm warriors and you coordinate well. If I have to kill you, I have to use a lot of my energy. Perhaps I can be hurt. But he is different. He has only the First Sky of King God Realm cultivation base, and he has broken through just recently. If you kill him for me, I don't need to use my powers and you can get rid of me. We all end up happy. What do you think?"

". . ."

That old fellow used cruel and sinister words which had poked right at their weakest nerves. His plan seemed to work. Yalan and Tie Mu looked touched, their faces uncertain.

Shi Yan was calm but he was on guard.

Actually, he didn't have a deep relationship with Tie Mu and Yalan. They had only met several times and talked a bit in the gravitational fields.

This kind of relationship had no foundation. If they want to kill him to save their lives, Shi Yan thought it would be possible.

He stood and squinted. All of a sudden, he sat down quietly right in front of Yalan and Tie Mu. He stooped, breathing regularly as if he was musing on something.

Yalan and Tie Mu looked at him with confused and uncertain faces.

The seducing voice of the cunning fellow continued to attack at their weakest points.

Shi Yan didn't say anything. He closed his eyes like he was sleeping. He looked defenseless. His aura was retrieved.

Yalan and Tie Mu's minds struggled for a while. They exchanged looks like they had finally made up their minds. They sat down

cross-legged like Shi Yan had done and steadied their affected mind. Slowly, they pulled themselves together.

"Damn you, you mean and shameless bastard. I almost got tricked." Tie Mu was foul-mouthed. "Come if you do have power. Come kill the three of us. You motherf\*cker, stop using your tricks!"

Shi Yan waited in silence with closed eyes. He grinned and he relaxed his tense nerves.

Brilliant starlight spots appeared gloriously in the area of twenty meters around Shi Yan. The lights were blinding as the stars spun mysteriously around him. Yalan and Tie Mu maintained a safe distance from Shi Yan. They all released the God Domains. They formed a triangle but their God Domain didn't overlap. All were waiting in silence.

"If you really want to court death, don't blame me. Sigh, too stupid. It's obviously an easy choice. Why do you make it more complicated like this?" The floating voice of the old man swayed. Sometimes it was near them, and the other times it was far away.

At the moment his voice arose, gray mist overflowed quietly. They covered the three of them instantly.

Their God Domains had no strange reactions or detected any unique energy fluctuation. It seemed this gray mist was just a normal cloud without any magical effects.

However, the soul altars of Shi Yan's group were tense right after that gray mist engulfed them.

It was like that mist had carried along some unknown dangers...

Their soul altars suddenly shook. Shi Yan's God Soul trembled while his face changed.

He opened his eyes all of a sudden.

Shadows started to appear next to him. Those silhouettes sat on

the ground. They were Yalan, Tie Mu, and Shi Yan himself. Even the God Domains looked alike.

The one sitting on his left looked identical to him. That Shi Yan opened his eyes, looking around with astonishment. His bearings were exactly the same as Shi Yan's, giving him an illusion of watching himself in the mirror.

Just like that figure, sitting not far from him were more than ten Yalan and Tie Mu. All of them had clear living energy fluctuations. The Purgatory Token on his waist all of a sudden signaled countless of lives.

When Shi Yan looked at that man, the man was looking back at him, too. While Shi Yan was perplexed, an evil smile beamed on the face that was identical to his.

Shi Yan shouted inwardly. He didn't think much but changed his God Domain to the space restraining domain.

# Chapter 786: Break The Illusions!

---

Space power Blockade!

The whole world was suddenly silent. No wind. No sound. All the energies seemed to have simultaneously force quit. Everything stopped all of a sudden.

The man that looked exactly like Shi Yan had his eccentric smile frozen.

More than ten Yalan and Tie Mu around Shi Yan halted, their face frozen in place.

Shi Yan extended his arm. A divine light dot departed from his fingertip, dashing like the lightning towards that man.

Tut!

His body exploded, turning into gray mist. A wisp of Soul Consciousness twisted, flashed from his body before disappeared.

Boom Boom Boom!

His finger pointed on the youths sitting near him. They perished one by one, releasing a beam of soul remnant.

Farther from him were the illusions of Tie Mu and Yalan. Shi Yan didn't dare act rashly.

Each of the illusionary bodies had the living energy fluctuations and his Purgatory Token had reflected their living signals. Shi Yan couldn't tell who was real and who were the replicas.

As he couldn't tell which one was real, Shi Yan didn't dare act recklessly as he was afraid of hurting Yalan's and Tie Mu's real bodies.

"Space power!"

A sharp voice arose in the forest nearby. The cunning old fellow seemed to be scared. He screamed darkly. "It has been so many

years since I've seen someone using Space power Upanishad. You're rare, really rare. I want to see if the space power Upanishad can break my Thousand Fantasy Fields Domain or not!"

When his voice stopped, shadows started to ooze out from nowhere, floating like ghosts that couldn't be caught. They all dashed toward Shi Yan.

Even though the shadows hadn't come close to him yet, the area that Shi Yan's Space Domain covered suddenly had a tremendous change.

Instantly, Shi Yan couldn't see Tie Mu and Yalan anymore.

He was standing on a small, isolated island. This island had some barren mountains. Rolling waves from the ocean lapped the shore. Shi Yan could even hear the sound of waves and seawater moving.

The shadows had disappeared, becoming part of his surroundings that his Soul Consciousness couldn't sense anymore.

Tie Mu and Yalan weren't in this illusion. They were forced to move somewhere else. Shi Yan's Purgatory Token couldn't detect them.

That old cunning man understood the Purgatory Token's features well. His Thousand Fantasy Fields Domain would counter the ability to sense living beings of the Purgatory Token. He wasn't going to let Shi Yan have any assistance.

Understanding this anomaly, Shi Yan didn't hesitate to take back the wisp of Soul Consciousness he had sent into the Purgatory Token. He didn't need its help anymore.

The other's domain was peculiar and wicked as it could affect God Souls and Sea of Consciousness. Under such circumstance, Shi Yan didn't release the Soul Consciousness anymore. Any creatures that appeared in this place would be treated as his enemies.

The surroundings changed again. Gradually, flowers bloomed on this island. Each of them was so beautiful and fresh. Stars blinked

in the night. Luxuriant, green foliage appeared.

The small, cold island suddenly revived vigorously and brought people.

Seeing this vibrant scene, Shi Yan didn't feel comfortable. He vaguely felt like an invisible danger was creeping towards him, a danger that could attack him in any minute.

A feeble wisp of energy fluctuation that was hard to detect flashed in the illusion.

Shortly, flowers and floras on the island flew out as if they were just given powers.

Strong energy fluctuations attacked!

Billions of tons of seawater condensed into different kinds of sea monsters, baring fangs and claw, roaring crazily on their way.

Shi Yan's Space Domain couldn't stop them!

Those floras and the sea monsters seemed to have a long time growing in his Space Power and got used to its features. When they attacked him, his Space Domain could not seal them.

Shi Yan understood that all that he saw were just hollow images so his Space Power couldn't constrain them. However, the energy stored in them was real, which was the condensed energy of a King God Realm warrior.

If Shi Yan were careless, this kind of power could hurt him or even kill him on the spot.

Seeing the danger coming, Shi Yan was as calm as usual. His soul altar spun a little bit and his God Domain changed.

Countless stars appeared like precious gemstones. Shi Yan looked like he was immersing in the sea of gems. Light shone gloriously around him.

Star power Upanishad was activated. Stars around him started to revolve fast. Shi Yan put himself in the star sea flying as he

pleased. His body flashed and arrived at different stars in just a blink. No one could detect his whereabouts.

So many perilous attacks swarmed over him but they could neither find nor lock Shi Yan in the sea star. At the same time, the starry sea started to wear out their energy.

"Another God Domain!"

The old man's voice reverberated in the air. Apparently, he was startled. His voice trembled. In the center of his echo, a flood created by fierce energy stormed towards the center of the star sea.

Boom!

Shi Yan's God Domain seemed to take a formidable hit. The space of ten meters around him shattered. Broken stars fell. The energy of his Star power Upanishad was in disorder.

All illusions vanished. Their energy fused into one big flow, turning into the furious flood current with a face that looked exactly like his. It snatched down from the sky and was about to swallow Shi Yan.

The island broke. Seawater ran fiercely, flooding the island. This fatal scene looked like the doomsday was coming. Shi Yan felt his soul trembling seeing this.

"Death Seal!"

His God Domain changed again. Massive seals condensed in the sky. His Dead Upanishad covered the whole area.

The Dead Seal stamped the air. Shortly, Shi Yan was surrounded with numerous Dead Seal, covering the entire area.

His negative energy crazily poured into the domain. His God Body was swollen. Energy flowed massively in his vessels unceasingly. Brutal energy gushed out from him, making each Dead Seal as big as a small mountain. They bombarded everything he saw.



Wicked Dead Upanishad spread out, restraining all of the oncoming attacks. At this moment, his quick Life Upanishad found a strange beam of living being energy undersea.

"Gotcha!"

Shi Yan showed a faint smile, his face still stern. Big Dead Seals gathered and combined, making a giant hand that could even cover the whole sky. That hand then furiously pounded the sea bottom.

Just like a breaking mirror, countless fragments of the illusions scattered under this attack. Shi Yan's surroundings became normal.

Yalan and Tie Mu were fighting with their own illusions near him. The illusions entangling them also had vitality and energy fluctuations.

However, as Shi Yan maintained his God Domain in the mode of Dead and Life Intent Domain, all living energy fluctuations of creatures in his domain were amplified and became clearer.

Shi Yan couldn't see the difference between Yalan, Tie Mu, and their replicas, but in his God Domain, the living fluctuations of the illusions weren't as clear as theirs.

It was enough for him.

He could find their real bodies now.

A deep hole appeared near him which was created by the bombarding of his Dead Seals. Immense gray mist diffused from that hole.

A skinny, rickety figure appeared in that gray mist.

It was a sloppy, dirty old man with disheveled hairs and scabs. He was wearing a muddy, long grey robe. His face was also covered in dust but his eyes were sparkling and fiery.

"Three powers Upanishad. Three different God Domains. Boy, how did you do that? Using three powers alternatively to break my

Thousand Fantasy Fields Domain, I can't deny that I surrendered. I really want to know how you could create three God Domains at the same time?" The skinny old man floated in the gray mist like a wandering ghost. He looked at Shi Yan with a dark, gloomy gaze.

"I don't know. I've just created them not long ago. During the battle with you, I got to know how to shift between them subtly. Indeed, magical things could happen." Shi Yan was indifferent. "If you want to use the Thousand Fantasy Fields Domain to delude me, I don't think it will be easy anymore. I can distinguish any creature in my domain to see if they are real or not."

"Evil power Upanishad," the old man mumbled then snorted. "Don't think that breaking my Thousand Fantasy Fields Domain means you won. Since you have only the First Sky of King God Realm cultivation base, I can defeat you using only my power and my God Body. The reason why I didn't show up is that I wanted to save energy. But if you break my God Domain, I have no choice but to widen your knowledge. Lets see how vast the gap between my Third Sky cultivation base and your First Sky cultivation base is."

He attacked immediately.

Shi Yan became serious. He didn't wait until the old man struck his first attack. A thought arose and the crazy hissing echoed.

Three Bone Thorns were invisible, leaving only the ear-piercing whistle in the air. They were moving across spaces, gathering energy.

The old man suddenly became alert. He slightly discolored and squinted as if he was trying to detect the source of the sound.

Shi Yan immediately entered the Rampage Realm. Shi Yan's eyes turned blood-red as negative energy gushed out from his body. Pallid tentacles extended from each of his acupuncture points.

This was the first time he urged the Rampage Realm after entering the King God Realm.

His refined body looked like iron or jade shriveled at the moment energy was accumulated. Scarlet halo bloomed from his body and reflected in his eyes, making him look more eccentric and evil.

Bloodthirsty, wild energy erupted like a volcano from his God Body before fusing with his magical Dead Intent Domain. The coverage of the Soul Burial Ground was tripled, reaching an astonishing thirty meters!

Desperation, bloodthirstiness, resentment, and other negative feelings multiplied. The ability to steal life force increased strongly.

In this moment, Shi Yan looked like a demon that crept out from the bottom layer of Hell. His body diffused the aura of termination. His existence seemed to destroy all creatures in the world.

Translator's Thoughts

Sigma Sigma

8 chapters for today

Happy now?

# Chapter 787: Counter-attack

---

After breaking through to the King God Realm, this was the first time Shi Yan had used all of his powers.

In his previous dozens of battles, he had encountered some Second Sky of King God Realm warriors. However, such characters couldn't stimulate all of his powers. Shi Yan didn't use much energy to kill them.

Only this old man with his Third Sky of King God Realm and the eccentric power Upanishad had made him use the Rampage Realm, which had taken all of his energy.

Standing on the freezing ground, Shi Yan squinted. His blood-red eyes were sharp and cold like sabers that gazed at that old fellow.

The hissing of the three Bone Thorns was like a crying ghost which irritated people.

The Bone Thorns with space power could be invisible and didn't even have shadows. It was hard to locate or lock them down using Soul Consciousness.

Although he was at the Third Sky of King God Realm, in the horrifying buzzing, he had no other way around but spending a part of his energy to stay cautious, preventing the three Bone Thorns.

"Inner Fantasy Thousand Folds!"

The old man lowered his voice and shouted. His shriveled body leaped up all of a sudden.

Then, the senile man turned into a ten-meter-tall giant. His skinny body swelled as if it contained endless power.

He faced the sky, and roared while swinging his arm. With the sound of bone exploding, a palm pressed down from the sky, snatching Shi Yan, covering all of the area where he was standing.

Refined energy compacted in his palm like so many electric god dragons, creating the whole new world in that instant.

Shi Yan looked at the sky.

He saw many shadows in that giant palm. They were Shi Jian, Shi Tie, Yang Tian Emperor, Yi Tian Mo, Xia Xin Yan, He Qing Man, and Bing Qing Tong's sisters.

In that palm were all the people Shi Yan cared about. At this moment, they became his archenemies. They were storming towards him with cold and sinister faces.

Each of his loved ones became the killer who wanted to take his life. Energy revolved everywhere, swarming toward Shi Yan.

His soul altar was affected. His God Soul was enchanted. Sorrow, disappointment, and deep bitterness arose in his heart.

While he was puzzled, those people became the real Death which wanted to kill him.

Heart Delusion Technique!

This was the bizarre and evil feature of the old man's power Upanishad. It could affect people's hearts, delude their minds, and make them believe that all that they saw were true.

Seeing his family members and friends want to take his life, Shi Yan, this cold and harsh person, felt lost. His heart made him restrain his enormous energy as he was afraid that he could hurt his loved ones.

"You've forgotten us and you just want to live your good life, don't you?"

"Why haven't you returned yet? Don't you know that we are struggling in the dead puddle of the Grace Mainland because of energy shortage?"

"Now that you have a good life, do you remember us? You forgot us, didn't you?"

His family members and friends threw question after question at him which messed his mind up more. Shi Yan was baffled and didn't know how to answer them.

His mind was chaotic. His will was reduced. He couldn't release all of his powers.

At this moment, Shi Yan fell under such struggling circumstances.

The giant body that the old man had created beamed a sinister smile while his other hand also pressed down. He performed the other magical illusions a second time, which was to deceive people's hearts.

Those silhouettes stormed over, bombarding their attacks on him. Each figure had turned into a sharp attack with pure energy. All fell on Shi Yan.

Boom Boom Boom!

Shi Yan's upright body was hit hard, settling down to dozens of meters underground. A massive hole appeared right when where he had just stood.

Illusions disappeared.

Shi Yan was kneeling inside a hundred-meter-large hole. Blood covered his entire body. His bones cracked and so did his eyes.

He woke up immediately.

Intensive pains spread across his body while his energy was chaotic. Forces in his body shot like lightning. All had lost its balance. The struggling Shi Yan thought that if he died, he would feel better. The circulation of his energy and power was stagnant.

The giant body of the old man stood vigorously. He stooped and watched Shi Yan in his hundred-meter-deep hole. He was surprised. "Kid, your God Body isn't broken yet!"

With his Third Sky of King God Realm cultivation base, the First

Sky of King God Realm warrior's body couldn't bear much of his attacks. It would explode and only the soul altar could escape.

He thought that Shi Yan must be dead under his savage attack.

Unfortunately, he had underestimated the toughness of Shi Yan's God Body. His attack had just hurt Shi Yan badly, and it couldn't explode his body.

"Hey old freak, I won't let you live so comfortably." Shi Yan had blood all over his face. Blood also trickled from the corners of his eyes. He looked brutally angry. "I hate family members and friends illusions the most. Since you're so shameless and sinister, don't blame me for giving you the same treatment."

Then, Shi Yan shot out of the hole like a sharp sword.

His God Domain was filled with negative feelings like death, desperation, resentment, bloodthirstiness and more. They condensed into a torrential sea of negative energy. Just like the beast getting out of its rein, it flooded over the old man like a Milky Way, covering his entire area.

Not only did the old man know how to delude people with illusions. In his God Domain, Shi Yan knew how to use the same mysterious trick.

Filled with resentment, Shi Yan's God Soul manipulated the three Bone Thorns and got them out of the space slits.

As soon as they appeared, the three Bone Thorns aimed at the old man's eyes and nape, stabbing directly like three silver lightning strikes.

The old man discolored. He didn't expect that the Bone Thorns could have space power and be so cunning. He urged his energy, creating moving halo covering his body.

Those moving halos looked like small fish swimming around him. When the three Bone Thorns arrived, the halo entangled them all. Shi Yan's Bone Thorns looked like they were tied by

something invisible, sinking into a swamp.

The Bone Thorns Shi Yan had refined himself were made of a bone of a level eleven beast with more than ten auxiliary materials, which greatly enhanced their hardness and sharpness. This weapon of his had reached rank 1 Divine Grade.

Although it was the defense of a Third Sky of King God Realm warrior, hurriedly countering the three Bone Thorns had used all of his power.

While the old man used his energy to create the moving halos that prevented the three Bone Thorns, he didn't have extra energy to create more illusions. Shortly after, all illusions that were affecting Shi Yan, Tie Mu, and Yalan vanished.

Shi Yan used his negative feelings to create the negative sea engulf the old man.

He didn't hesitate and clapped his hands in front of his chest. Lights congregated between his palms creating a big light sword. Shi Yan slashed his sword, fiercely stabbing through the negative sea and aiming at the old man's glabella.

At the same time, Yalan and Tie Mu released their God Domains after they had got rid of the illusions. Tornadoes swept around. Earth changed. Beams of furious energy fell on the sky like shooting light from outer space. They all aimed at the old man.

The Three Bone Thorns struggled to move due to the moving halos. As if they had consciousness, they retreated and disappeared into folds of space.

At this moment, the negative sea, which was filled with evil and wicked negative emotions, had engulfed the old man. Although he was good at deluding people, the old man was affected. He seemed to be dragged into Hell. What he saw were all the bloody ghosts and demons that surrounded him.

His God Soul was affected so that he wouldn't be able to create



the illusions in just a short period. Right at this moment, the light sword slashed down. This sword made the old man stop making illusions and to focus on gathering energy to create the moving halos around his body for defense.

The light sword slashed down grumblingly. Light shot out everywhere. The beams of light that had created the divine sword flew out, shifting into tens of thousands of stars that darted towards him.

Twirling gusts wrecked havoc everywhere, covering the old man. Under his feet, a heavy restraining force pressed the old man down on the ground, keeping him from flying away.

Yalan and Tie Mu were both the Second Sky of King God Realm warriors. As they were the troopers under Carthew's command, they had enough fighting experience. They were good at continuous attacking. After they got rid of the illusions, they immediately released their powers. The intimidating scene they created was not less than Shi Yan's.

Swoosh!

A wisp of divine light appeared. Shi Yan walked to that old man. His soul flickered and the God Domain changed again.

Both of his hands joined together, and a magical effect was created. He held the Space Domain tightly in his palms, making an incomparable space mystery. Massive light balls bombarded the old man instantly.

"Space Imprisonment!" Shi Yan shouted.

Crack Crack Crack!

Cracking sounds echoed from the space where the old man stood. It seemed that everything there was imprisoned. However, Wind and Earth power Upanishads of Yalan and Tie Mu were exceptions. They were still flowing furiously.

The old man's body stopped moving. Countless moving lights

around him were frozen eccentrically.

Yalan and Tie Mu's powers hit him immediately. Explosions continued. Light sparks shot out from the old man's God Body.

Shortly after, that old man looked like Shi Yan with blood covering him entirely as if hundreds of sabers and swords had slashed him. He was in utter confusion with disheveled hair, giving him a funny and pitiful look.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The hissing sound of the Bone Thorns arose again. The three Bone Thorns appeared, stabbing his chest and back.

Pfff!

The Bone Thorns pierced the old man's God Body. Bones cracked. The old man spat out blood. However, his face glowed strangely. He then disappeared like a ghost, leaving no trace.

All of his aura, energy fluctuations, and life magnetic field were gone. No one could detect him.

Yalan and Tie Mu walked over after the old man disappeared. They frowned while searching, touching their Purgatory Token to see if they could sense something.

Translator's Thoughts

Sigma Sigma

8 chapters for today

Happy now?

# Chapter 788: Break Into The Prohibited Area

---

"I sense living energy fluctuations in five different directions!"

Yalan stroked the Purgatory Token, frowning while scanning everything around her. She talked with a slight headache.

Tie Mu scowled and had a worried look. "I don't know how this old freak affected the Purgatory Token to deceive us. His aura currently signals in five different directions. I don't know which way we will find him."

Shi Yan walked over to them. Blood dripped from his body. He wiped away a trickle of blood on the corner of his mouth, smiling coldly. "The signals in all five directions are all fake. This old freak is really cunning."

Yalan and Tie Mu couldn't help but stare at him for a few seconds. Later on, Yalan said, "You are truly fierce. You have become so mighty after breaking through to the King God Realm!"

In the previous battle, Shi Yan was the main force as his power had stopped the old man for a while. That was the golden chance for Yalan and Tie Mu to attack and wound him.

If Shi Yan hadn't distracted the old man, they would have had no way to get rid of the illusions so quickly. And of course, they would have had no chance to damage that man.

They had seen the battle between Shi Yan and the old man. They understood that they didn't have the means to counter that old fellow but Shi Yan did.

Although their realms were one level higher than his, they had had no way of dealing with that old fellow.

The powers Shi Yan had demonstrated frightened them.

"Follow me. I know where he is. F\*ck him. This old dog is too

cunning. He has provoked us to separate and make us kill each other so that he could clean us up at the end. When he saw that we didn't buy it, he used the illusions to delude us. Basically, he didn't want to spare anyone of us alive." Shi Yan snorted then continued, "I've left a wisp of Soul Consciousness in his Sea of Consciousness. I can locate him. The directions our Purgatory Tokens have sensed are all made up. None of them is true."

"You're at the First Sky of King God Realm but you could leave a beam of your Soul Consciousness in his Sea of Consciousness. Are you sure?" Yalan's eyes brightened, not believing him.

Tie Mu gawked. "Impossible! You and he are at two different levels. It's possible that he can leave a beam of his Soul Consciousness in your Sea of Consciousness. But how could you?"

"I've cultivated special powers Upanishad. My Soul Consciousness has mixed with space power. It can avoid his sensing for a short while. However, it won't last long. We should hurry. If we are too late and he deletes my wisp of Soul Consciousness, we won't be able to find him."

Yalan and Tie Mu reacted quickly to what he said. They nodded and didn't linger.

Shi Yan took the lead. His body flashed like the rainbow, weaving through the forest like a shuttle. Yalan and Tie Mu stayed close behind him.

After one hour, he halted, looking at the valley in front of them and waving his hand. "This place!"

Yalan and Tie Mu stopped, looking at that valley disbelievingly. "Impossible!" they shouted.

The valley in between the mountains was covered in layers of gray shadows and mists. Folds of barriers were set that covered the whole area. Chaotic energy stayed inside the barriers particularly. It seemed to hide the extreme dangers.

That area was apparently a prohibited land in the Extreme Purgatory Field. The magical Extreme Purgatory Field had so many similar areas. When normal participants encountered such places, they would try to avoid them at all costs. No one dared to intrude.

Rumors said that those barriers were made of the initial natural formations of this land. The Imperial Master of several previous generations had created them. Let alone the participants, even the owner of the divine nation Du Tian Ji couldn't understand all the mysteries of those barriers.

Before the participants entered the Extreme Purgatory Field, the host would explain and tell them to stay away from those prohibited areas.

According to them, those forbidden areas were the key nodes that created the Extreme Purgatory Field. These areas hid so many mysterious dangers. If they entered those places rashly, their soul altars could possibly vanish. They could also break the balance of the Extreme Purgatory Field which would prevent it from functioning properly.

Almost all the participants followed this rule. They wouldn't enter these places willingly. Out of those who dared to intrude, not many got out alive.

Magical energy fluctuations signaled from that valley, stating that it was one of the banned lands of the Extreme Purgatory Field.

Shi Yan wouldn't dare intrude such a place if he still had his previous cultivation base. He would leave early to get away from running into any unexpected troubles.

However, it was different now. That cunning old fella was hiding in there. Once he could recover and show up for a second time, he would bring greater dangers. If they didn't take the chance to destroy him when he got hurt, Shi Yan would never forgive himself for not preventing this wicked man from doing evil deeds.

"He dared to get in there. What are we afraid of?" Shi Yan glared at Yalan and Tie Mu, his face persistent. "Whether you are coming with me or not, I'm going in there. This cunning old fella has grudges against us. He won't leave us alone easily. He is much more familiar with the Extreme Purgatory Field than we are and he can even dodge the Purgatory Token's sensing. If he is alive, he will always be some hidden danger. We must destroy him now."

"That freak has joined the Extreme Purgatory Field many times. He must be familiar with this place. If he dared to get inside, I think he has some backup. We don't know anything about this place. Isn't it too risky?" Tie Mu said with a worried expression on his face. He couldn't make up his mind.

Yalan frowned as she struggled to decide whether to get in there or leave.

"Perhaps the prohibited area hides some secrets, secrets related to the Extreme Purgatory Field. Maybe due to those secrets, that old man could dodge the Purgatory Token's sensing. If he might know that, why can't we?" Shi Yan pondered for a while and then shouted, "I must get in there!"

Then, he flew like a sharp sword piercing toward the barriers covering the valley.

Boom!

It was like he had bumped into a giant rubber ball. His flying body bounced back with a tremendous force. An immense energy ran through his body. The impact made him dizzy.

Confused, Shi Yan went back over to Yalan and Tie Mu. His face darkened. "Strong barriers. Hard to break. I can't pierce through it. Damn it. How did he do it?"

"He must know the mysteries of the barriers." Yalan's face was somber. She hesitated for a while and said, "I think we should give up. If we take risks and intrude, I'm not sure if we can gain the

upper hand in his familiar fighting arena. However, if we attack him outside, we can join hands and win."

Tie Mu supported her. "Shi Yan, don't act rashly. Being stubborn isn't always good."

"People who can achieve big accomplishments are all crazy and stubborn." Shi Yan contemplated for one second and laughed sinisterly. "It is just a barrier. I think I will be able to break it."

Then, his thoughts flickered. The Sky-breaking Shuttle appeared from the Storage Ring. He sent a beam of his Soul Consciousness into the shuttle.

"I want to break that barrier. How much energy do you need?"

"One-third of your power."

"Okay!"

Wisps of fine energy circulated, rolling grumbly and massively pouring into the Sky-breaking Shuttle.

Receiving the energy from his body, the Sky-breaking Shuttle, designed to break all kind of barriers and restrictions, turned into a shooting light that tore layers of barriers, flying toward the center of the forbidden land.

Shi Yan turned around, glaring at Tie Mu and Yalan. He ignored their astonished faces, turned into a bunch of light before disappearing shortly.

"He broke it? Did he just break it?" Tie Mu's eyes showed that he couldn't believe what he just saw. He shook his head. "Who is this boy? How can he be so magical?"

"No wonder why he has the potential to replace Ao Gera. He is such a tough character. I finally know why Master Carthew favors him. Yalan contemplated for a while, her face astonished. She turned to Tie Mu. "What should we do now?"

"This..." Tie Mu was hesitant. "We don't know the situations in

there. If we barge in, I'm not sure if we will be safe. The old man is a Third Sky of King God Realm warrior. This place is his den. I don't think intruding is a good idea."

Yalan pondered for a while and nodded in agreement. "Forget it. We should wait for a while. I know intruding into someone's territory would be taking a big risk."

While they were talking, the light passage created by the Sky-breaking Shuttle gradually vanished, cutting off their entry. Even if they wanted to get in there, they lost their chance..

-----

The scene changed subtly.

Shi Yan was standing in a beautiful blooming valley. Two streams crossed each other, which were clear enough to see the bottom. Small fish swam back and forth happily. Wild grass grew up to people's waist in every corner of the valley. They looked like the fuzz of a giant beast.

The air was fresh, cool, and humid in the valley. Earth and heaven energy were very thick. The wild grass was mowed in a small area of the valley where a small cottage stood. The door was open, revealing an old, pale man using pellets to recover.

He was the old man Shi Yan had encountered.

In the moment Shi Yan saw the man, the old man also noticed him. He jolted up, his expression changing dramatically in surprise. He shouted, "Kid, how did you get in here? Didn't those barriers make you struggle? How could you?"

"Nothing is impossible." Shi Yan frowned. His eyes were still blood-red as he was maintaining the Rampage Realm. Energy boiled and rolled in his body massively, his aura brutal and malignant.

He walked step by step towards that old man. His eyes became more ruthlessly bloodthirsty. "You got hurt badly. You want to



hide and recover in here so that you could continue playing with us. Haha, you have a good place, indeed. Seems like you've been staying here for a long time and got familiar with the conditions."

That old man stopped restoring his aura and walked out of his cottage. In front of him were the two crossing streams. He had installed the net to restrain the fish in the streams. It seemed that he kept the fish for food.

The whole scene was beautiful and harmonious. The old man stood by the stream and he stooped to watch the small fish, inhaling the pleasant fragrance of flowers permeating the air. He wasn't tense or anxious at all. He even beamed a smile at Shi Yan. "I'm glad you came. My Purgatory Token is here now."

Shi Yan smiled, slightly shaking his head. "It won't be so easy."

# Chapter 789: Deterrent Force!

---

A corner of the Purgatory Star.

Leona, Ao Gu Duo, and the others frowned while looking at the lake, their faces astounded.

Yalan and Tie Mu reappeared. After the battle between Shi Yan and the old man finished, their surroundings reappeared.

In the area they had fought, there was a deep pit that could be recognized from a thousand miles away. Yalan and Tie Mu were discussing something.

"Where is Shi Yan?" Carthew knitted his brows. "There was a battle. Who did they fight? Shi Yan?"

"Possibly," Rochester curled his lips. "But where is that kid? If Yalan and Tie Mu fought Shi Yan, who would win?"

"It would be a pretty even match," Da Lei squinted. "Anyway, it seems like Yalan and Tie Mu won. Shi Yan disappeared. Did he get killed?" That was what he wanted to see.

"Carthew, your subordinates are still enthusiastic. Haha." Ao Gu Duo grinned. "Shi Yan has killed a lot of people. He brought death, now he has to bear it. If he got killed, it would not be abnormal."

"Did you order Yalan and Tie Mu to do something?" Leona's face darkened. A gleam of brutal thought sparkled deep in her dark green eyes.

Carthew was scared out of his wits and he kept shaking his head. "How could I? I like that kid a lot. I have treated him well. In my gravitational room, he spoke with Yalan and Tie Mu. I didn't think they would battle each other."

As he explained, Leona snorted and didn't say more.

"Some force had covered that area. I don't know what happened but I think the three of them won't compete against each other,"

Du Tian Le said uncertainly while rubbing his chin.

"What happened?" Carthew mumbled to himself, curious about the situation.

The situation was similar in the Dark Firmament Star. Du Tian Ji also had this suspicions. He looked at that giant mirror with astonishment. He was baffled for a while then muttered, "Our divine nation hasn't had an Imperial Master for a long time. I know the previous Imperial Masters all lived in the Extreme Purgatory Field. That place should store their inheritance. After this training ends, it's time for us to find an Imperial Master. How about the business you have done?" He glared at Zi Yao.

Zi Yao's bold brows knitted together. Her beautiful eyes flared a strange halo. She pondered for a while then shook her head. "He doesn't want to take the Imperial Master role."

"The knot in his heart hasn't been untied yet. It seems that I will have to work on him myself." Du Tian Ji nodded as if he already knew this result beforehand. "After screening him, I can say that he is currently one of the most impressive alchemists of the entire Raging Flame Star Area. If he agrees to assist the divine nation, we will have more strong experts. Sigh... only if we had an Imperial Master, he could inherit from the few generations before him. We would have been able to give a clear path. What a pity. It is shameful for me to talk to him."

Zi Yao kept silent, her face complicated. She didn't know exactly what had happened that year. She wasn't sure if Du Tian Ji's shame was related to her mother's death.

"Zao-er, you are not young anymore. Do you have anyone in mind right now?" Du Tian Ji suddenly asked.

Zi Yao's beautiful face blushed. She shook her head shyly. "I don't want to think about this for the time being."

"Previously, Old Fan of the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce told

me about his son. You've heard about his only son, Fan Tian Po. His background and abilities are not weaker than Ao Gera. In the Raging Flame Star Area, the name of Fan Tian Po is well known. His bearings aren't bad either. I heard that he is handsome. He is also excellent in many aspects. You know Old Fan's status and position in the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce. If we want to talk about the perfect match for you in the Raging Flame Star Area, he would be the one. What do you think?"

"No," Zi Yao shook her head after contemplating for a while. "I don't really know about this at the moment."

"Alright then. I also need time to think. Consider him." Du Tian Ji's eyes sparkled. "The Ethereal God Realm is a big door. I don't dare go before preparing. However, I have to do it. If something happens to you, you better find the man in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field. He will take care of you."

"Father, if something happens to you, what about our divine nation?" Zi Yao forced a smile. "The five great feudal vassals have their own forces. They're all mighty. Without you, who would suppress them?"

Du Tian Ji kept silent. After a while, he answered deliberately, "I believe in their loyalty to the divine nation."

"But Da Lei..." Zi Yao wanted to say something but she didn't finish.

"Do not babble!" Du Tian Ji shouted, giving an angry look. "When I'm about to break through, I'll have my arrangement!"

Zi Yao nodded begrudgingly. Her look shifted to the shining mirror once again. She didn't know why she was worrying about Shi Yan. Perhaps it was because she didn't want anything bad to happen to him.

She had heard about Fan Tian Po of the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce. She knew he was a great character. But she didn't

know why she had no interest in him.

-----

One of the forbidden lands of the Extreme Purgatory Field.

The old man who was good at using illusions stood nonchalantly where the two streams crossed each other. He silently watched the fish swimming back and forth.

"Are you familiar with this place?" Shi Yan walked over to him in a normal pace. His calmness was scarily abnormal.

"Yeah, I got used to this place. I survived the Extreme Purgatory Field on many close occasions thanks to this place." The old man scooped water with his hands and drank it. He stooped and chuckled. "I'm hurt, and so are you. In this place, you won't have any back up. You didn't recognize how perilous this situation is for you, did you? I'm glad you came. This means I can get your Purgatory Token, get out of this damn place alive, and gain back my freedom."

"You think so?" Shi Yan grinned. "Then I want to see how you can take the Purgatory Token on my waist. Yeah, you're right. We're both wounded. But there's one thing you'll never be better than me at. I am younger than you and my recovery ability is much faster than what you think."

"Young? Being young is useful, my ass!" The old man finally stood up, looking at him in the eyes. "Kid, if you want to court death, don't blame me."

"You just want a Purgatory Token, right?" Shi Yan was surprised for a while. He said, "In fact, your wish is easy to fulfill. If I can help you, will you share the secrets you know with me? It's just a Purgatory Token, I'm sure I can get it for you."

The old man was caught off guard but he still laughed out of interest. "What do you mean you will get a Purgatory Token for me? You know what that means, right? I don't know you. But I

know you want to kill a participant, the young talented and favored subordinate of one of the five feudal vassals, right? Will you do this for me?"

"Why not?" Shi Yan pursed his lips. "If I don't kill them, someone else will. I have someone I must kill in this place. He's hunting me down with all of his best efforts too."

The old man didn't hasten. He stretched leisurely, glaring at Shi Yan. "Tell me, what happened?"

"Have you ever heard about Ao Gera?" Shi Yan pondered before asking.

The old man's eyes got colder. He snorted. "Of course I know him. Ao Gu Duo's nephew, a genius of the divine nation. You want to kill him?"

Shi Yan nodded. "Ah, you've been idle in the Extreme Purgatory Field for so many years. But how do you know about Ao Gera? It seems like you hate him. What happened?"

"I haven't been out for all these years but people will be put in the Extreme Purgatory Field from time to time. From them, I get information of the world outside." The old man snorted with a cold visage. "I don't like people who are related to Ao Gu Duo. Ao Gu Duo has imprisoned me here. Ao Gera is his nephew who has outstanding performance. Of course I have to notice him. If I had known he was here, I would have found and targeted him. Whatever will irritate Ao Gu Duo, I will do them all!"

"Ao Gu Duo captured you? Haha, interesting, interesting. Seems like we have common goals." Shi Yan laughed evilly. "By the way, what did you do to get yourself jailed here?"

"It has nothing to do with you!" snorted the old man.

Shi Yan just laughed, unbothered by his response. One hundred meters away from the old man, he took off his clothes, discarding them conveniently before stepping into the stream to wash the

bloodstains on his body.

The old man's eyes suddenly sparkled with divine light as he focused on the young man.

Using the stream's freshwater to wash away the blood on his body, Shi Yan revealed a refined iron-like body that didn't show even a single cut.

The old man had fought him just one hour ago. He understood that although Shi Yan's God Body didn't explode, he received a lot of cuts and wounds. Otherwise, he wouldn't have had so much blood on his body.

However, Shi Yan now stood vigorous without a single scratch. Energy in his body circulated smoothly. His God Body shimmered, showing that he was in his peak condition. Nothing in his body provided evidence that he got hurt badly.

After one hour of adjusting his aura and energy, there was not much change for the old man. The old man still had a lot of wounds on his body. The holes deep to the bone that the three Bone Thorns left on his chest and back were still there. His waist, abdomen, arms, and legs were covered with cuts which were caused by Yalan and Tie Mu's bombarding powers.

Shi Yan was no longer damaged. This discovery silenced the old man as he had planned to attack him one more time.

He suddenly realized that Shi Yan intruding this place alone and bragging in front of him wasn't just mere boasting. There was a reason why he had such confidence!

In front of the old man, Shi Yan washed before putting on new, clean garments. All of a sudden, he urged the power of the Immortal Demon Blood, pouring it into his arm. His iron fist pounded the ground grumblingly.

Boom Boom!

The impact from his fist touching the ground caused great

tremors. An area of several thousand meters seemed to get hit by a meteor. The ground cracked as if there was an earthquake. The pits that appeared were so deep that people wouldn't be able to see the bottom.

The condensed energy of the Immortal Demon Blood was sent to the ground, creating an earth-shaking scene. The tremendous energy ran deep under the Extreme Purgatory Field. Grumbling noise from the tremors continually echoed. The mountain near the valley was trembling as if it was about to collapse. Such a scale of damage was really scary indeed.

Even the old man at the King God Realm discolored in fright. He didn't dare act rashly anymore.

Shi Yan retrieved his powers, looking at the dozen-meter-deep pit in front of him with satisfaction. He turned around, smiling at the old man. "You still want to ambush and kill me eh? Yeah, do you still think you would succeed?"

The old man's face darkened and he said nothing.

"Can we talk for a while?" Shi Yan calmed down, strolling towards the old man, his face casual and peaceful. He wasn't worried about being ambushed.

The old man's face was gloomy and uncertain. He gazed at Shi Yan for a while and said, "True. You've proven your abilities. I can't kill you easily, it is true. Alright, I'll go with the less risky option. What do you want to know?"



# Chapter 790: Forbidden Area's Wonder

---

"I want to know how you are able to avoid the sensing powers of the Purgatory Token? How can you hide your life magnetic field? And how did you enter this forbidden place?"

Shi Yan stood firmly by the stream. Although he remained alert, he looked nonchalant. Shi Yan didn't think that this old man would attack him for the second time. He could tell that the old man should understand now.

Indeed, he didn't dare attack anymore. Like Shi Yan, the old man calmed down eventually. "What you want to know is related to this stone."

While talking, he took out a cube-shaped stone from his sleeve. That stone had some patterns that looked like natural drawings or formations. It held magical energy that made the patterns move and shimmer.

The old man bared his teeth in a broad smile. He threw the stone at the ground. "Try it again."

Shi Yan sent a wisp of Soul Consciousness into the Purgatory Token. Magically, the life magnetic of the old man was visible in the Purgatory Token. The token was even able to precisely sense the strength of his life energy.

Shi Yan's eyes brightened, studying the cube stone. He said with astonishment, "This stone can cut off the sensing of the Purgatory Token and keep my Soul Consciousness from detecting you?"

"Yes," the old man smiled arrogantly. He quickly picked up the cube stone. "With this gem, the contestants in the Extreme Purgatory Field can't find me with their Purgatory Token. With this gem, I can enter ninety-nine forbidden places of the Extreme Purgatory Field easily without worrying about the barriers."

The cube stone disappeared into his sleeve. Shi Yan's sensing did

not work again. He couldn't use the Purgatory Token to lock the old man. Although they were standing face to face, his Soul Consciousness couldn't sense the living fluctuations of this old fella.

This cube stone seemed to be able to hide the God Soul and the soul altar. It was a marvelous device.

"Where did you get it?" Shi Yan was curious.

"Hehehe, I can't tell you. I can only say that there are several stones like this. Except for me, the others who keep this stone are all the craziest prisoners of the Extreme Purgatory Field. After participating in the Extreme Purgatory Field for several times, we agreed to keep this a secret. Even the owner of the divine nation Du Tian Ji doesn't know about it." The old man grinned. "It is also why I've joined the Extreme Purgatory Field five times but remained alive. If I encounter someone I can't fight, I hide in the forbidden places."

Shi Yan's eyes brightened. He nodded, "No wonder. Seems like you've had good encounters in the Extreme Purgatory Field. You said there are ninety-nine forbidden places like this place. Do they all have layers of barriers?"

"Yes, ninety-nine in total. I guess they are the formation eyes and the key nodes that contain the Extreme Purgatory Field. The existences of the ninety-nine forbidden lands maintain the balance and the magical effect of the Extreme Purgatory Field. Only while holding this square stone can you get in there safely." The old man gazed at him, his eyes bizarre. "It is shocking that you were able to get in here. How? As far as I've known, even I, at the Third Sky of King God Realm, can't get through such complicated barriers without this cube stone."

"I can't tell you either," Shi Yan beamed a faint smile. "Everyone has his own secrets. If you don't want to talk much, neither will I."

"Fine. Now, I will take you somewhere." The old man pondered

for a while then smiled. "Perhaps you will like it. Oh right, I'm Jiang Ge. You?"

"Shi Yan."

"Come with me. I'll take you there."

The old man named Jiang Ge didn't bother with the blood stains on his body. He became more excited, walking quickly through the cottage to another place deeper inside the valley.

Shi Yan didn't linger. He nodded and followed him quietly.

Flowers bloomed everywhere in this valley, grass also present in the entire area. Water murmured. Fish swam. The whole place was peaceful and harmonious like a fairyland.

No matter how hard people could imagine, they would never picture a wonderful place like this in the bloody Extreme Purgatory Field. The forbidden lands were intimidatingly dangerous, but they also hid a different world.

Jiang Ge looked very familiar with this place. While walking deep into the valley, he explained, "Just like me, those who have the same cube stones occupy their own territory. Yeah, they're the forbidden places. Five out of the ninety-nine forbidden places are actually wonderful. You will see soon."

Shi Yan listened to him attentively before asking, "If you stayed in the forbidden land of the Extreme Purgatory Field after three years of bloody training, will people be able to detect you?"

Jiang Ge turned around, laughing. "What do you think?."

"People out there can't find you, can they?" Shi Yan replied uncertainly.

"Of course not. I'm being honest. After each time I used my forbidden territory, I always got out. However, the four others who hold the territory of the four wonderful forbidden places have never left. They stay in the forbidden lands all the time. The owner

of the divine nation deemed them dead. He doesn't know that they've survived and lived a better life. Since I have something to do, I have to go out. The other four consider the forbidden lands their home. They no longer want to leave." Jiang Ge didn't turn to see him. He explained before walking away.

Shi Yan's eyes sparkled strangely, amazed at what he was hearing.

If what this old man said was true, there were four other people like him in the Extreme Purgatory Field with the cube stones. Despite the fact that the lands were harsh, they have stayed in Extreme Purgatory Field for a long time. Age and realms for the other four were probably not normal. They must all be tough characters.

Since they got the cube stones, even Du Tian Ji couldn't find them or know their situations. Although they can dodge the Purgatory Token's sensing, why did they stay for several hundred years in the Extreme Purgatory Field?

Soon, he realized the answer.

Jiang Ge suddenly stopped, pointing at the end of the valley and shouted, "Here we are."

Shi Yan stopped walking. At first glance, he was dumbstruck.

It was a grand palace.

Stood between the two mountains at the end of the valley was a grand palace. The high mountain that jutted up to the sky provided shade for this palace. Thick clouds hovered above the palace like water ink that blocked light and didn't disperse.

The grand palace radiated immense divine light. It looked like this palace was made of gold, jade, and gemstone. It was tall and pleasing to the eyes. Stone pillars stood in the center, supporting the palace. This scenery looked exactly like what you would find in a fairyland..

At this moment, they were standing next to the nearest pillar which could even shield the whole sky. Lifting up their heads to look at the palace, they felt so small.

Magical energy fluctuations diffused from time to time from the foundation pillar of the palace. They rippled out like magnificent waves. Each wave had at least dozens of layers, and each layer was a magical barrier. They were all mysterious and conveyed the might of Nature, which silenced them in awe.

Instinctively, Shi Yan wanted to go in.

Jiang Ge shouted all of a sudden. "Watch out!"

Shi Yan halted, turning around to look at him with astonishment.

"Those rippling waves can easily take your life away. I've been here for so many years but I can't dissolve it. You shouldn't take risks, alright?" Jiang Ge grinned bizarrely. "The other four's situations aren't different from mine. They also have a grand palace like this in their forbidden places. Do you get why they aren't trying to leave so quickly now?"

"Because of this palace?" Shi Yan was surprised.

Nodding, Jiang Ge's face was solemn. "I can tell you that the five palaces in the Extreme Purgatory Field should belong the five previous Imperial Masters of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. Du Tian Ji might know about this, but it is not certain. The former Imperial Masters hid something from the owner of the divine nation. That is why they didn't let him know about the mysteries of this place. I don't know what they hid in there, but I'm sure that these palaces have something. The other four also believe the same thing. They aren't hurrying to leave because they want to discover this secret."

Shi Yan discolored in fright.

"If I didn't have a reason, I would never leave this place. I would

break the defense there and get into the palace to see what's in there." Jiang Ge's face was serious. "Kid, I brought you here to tell you that. If you give me a Purgatory Token, I will give you the cube stone. Although I can't make it, I think you can. I can't wait here any longer. I need to leave. Just consider this an exchange. I'm sure you won't bear a loss."

"You got the cube stone but you can't get in there?" Shi Yan didn't agree immediately. He was still suspicious.

"That stone can only bring me through the barriers of the forbidden place. I can't get in the palace. I've tried many times. My knowledge and power aren't enough to solve this problem. Perhaps, my realm isn't enough," Jiang Ge forced a smile.

"You have the Third Sky of King God Realm cultivation base and you can't do anything. Why do you think I can?" Shi Yan burst out laughing, shaking his head. "I won't be fooled. You don't want to fight but you want to keep me in this place for the rest of my life. You want to use a secret to bind me. Good plan!"

"Don't you want to know what is in there?" Jiang Ge frowned.

"I do. But I don't want to do things in vain. I don't want my efforts to be in vain by wasting time in this place where even birds don't want to poop." Shi Yan shook his head.

"Birds don't even poop?" Jiang Ge didn't know whether to cry or smile. "Kid, you don't know your fortune."

"Why did you say so?"

"Once the three years of the training in the Extreme Purgatory Field ends, the sensitive feelings towards earth and heaven powers will disappear. Why only three years? Because they can only hold it for three years. No more. After three years, the Extreme Purgatory Field will be like other places. It won't be able to offer assistance to warriors and their realms. Ninety-four out of the ninety-nine forbidden areas will be the same. The energy there will

disappear. However, the five forbidden areas with the palaces won't disappear. The sensitive sensing of natural energy will remain here forever!" Jiang Ge shouted.

Shi Yan was shaken. He finally understood the heavy conditions that this old man offered him.

# Chapter 791: Disappear Quietly

---

If a warrior doesn't go out and enjoy the subtle mysteries of the Extreme Purgatory Field to understand natural powers better every day, even if he has a bad innate endowment, accumulating for years can help with their understanding of powers and realms.

This forbidden land was a magical area that could help warriors progress their realm. Staying in this area, a man's perception of realms and powers becomes clearer and stronger.

Such an enticement was big enough. Shi Yan was touched. His mind was in a flutter.

However, while he was still dismayed, Jiang Ge's Fantasy Upanishad suddenly appeared!

Jiang Ge had been waiting for this chance for a long time. Seeing Shi Yan's confused eyes, he seized the moment and attacked.

He activated the Thousand Fantasy Domain. Jiang Ge looked at him. Magical light shot out from his eyes.

A gleam of confusion crossed Shi Yan's face. He couldn't differentiate illusions from reality. Jiang Ge's figures multiplied in his vision. Layers of water-like barriers suddenly disappeared.

A beautiful figured appeared in his retinae. It's Xia Xin Yan. More people appeared unceasingly...

Shi Jian, Yang Tian Emperor, Yang Mu, Yi Tian Mo,... They all came, smiling as if they wanted to tell him something...

Shi Yan was baffled. He felt betrayed. His God Soul was tempted. He didn't realize that he was walking towards that group of people.

Crack!

His body immediately bumped into those layers of water ripples. He seemed to be bound and couldn't even wriggle. Shi Yan's face changed dramatically.



At this moment, Shi Yan found that he was standing next to a towering pillar under the palace. Layers of barriers tied him. His God Soul was restrained. Chaotic energies gathered. The magical barriers revived and started to affect him.

Jiang Ge suddenly smiled. "Shi Yan, you're still a tender sprout. I'm too familiar with this place. Should I be so kind to bring you here?"

Bound with so many layers, Shi Yan was enraged but he had no solution. The barriers were subtle and magical that acted like countless ropes tightening around his body. He couldn't wiggle out of them.

He kept thinking of ways to escape as Shi Yan contacted the Sky-breaking Shuttle. "How can I get rid of it?"

"Your power is insufficient."

"What?"

"The barriers in this place are all strong and marvelous. Even if I take all of your energy, I can't break them. Unless you know the method or reached the Peak of King God Realm, you won't be able to do it. I don't know the realm of the person who built the barriers, but the wonderful features of this place are beyond my imagination. My Maker was just a Sacred Grade blacksmith. His Realm wasn't enough to make me a higher grade treasure, so..."

Shi Yan grimaced.

This is the first time the Sky-breaking Shuttle failed him completely.

He thought there was no barrier that the Sky-breaking Shuttle couldn't break in this world. But today, he found that he was wrong. He had underestimated the might of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation's Imperial Master.

"You shouldn't be outraged. In fact, I don't have any bad intentions. If you can break the mysteries of the barriers while you

are in here, not only can you escape but you will be able to get in the palace. Then, you will know the secret that I couldn't figure out even after spending more than two hundred years here." Jiang Ge beamed a faint smile. The cube stone in his hand glistened. A tender beam of light like a feather fell on Shi Yan's waist and took his Purgatory Token. "Haha, I tell you this. I have no grudges against Ao Gu Duo. He did put me in this damn place, but it was because I wanted to get here. My purpose was to enter the Extreme Purgatory Field."

Shi Yan could only stare at the man taking his Purgatory Token away. He had no solutions and he just remained silent, his eyes cold and dark.

Jiang Ge's face darkened and became sinister. "That year, I was at only the Sky Realm. My whole family was massacred. My wife was raped in front of me. I must survive to take revenge! But my archenemy was too strong. I wasn't his match. Living was hard for me at that time, too. Although the Raging Flame Star Area's vast, I can't find enough shelter. But the Extreme Purgatory Field was just the place that I needed. My hands are soaked in blood. I've killed many to make Ao Gu Duo jail me in the Extreme Purgatory Field. Staying here, I can avoid my enemy's pursuit. Also, I can have a better place to cultivate and increase my realm. That is why I've stayed idle here for two hundred and fifty years. From the Sky Realm, I've reached the Third Sky of King God Realm. I've sacrificed a lot for my revenge!"

His face distorted savagely while talking. "Finally, today, I gain the force for my revenge. Since you have only the First Sky of King God Realm cultivation base and Ao Gera is at the Second Sky of King God Realm, I don't see how you will have a chance to kill him if he also has help from others. I don't want to make this bet, either. If I can have the Purgatory Token from you, why would I take a risk?"

Jiang Ge gradually pulled himself together. "You don't need to

hate me. I still think this is just an exchange between us. I told you the secrets that I kept for years. If you can break the barriers and get into the palace, perhaps you will have the luck that I can't imagine. If I didn't want to leave so badly, I wouldn't do this to you. I would stay here like the other four until I found the secrets of this place. I'm now giving this honor to you. You should thank me. You're still young. You still have time to play."

"I'm so sorry I can't stay here with you. Enjoy. I need to get out of here." Jiang Ge rubbed his chin. "After another year, the Extreme Purgatory Field's training will end. I will leave first. If we meet again, I will make up for your loss today. And yeah, I have to remind you that the other four aren't easy to talk to like I am. If you meet them, you have to be careful. They are the true villains of the Raging Flame Star Area. They are very patient and are all at the Third Sky of King God Realm. After so many years studying this place, the five of us have found that if one of the five palaces is broken, the others would change accordingly. Solve this mystery yourself."

After Jiang Ge finished, he laughed evilly before leaving.

He passed by the small cottage, roasted some fish, ate them then picked some stuff. He left with satisfaction.

-----

After one hour.

Jiang Ge appeared from the forbidden place.

Yalan and Tie Mu were waiting outside. Seeing him, they were startled. They immediately got on guard, preparing for Jiang Ge's sudden attack.

Jiang Ge looked at them who looked like they were encountering the archenemy. He laughed. "Don't be so tense. I won't risk my life fighting you. I got what I want." He shook Shi Yan's Purgatory Token.

Tie Mu was shaken, shouting, "Where's Shi Yan?"

"Dead, of course." Jiang Ge laughed louder. "He didn't treasure his life. He shouldn't have broken into the prohibited area. The barriers there had torn him into pieces. I didn't need to move my finger to receive this piece of Purgatory Token. So wonderful, right?"

Tie Mu and Yalan grimaced listening to him. They tensed up.

"I told you, I just need a Purgatory Token. If you don't want to get into more trouble, don't act rashly." Jiang Ge didn't bother with Tie Mu and Yalan. He left quietly and hurriedly as if he had something to finish.

Yalan and Tie Mu looked helplessly at the man leaving. They didn't dare act recklessly.

Jiang Ge had the Third Sky of King God Realm cultivation base and his Thousand Fantasy Domain had affected them directly. Yalan and Tie Mu understood that without Shi Yan, they wouldn't be able to fight the old man.

The two contemplated for a while, their eyes gazing at the forbidden area. After a while, they sighed.

"Too bad. Shi Yan was quite the character. I have never seen anyone that excellent at the First Sky of King God Realm. If he survived, he would have been the most dazzling star of the divine nation," Yalan said with emotions.

Tie Mu nodded heavily. "He was too reckless. He didn't listen to us. If he didn't go inside there, that freaky, old man wouldn't have done anything to him. If we went together, that man wouldn't have been able to attack us. Sigh... I didn't expect things to turn out like this."

"Forget it. He chose his path. We had no choice." Yalan shook her head with regret. "We should go. We still have a mission to finish. We should accomplish our task before saying more."

Tie Mu agreed. He glared at the prohibited land for the last time before leaving. They didn't know that Shi Yan was still alive inside.

After Jiang Ge left Yalan and Tie Mu, he wandered aimlessly, leaving no shadow. Ao Gu Duo and the others outside couldn't see him.

His cube stone had concealed him from the Purgatory Token's sensing and the people using the lake to watch what was happening inside the Extreme Purgatory Field.

Jiang Ge moved discreetly in the Extreme Purgatory Field. He visited four other places, the four forbidden lands.

He and the other four had made an appointment. He told the others that he couldn't stay here any longer and that he must leave. A boy had replaced him. He would finish what Jiang Ge couldn't.

Moving between the four forbidden lands took him half a year. Participants in the Extreme Purgatory Field were still killing and chasing prisoners and bloodthirsty villains.

No one had met Shi Yan.

Ao Gu Duo, Leona, Du Tian Ji, and Zi Yao in the Dark Firmament Star couldn't use the magical mirror created by the former Imperial Master to spot Shi Yan in the Extreme Purgatory Field.

That forbidden land was able to avoid all kinds of sensing abilities. Everyone thought Shi Yan was dead.

Time flies fast. Soon, the training in the Extreme Purgatory Field had come to an end. The term of three years was about to end.

Ao Gera didn't see Shi Yan. The battle that everyone had been waiting for didn't take place.

When the magical effects of the Extreme Purgatory Field vanished, Du Tian Le and the five great feudal vassals cooperated

in checking the battlefields. The lucky prisoners and villains who survived were jailed again.

Du Tian Le faced the sky and shouted to call for the participants. Gradually, they came one by one. But Shi Yan had never shown up. Leona waited in silence. Her face gradually darkened.

# Chapter 792: Calm Down And Break The Barriers

---

Ao Gera, Da Meng, Yalan, and Tie Mu gathered as Du Tian Le were calling for them.

Shi Yan hadn't come up yet.

Leona continued to grimace.

After a while, almost all the participants gathered but Shi Yan was still not present.

Ao Gu Duo suddenly smiled. "Leona, will you uphold our bet?"

Rochester, Carthew, and Da Lei also peeked at Leona with strange looks. Rochester and Da Lei seemed to take pleasure in her misfortune.

"Sigh. I thought that Shi Yan would win. I didn't expect that he would die in there. Big mistake. I wanted to wait until he got out of there and flatter the new star of the divine nation. This is so unfortunate." Rochester shook his head in disappointment and regret.

"If Shi Yan is dead, someone else should have the Purgatory Token." Leona snorted, glaring at Ao Gu Duo who was content with his triumph. "If he dies, I'll give you a life star, of course."

"Good!" Ao Gu Duo laughed.

While they were talking, Du Tian Ji in the faraway Dark Firmament pondered for a while and then said, "Let's go."

Zi Yao's face was gloomy. Grief sparkled in her beautiful eyes. She got up quietly.

Du Tian Ji touched the bright mirror in front of them. Divine light radiated gloriously. A slit appeared at the center of the mirror. The king and Zi Yao disappeared into the slit.

In the place where they could see the lake of the Extreme Purgatory Field, Du Tian Ji, and Zi Yao reappeared. After he identified which way to go, Du Tian Ji brought Zi Yao through several thousand miles and showed up at the place where the five feudal vassals gathering with just a single thought.

"Your Majesty!"

Including Du Tian Le, the five feudal vassals kneeled down on one knee, greeting him with respect.

The contestants, including Ao Gera, kneeled down on both knees, bending their heads over to show their humble admiration and respect to the king.

"Get up," Du Tian Ji nodded, his bearings calm and natural. "Who is the winner?"

"Lika," Du Tian Le pointed at the first female warrior under Leona's commands. "She killed the most."

Du Tian Ji smiled. "Our divine nation's luck."

A Fantasy Sky Ring (storage ring) flew out from his finger toward Lika. "Five Creator's Divine Pellets for you to use when you break through to the Original God Realm. It has the best efficacy that will give you endless torrential soul energy. A suit of level 4 Divine Grade armor. It can fuse perfectly with your God Body to increase your fighting abilities."

Lika was thrilled and she received the Fantasy Sky Ring. She kept saying thanks. "Thank you for your grace, Your Majesty. I will dedicate my life to the divine nation until I die."

"You don't need to give thanks. You've earned them." Du Tian Ji smiled. His line of sight shifted to Du Tian Le. "We'll seal the Extreme Purgatory Field shortly. The training in the Extreme Purgatory Field ends now."

"We are still missing one person," answered Du Tian Le.



"He's here," Du Tian Ji turned around, looking behind them. "Get out. You got the Purgatory Token so you are exempt from all charges. From now on, you can go anywhere you want in this vast space. You're free."

Leona and Ao Gu Duo all turned around to look.

Jiang Ge showed himself, his face calm. He kneeled down. "Thank you for your grace, Your Majesty."

"You killed Shi Yan?" Zi Yao shouted in a hoarse voice, her face ferocious. Cold light sparkled in her beautiful eyes, which could scare people.

Leona also snorted. Her dark green eyes were like those of a serpent. She also made people tremble.

Jiang Ge discolored. "Not me. I didn't kill him. He entered a forbidden area and the energy there tore him into pieces. I just picked up his Purgatory Token."

"Forbidden land?" Du Tian Ji frowned but he didn't chase further. He waved his hand, not waiting for Leona or Zi Yao to ask the man more questions. "Hand back the Purgatory Token and leave now. From now, you are free from your prior crimes."

Jiang Ge didn't say anything else. He left the Purgatory Token on the ground, thanked Du Tian Ji, before soaring up into the sky. As though he was afraid of the others' words, he disappeared instantly.

Leona and Zi Yao gazed at him with hatred and resentment.

Ao Gera smiled brightly, walking towards Zi Yao. He bent his body. "Your Highness, are you alright?"

Zi Yao looked at the smiling face of Ao Gera whose look never changed. She didn't know why she felt so irritated. Anyway, Ao Gera was her subordinate and he had been following her for years. He had given up everything for her. She had no reason to trouble him. She nodded and said, "I'm okay. Shi Yan saved me. I just don't

feel well when he faced such an unexpected ending."

"Shi Yan had joined hands with Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo to kill you, Your Highness. He didn't deserve your worries." Ao Gera said seriously.

Zi Yao's face got colder. "I don't care what the others said. He saved me in the Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field! There might have been something between him and Ka Tuo. But he was never his partner!" she said resolutely.

"If you say this is true, then it is true. I believe you, Your Highness." The smile on Ao Gera was forced. He was astounded for a while. In his eyes, Shi Yan was dead. There was no need to push it further.

"Leona, when will you pay for our bet?" Ao Gu Duo smiled. He felt so good.

"After we leave the Purgatory Star, you send your men to my territory, I will hand you a life star." Leona's face grimaced. She snorted with icy, cold eyes.

"Everything is over. Do what you need to do. You don't need to stay in Purgatory Star anymore." Du Tian Ji advised faintly before nodding to Leona. "Come to Dark Firmament Star with me. I have something to discuss with you."

"Yes," nodded Leona.

"You and Ao Gera return to Glorious Amethyst Star and prepare. You'll depart to the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce soon to meet Old Fan and carry the task I've given you." Du Tian Ji looked at Zi Yao.

Zi Yao nodded quietly. She felt a little bit lost. "Father, I want to stay in Purgatory Star for a few days before I go."

"Okay, as long as you understand it. Although Shi Yan was your excellent subordinate, he is dead. Don't dwell on it for too long. The divine nation has many important matters now. Don't get

distracted for too long." Du Tian Ji arranged things and then nodded to Leona. They left through the lake to return to Dark Firmament Star.

Shortly after, the four feudal vassals Ao Gu Duo, Rochester, Carthew, and Da Lei adjusted their delegations and departed. They seemed to have a more important business so they didn't linger here.

Du Tian Le sealed all the gates of the Extreme Purgatory Field. He also strengthened the prisons of the Extreme Purgatory Field to ensure nothing unexpected would happen. Then, he left.

Zi Yao stayed in the Purgatory Star for seven days. She checked all the exits of the Extreme Purgatory Field as if she was waiting for someone or something.

She didn't let Ao Gera come with her. She wandered around the Extreme Purgatory Field alone. During the seven days, she didn't find anything. Her face became darker and her mood got gloomier day after day.

No miracle happened.

After seven days, Zi Yao left with grief and bitterness. She departed from the Purgatory Star begrudgingly.

She didn't know that one of the seal exits she had passed by was very close to where Shi Yan was blocked. It was so close to Shi Yan that she just needed to dash for a bit to see him.

However, the forbidden land had blocked all of sensing for living beings inside. She couldn't sense Shi Yan's living energy. Eventually, she had to leave the Purgatory Star with deep regret.

Time flew quickly. The Purgatory Star resumed its calmness. Experts all left. The Extreme Purgatory Field was sealed. This land returned to be a quiet place.

Ninety-four out of ninety-nine prohibited areas had disappeared. The five forbidden lands with magical effects still existed. Shi Yan

stayed in the deepest place of his valley, inching through layers of barriers with great efforts.

That grand palace hid in the deepest place of the forbidden land under the shade of a tall mountain. Thick clouds concealed it. No one could see anything through that layer of clouds.

He came closer to a towering, massive pillar.

Two years had passed.

During two years, he was always trying to decipher the subtle mysteries of the barriers. There were forty-nine layers of barrier covering the palace. At this point in time, he had broken twenty layers.

Each layer was a magnificent formation, which hid the great mysteries of earth and heaven.

The reason why Jiang Ge couldn't break those barriers through his two hundred and fifty years staying here was that he wasn't a blacksmith, which had limited his abilities. With his King God Realm cultivation base, he had to use the Soul Consciousness to discover that subtle formation. Of course, his progress was too slow.

Shi Yan was different.

He had a natural advantage. He had the experience of studying magical formations in the Blacksmith's Secrets of Success. He had gained an unimaginable amount of experience and wealth.

A layer of barrier consisted of many smaller formations. Although it was magically complex, a Divine Grade blacksmith with wholehearted dedication could still break it. Even it wasn't fast, he could still make progress.

If Jiang Ge had known that Shi Yan at the King God Realm had such tremendous forces and that he was also a Divine Grade blacksmith, he wouldn't have used those barriers to bind him.

After deciphering each layer, his understanding of blacksmithing would reach a new height. The formations that built the barriers all hid the magical truth of Nature. During this time, his realm was refined and strengthened, and his soul was sublimated.

His sensing of natural powers became much more sensitive in this place. While he focused on breaking the barriers, the benefits it brought to his realm was hard to estimate.

Whenever a layer was broken, his realm would be refined one level. This also benefited his soul altar. While Shi Yan didn't notice it, his three powers Upanishad had a subtle change when he attempted to comprehend the mysteries of earth and energy inside those barriers.

He had forgotten Jiang Ge's trap. Now he had just sunk into his work of deciphering barriers which were one of the most magical journeys of his martial path.

His mind changed as he had developed advantages. His work speed accelerated.

Today, he had broken through the forty-second layer out of forty-nine layers. He suddenly felt a marvelous commotion from inside the palace.

At the same time, the other four Third Sky of King God Realm warriors in the other four forbidden areas of the Extreme Purgatory Field, who were doing the same thing with him, all witnessed a strange occurrence. They were all shaken.

# Chapter 793: Meet Up In Precincts

---

After Jiang Ge left the Purgatory Star, he dashed furiously in the general direction of the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce. He didn't have a war chariot or a battleship so he flew by himself at the fastest possible speed that a Third Sky of King God Realm warrior could travel at.

After three months, he flew past the star area near the Dark Firmament Star.

Every time he exhausted his energy, Jiang Ge would find a place to rest and use the Divine Crystals to recovery. Then, he would continue moving.

Today, when he consumed a lot of his energy, he found an abandoned mineral star.

That mineral star was almost empty. It had caves of various sizes. From a distance, it looked like a giant hornet hive. Its energy was exhausted a long time ago. No pieces of ore remained.

Jiang Ge beamed a faint smile. His body descended like a shadow on the mineral star.

Ten medium-quality divine crystals flew out from his Fantasy Sky Ring. As he sat down to absorb the crystals, he discolored in fright.

The darkness covered him like a dome of the sky.

There wasn't a beam of light in that darkness. He couldn't even see his own fingers. It was like a prison that made his soul decay.

Jiang Ge was shaken. He was frightened, looking here and there but he couldn't see anything. His heart sank to the bottom of an abyss.

He was astounded and it took him a while for him to react. He kneeled down anxiously and said with respect, "Greetings,

Madame Leona."

The Raging Flame Star Arena had so many powers Upanishad and some of them were so famous that everyone knew.

The Absolute Dark Upanishad was the flagship of the leader of the five feudal vassals – Leona. No one else possessed this power.

As the endless darkness engulfed Jiang Ge, he was initially bewildered but then he immediately knew whom he was encountering.

The bloody butcher of the divine nation, Commander of the Bloody Legion, head of the five brutal devils: Madame Leona.

Jiang Ge had no intention of resisting. He kneeled down on one knee and slightly stooped his head. "I wonder why Madame Leona has humbled her good self to visit this place, what are my orders?"

A faint light was revealed silently. A woman looked as sinister and cold as ghosts that sat on the stone ground by a cave that ran deep into the ground. She squinted and said calmly, "You have two options."

Jiang Ge stooped lower with a serious face. "I am listening."

"One, I will kill you, destroy your soul altar and detain your God Soul. Then, I will use my secret techniques to take your memories." Leona's voice was indifferent as if she was talking about something that had no relation to her.

"I wish to know the other option," Jiang Ge was in fear, his voice even trembling. "Madame Leona, I want to live. Please give me a chance."

"Tell me all things you saw in the forbidden place related to Shi Yan in details. Of course, you can choose to lie if you think you can deceive me." Leona was nonchalant as though she didn't care about his killing him. She didn't show her intention of killing him. Her calmness scared her victims out of their wits.

Jiang Ge lifted his head up and his body shivered. He didn't hesitate and answered immediately. "He is not dead. He's constrained in the forbidden place by the barriers. I took the Purgatory Token from him but I didn't harm him. There's a palace inside that forbidden place which has forty-nine layers of barriers. It should be built by the former Imperial Masters of the divine nation to conceal an unknowable secret, perhaps..."

He knew he had only one chance in front of Leona. If he lied, this infamous woman would never give him a bit of her mercy.

Thus, Jiang Ge didn't have the nerves to lie. He didn't even dare pause in his narration as he was afraid that she would think that he was taking time to fabricate his story.

Leona listened to him silently without interrupting him. Until Jiang Ge finished, she remained in thought.

Jiang Ge slightly lifted his head up, looking at her anxiously. He didn't dare make a small move, just waiting for Leona's final decision.

He understood how brutal and cruel this woman was. All stories about this woman were related to bloody massacres. He knew her realm, which was enough to erase him easily. No one would ever know he was buried or torn into pieces on this damn planet.

Thus, he didn't dare move or talk rashly. He just waited like that.

"You can go." After a while, Leona waved to dismiss him as though she was waving a fly away. "Remember, I've never seen you and you've never seen me here."

"I will remember your kindness for the rest of my life." Jiang Ge threw his hand into the air and swore. He watched her. Seeing her have no other commotions, he fearfully backed off little by little. As soon as he got out of Leona's Dark Domain, he ran like crazy and didn't dare stop even just for a second.

Leona stood up in the dark. Her dark green eyes shot toward the



direction of the Purgatory Star for a long time. Then, she snorted, "That little brat made me lose a life star. I'll remember this debt."

The absolute darkness drifted like a dark cloud into the immense starry area. It flashed, swayed, then went invisible.

The emptied mineral star resumed its quietness.

-----

The prohibited area, sealed Extreme Purgatory Field, Purgatory Star.

Shi Yan was staying in the middle of rippling water-like barriers, gawking at the grand palace that was almost within his reach. A magical energy fluctuation sent out from a deep place inside that palace.

Just like the change of seasons, the palace seemed to continue operating now. Strange and grumbling explosions echoed from the ground under the forbidden land where he was suspended in the air.

The same changes also happened in the other forbidden areas. Four Third Sky of King God Realm warriors were also confined in the barriers like Shi Yan. They lifted their heads looking at the palace and feeling the energy waves sending out from inside.

The five forbidden areas in the Extreme Purgatory Field slowly moved and adjoined with each other in a way no one could ever imagine or have a chance to witness.

Although they looked slow, they were actually moving very fast. Within fifteen minutes, the five forbidden areas situated in five different regions of the Extreme Purgatory Field had magically fused into one intact piece.

Even the five wonderful palaces appeared as one place under some mysterious force.

Immediately, Shi Yan saw not only one but five palaces.

The five palaces looked like five radiantly dazzling massive pieces of a jewel. With the support of the towering stone pillar, they moved up to the sky over their heads.

The five grand palaces arrayed a pentagon in the air. Like Shi Yan, the other four were staying near their palaces and facing the sky with a look of astonishment.

The other four didn't have Shi Yan's progress. After so many years, they had only broken through twenty-three layers. Shi Yan was more productive.

"Ah!"

The surprised voices of the four arose from four different corners. They all gazed at Shi Yan.

Shi Yan stayed in his barriers and tilted his head, looking at the other four. A gleam of surprise sparkled in his eyes.

The four of them were at the Third Sky of King God Realm: three males, and one female. The three male warriors were all the old man with disheveled hair and dirty clothes. They looked like they hadn't cleaned their bodies for years. All of them looked helter-skelter, their eyes hiding brutal and malevolent intentions.

The only woman looked in her thirties. She was beautiful, wearing a snakeskin-like leather robe at knee-length, revealing her jade-like calves.

That woman wasn't human. She belonged to the Ghost Mark Clan. Delicate cyan tattoos were shown on her exposed white skin arms and legs which gave her a perfectly beautiful look, charming but also evil.

In her thirties, she was the flower at its most beautiful blooming time. Subtly, fine azure patterns were drawn on her delicate neck. She had two exquisite jade earrings dangling on her earlobes, which created the ding dang sounds when she moved. Her beautiful eyes were like a deep sea that people could never

measure.

She eyed Shi Yan from a far distance with a beam in her eyes that signaled how she felt uneasy. Her eyebrows arched as she gave an inaudible snort.

When the other four were watching him, Shi Yan also observed them. Not long afterward, he looked sterner.

Just like Jiang Ge, they were all at the Third Sky of King God Realm. They were the death-sentenced inmates of the Extreme Purgatory Field. Their hands were soaked in blood. They were not good people.

"Kid, are you the person Jiang Ge mentioned? You've replaced him?" An old man as thin as a bamboo stick that looked like a skeleton with human skin cover asked. His eyes sparkled with gloomy light. "Seems like you are much faster than us. What did you do to combine all the forbidden places into one piece?"

The other three observed him, their eyes hiding their ferocious thoughts.

"Yeah, Jiang Ge trapped me, making me sink in here," Shi Yan frowned before continuing, "He left, I guess. Since then I've been breaking these barriers. Until now, I've deactivated forty-two barriers. At the moment the last barrier was broken, the palace I saw suddenly changed, which brought us all here. Yeah, I think it's the special effect of the forbidden lands. This wasn't my intention."

"Feng Rao, what do you think?" The man who talked to him first pondered before turning to look at the woman who had strange and exquisite drawings on her body.

The other two old men also looked at the Ghost Mark Clan woman named Feng Rao. It seemed like she was their leader.

"Of course, this is good." Feng Rao cracked a strange smile. Light sparkled from her eyes. "We four have spent a lot of time just to

break around twenty layers. Jiang Ge was the worst. He had been holding us back. He left and arranged a good boy who could surpass us in just a short time. Aren't we lucky?"

Then, the other three acted oddly. Those old men didn't look like good people. They burst out laughing bizarrely as if they all agreed with her.

"We've been patient for a long time just to find what was inside the palaces. This kid accelerated our progress. It is all good for us." Feng Rao smiled. "Didn't you see that the barriers... are loosening a bit?"

"Of course, we did," the three old men cracked strange smiles.

Shi Yan's face darkened as he had a bad premonition. These four people were too relaxed and nonchalant. If their desire of knowing the secrets of this place was too much, they must have planned something.

# Chapter 794: A Dark Enchainment

---

These four seemed to be different from Jiang Ge. Although Jiang Ge was curious to know the secrets of the palace, he was too far from the level of the other four. He wouldn't let those secrets keep him here like the others who would never leave until they reached the palaces.

"Good, very good. With this kid, our progress will be much faster," the skinny man bared his teeth, smiling disgustingly.

"Then it's alright. Our purpose is to understand the secrets of those palaces. I heard they were built by the five former Imperial Masters of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. They hide an earth-shaking secret. I haven't gotten out of this place because of it." Feng Rao glared at the other three. "You guys are curious, too, perhaps?"

The three old men nodded simultaneously.

"Kid, what's your name?" asked Feng Rao.

"Shi Yan."

"Okay, Shi Yan, since Jiang Ge transferred his responsibility to you, you shall replace him then. Not bad. Just do what you were doing. Break the rest of the barriers." Feng Rao assigned him this task naturally as if it was obvious.

Shi Yan frowned, contemplated for a while and then laughed. He stopped moving inside the barrier.

The three old men darkened their faces.

"Why did you laugh?" Feng Rao's arched eyebrows rose. Her slender face outlined her bright eyes, which were sparkling with deep and strange light. "Aren't you interested in it?"

"Of course, I am," Shi Yan shook his head many times faintly. "But I don't want to be dim-sighted. I want to know why you guys

want to get in there. You guys aren't like Jiang Ge. Jiang Ge didn't know what was in the palaces. I think you guys know something. Yeah, maybe... you weren't forced to be jailed in the Extreme Purgatory Field... Right?"

The other four frowned.

"I think you came to the Extreme Purgatory Field on your own, with the goal to seek these forbidden areas. Am I right?" Shi Yan smiled coldly.

The other four quieted down.

Feng Rao pondered for a while then probed. "Do you know something, too?"

Shi Yan could feel something here but he was still calm. "Yeah, I'm like you guys. I came here for this special place. I let Jiang Ge trap me here. It was exactly what I wanted. What you know, I also know. Haha. I just want to confirm."

"Do you have the jade token?" It wasn't easy to deceive Feng Rao. She snorted, "Each of the five of us has a jade token? Jiang Ge kept one. If you don't have the jade token, how did you know it?"

"I don't have the jade token," Shi Yan shook his head. "But the one Jiang Ge had comes from my family. My family had kept it for a long time. After my family has declined, the jade token had been passed through many people before Jiang Ge got it. Jiang Ge has the jade token but he didn't know the real secret of it. I'm here with the same goal as you guys."

Shi Yan had racked his brain to fabricate those lies. He thought it could work.

Indeed, Feng Rao's group changed their facial expressions listening to him. They seemed to buy it.

"No wonder why Jiang Ge wasn't so patient. He doesn't know much." The bony old man had his eyes flared as he nodded discreetly. "If we have the same goal, we don't have much time to

talk. The secret of those palaces can change the structure of the Raging Flame Star Area. People, do your best."

Feng Rao also nodded. "Kid, our priority is to remove the barriers. Your fast speed helps loosen the barrier in our place too. If we continue this way, we can get in there soon. Wait until we break the barriers outside the palace. Then, we will talk."

The other three nodded.

Shi Yan pondered for a while. He didn't continue to quarrel with them. He got the conclusion he wanted.

Feng Rao's team came to the Extreme Purgatory Field because of the forbidden lands. There was no doubt about it.

Their imprisonment in the Purgatory Star was just their trick. Those four people were at the Third Sky of King God Realm. They were all cruel and malignant. With their abilities, it wasn't too difficult to kill a participant to take the ticket outside. They lingered here for something.

A secret that could restructure the Raging Flame Star Area. Shi Yan was interested in it all of a sudden.

He focused on breaking the left seven layers.

After breaking one layer, he would take a rest and talk with the other four. Through some conversations, he knew that Feng Rao came from the Land of God Punishment, the most chaotic place of the entire Raging Flame Star Area. Her status wasn't ordinary.

The skeleton-like old man was called Ganji was a warrior of the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce. The other two were named Pang Jia and Han Di. They were from the Underworld League. None of them came from the Dark Firmament Divine Nation which surprised him.

With the same goal, the atmosphere between them seemed to be harmonious without any dispute while the barriers were not yet lifted..

As Shi Yan had progressed fast, the breaking speed of the other four became faster accordingly. Soon, there was only one barrier in front of Shi Yan.

At this moment, Feng Rao said, "We can take a rest."

Shi Yan stayed in the water-like barrier and stopped his work. He floated in so many ripples, his face calm. Although he was surprised, he didn't outwardly express it.

"Wait until they reach the last layer, we will join hands and tear the barrier at the same time to enter the palace." Feng Rao looked at him. "Some of the layers in our places still remain. If you break it now, something will change accordingly in our places. At that time, perhaps we can't open the five palaces at the same time, and we won't receive anything from it."

Ganji, Pang Jia, and Hand Di nodded.

Shi Yan didn't know what Feng Rao said was true or not. However, he wouldn't take risks as he didn't know what hid in those palaces. If he broke into there alone, he could possibly encounter something dangerous.

Thus, Shi Yan stopped his work, bobbing in the water-like layer. He closed his eyes to comprehend what he had collected during this time of breaking barriers. Shi Yan was studying the subtle mysteries of magical formations that made these barriers.

Every magical formation contained different truths of Nature. The way to decipher the formation was to follow the trace of its energy using his knowledge of formation and barriers and the Soul Consciousness to solve it.

During this process, Shi Yan gained a deeper perception of other powers in the world. Although he didn't aim to dig his three powers Upanishad further, he still got something naturally.

Shi Yan stayed quiet and took out the divine crystals to restore his energy. He calmed down his mind to learn the specialties of his



powers and didn't bother with the other three, who were still struggling breaking their barriers.

Time flew fast. A long time had passed.

Today, Feng Rao was the first one who had reached the final layer. She exhaled and glared at Shi Yan, who was meditating. She didn't say anything but took out the divine crystals to restore her power.

A long time afterward.

The other three also reached the final layer. Their faces brightened up as they were very excited.

Just like Shi Yan and Feng Rao, the other three didn't hasten to break the final layer. They quietly used the divine crystals to recover their powers to the peak.

Shi Yan had restored his powers. He observed them discreetly. His face gradually darkened.

He saw their cautiousness. It was obvious that they were so excited, but they all controlled and recovered their powers to the peak. Their intentions were clear to Shi Yan.

They all knew they had to use all of the forces in the next moment. Perhaps, after they had broken the final layer, the harmonious relationship between them would be demolished forever without any chance to cooperate again.

He understood that once all the barriers were broken, entering the palaces would trigger the big fight against these people. Since he had only the First Sky of King God Realm cultivation base, among the five of them, he was the weakest.

Shi Yan knitted his brows tightly.

"Although Ganji, Pang Jia, and Han Di are all at the Third Sky of King God Realm, Han Di's the weakest. His time in the King God Realm wasn't for too long..."

Suddenly, a wisp of Soul Consciousness that was hard to detect sneaked through the broken layers to Shi Yan from Feng Rao's. The eccentric Ghost Mark Clan woman stooped and opened her eyes to look at him.

At this moment, Ganji, Pang Jia, and Han Di were still restoring their power. They seemed not to recognize Feng Rao's move.

"You shouldn't reply with Soul Consciousness. Your realm's low. If you release your soul energy, they can sense you immediately." Feng Rao's thought continued to reach him. "You just need to listen to me."

"At the moment the barriers shatter altogether when we enter the palace, we will have an unavoidable battle. Since your realm's the lowest, I don't know how you got in there, but when we engage in a battle, you will inevitably die first."

"I have a suggestion. Once we get in there, the other three will launch attacks immediately. We will join hands. You'll help me to hold Han Di back for a while. You don't need to join the battle. Just stay outside. You shouldn't hurry because of the things in the palace. Even though Han Di's the weakest among us, he is not someone you can deal with easily. When I say hold him back, deal with him with a tool which you can pour your energy into that I will give you. You don't need to bother with Ganji and Pang Jia. If I win something, I won't forget your part. If you agree, you should give me a slight nod."

Shi Yan squinted, observing her for a long time. Then he slightly nodded.

Feng Rao parted her lips, forming a smile. Her eyes glistened. Next, she told him how to use the tool.

Among these four people, Feng Rao seemed to have the most exquisite cultivation base. Her understanding of powers Upanishad was the most profound. That's why she didn't worry that the other three could hear her soul thoughts sending to Shi Yan.

"Phew."

Genji exhaled foul air. The divine crystal in his hand turned into dust and scattered. The old man now looked refreshed and sound. He glared at Feng Rao next to him. Suddenly, he stooped and smiled, his smile worth studying.

He looked at Feng Rao then sneaked at Shi Yan. A gleam of disdain flashed in his eyes. Apparently, he didn't consider Shi Yan his equal opponent.

Shortly, Pang Jia and Han Di woke up. When they looked at Feng Rao, they seemed to be afraid of her. However, when they shifted their looks to Shi Yan, their fear disappeared.

Obviously, just like Ganji, they deemed Shi Yan nothing of a threat.

"Let's go!" Feng Rao shouted.

Shi Yan stooped, placing his hands on the ultimate layer of the barrier. The other four also worked on their last barrier breaking.

# Chapter 795: Small Character, Big Effect!

---

Shi Yan extended his hands, touching the barrier which had a wooden texture. Those magical wood textures connected each other. They were green-brown that looked more like a thick forest. An aura of floras diffused from this barrier.

Closing his eyes, Shi Yan felt like he was walking deep into a luxurious forest. He could even smell the fresh smell of green trees and grass. He could feel the breath of Nature.

Countless wooden pieces fused with each other, creating a sea of lush plants. The Essence Qi of Wood permeated everywhere thickly and vigorously.

At the same time, the other four placed their hands on the barrier.

From Feng Rao's direction, gold light emitted while red flame, white steam, and yellow Earth Qi gushed out from Ganji, Pang Jia, and Han Di's areas respectively.

Five Elements forces!

At first glance, Shi Yan understood that this ultimate layer hid the mysteries of Five Elements. They seemed to connect with each other, too.

The barriers of Five Elements – Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth – could always fuse with each other magically. These last barriers interlinked between the palaces. They kept the subtle powers of balanced Five Elements. Once they broke this balance, something beyond their imagination would happen.

Shi Yan observed the wood texture for a while, but he didn't hasten. He closed his eyes and quieted his mind to feel the magical vitality of the wood texture.

Shortly, a thought arose in his head. His mind flickered.

The Dead Upanishad was activated. The Soul Burial Ground diffused, expanding next to him. It engulfed the luxurious forest created by those wood pieces.

Wood energy emitted from those magical wood textures. Under the effects of the Soul Burial Ground, this Wood energy was absorbed gradually. The vigorous vitality was collected and gathered by Shi Yan.

His God Body suddenly received the lively power which boosted his power. The subtle power of Five Elements turned into beams of pure energy entering his flesh and bones.

This last barrier of Wood power was dissolved easily under his special power Upanishad. At this speed, this last barrier would soon vanish.

However, Feng Rao's group of four found themselves struggling. While they were breaking the barriers, their faces were grim. Sweat beaded their foreheads. They were focusing wholeheartedly not daring to be distracted.

The power in their God Bodies was draining fast. Shi Yan could solve his barrier easily, but it was troublesome for them.

They were urging their energy madly. Light sparkled from time to time from their bodies as they poured energy into the barriers. They closed their eyes to sense the leaks of the barriers which they would fill with their energy.

Those people didn't cultivate any power of the Five Elements. Shi Yan couldn't guess it before they had released their God Domain. However, he understood that their powers were all mighty and ruthless. As long as they were persistent, when they wore out the energy of the barrier, they would finish it.

While he was observing Feng Rao's group, his marvelous Soul Burial Ground had absorbed almost all the Wood energy of the last barrier.

Seeing the last layer was about to be broken, Shi Yan suddenly stopped his activity. His God Domain disappeared. He relaxed and watched the other four. Shi Yan didn't hasten to tear the last layer of barriers.

He didn't know what was in the five places or the dangers hiding in there.

Thus, he didn't want to be the first one jump in there. As Feng Rao had reminded him, he stayed outside to see what would happen before he could decide his next moves.

Shortly, Feng Rao's group had worn out the energy of the final barriers and broken them.

Crack Crack!

Clear echoes arose from the other four's areas. Light dots of four colors scattered.

Four shadows dashed like meteors under beams of red light. They stormed towards the five palaces.

Ganji was the fastest. He just swayed and appeared in a palace. Pang Jia and Han Di followed him closely. Feng Rao, the one people feared a lot came last. While the other three dashed into the palace, Feng Rao paused, glaring at Shi Yan. Abruptly, an azure ball covered in lightning was shot toward Shi Yan.

Shi Yan was bewildered. He immediately tore off the last barrier. He urged Essence Qi on his palm and condensed them into fine beams like snakes. He caught the azure ball.

This ball was small enough for him to hold it with one hand. However, it was much heavier than it looked. The ball was covered with some strange spikes. At first glance, it looked like a hedgehog curling its body with immense lightning on its spikes.

After he had caught the ball, lightning power like ropes condensed and wound around his arm.

Azure lightning strikes and his Essence Qi fused. As Shi Yan's Soul Consciousness flickered like Feng Rao had told him, he used a strange technique to connect with an area inside that ball.

Shortly, he had formed a connection with that small ball. Now he could control the ball. Just like driving the amethyst war chariot, he could manipulate the ball easily.

Lightning strikes mixed with his Essence Qi which helped him control the lightning power.

Feng Rao threw him this toy to deal with Han Di. According to Feng Rao, Shi Yan could use the lightning power in this Thunderbolt Ball to subdue Han Di. It could even disrupt Han Di's God Domain.

Holding the Thunderbolt Ball in his hand, Shi Yan didn't hasten to leave or bother fighting Ganji, Pang Jia, and Han Di, which was taking place in the palace, just looking at Feng Rao from a distance.

Feng Rao nodded to him. She said nothing afterward. Her figure faded immediately. In the next moment, she appeared near Ganji, Pang Jia, and Han Di. As soon as she appeared, she instantly attacked Ganji.

The God Domain of these four emerged in one palace. At this moment, Shi Yan finally knew which powers Upanishad each of them cultivated.

Ganji's power was Gravity. In his affected area, blocks of stone that built up the palace were shaken as if they were about to collapse.

In his Divine Gravitational Field, the gravity was increased several hundred times. Besides him, no one could be free of this special effect.

Pang Jia's power Upanishad could make his body stretch or contract at will. When he performed his God Domain, his fingers could extend or shorten easily like a monster. His bones would be

like the spiral spring that could be lengthened ten times.

This was one of the rarest power Upanishad that Shi Yan had ever seen.

Han Di's power Upanishad was Soul Dragging. Inside his God Domain, shadows of ghosts and demons moved back and forth. He could control them all. Anyone entered Han Di's God Domain would have his soul bound and be unable to control his body.

Now Shi Yan knew why Feng Rao had given him the Thunderbolt Ball. Han Di's power could control ghosts and souls, which got scared witless from thunder and lightning. Thus, thunderbolts were the nemesis of his domain.

The God Domains of Ganji, Pang Jia, and Han Di were somehow odd. However, the oddest was Feng Rao's domain.

Feng Rao's power Upanishad was sound!

When her God Domain was created, countless sadly grating and shrill voices reverberated. She shouted and her Essence Qi was poured into her God Domain, creating more sharp noises that sounded like brutal blades.

When Pang Jia or Han Di shot their energies into her strange domain, under her techniques and spells, their powers would be locked or burst off. They couldn't damage her.

Shi Yan didn't know the real origin of those four, but he was sure they have peculiar God Domains. They were attacking each other in the palace as if they had seen a marvelous treasure in there. No one noticed Shi Yan.

Perhaps in their minds, Shi Yan was just a small character with only the First Sky of King God Realm cultivation base. He wouldn't be able to affect and change the situation of their battle. They decided to ignore him.

Feng Rao had used a strange sound technique to subdue the other three.



She shrilled. The ear-piercing voice and her energy became invisible spears crossing the space, aiming at Ganji, Pang Jia, and Han Di.

Only Han Di's peculiar power Upanishad could trouble her. Since Han Di could use the magical power of Soul Upanishad, he could make countless ghosts and evils come forth to create shields from the sharp sound spears. He didn't struggle much.

Sound has no weight. That's why Ganji's gravity power couldn't affect it. Those sound spears then wrecked havoc in his God Domain. Ganji felt that his hands were tied he couldn't do anything.

Pang Jia didn't have any solution. Even if he could make his hands longer, when the sound attacked him, he had to shrink his limbs instantly, resizing his God Body ten times smaller.

"Shi Yan!"

All of a sudden, Feng Rao shouted while fighting one-on-three.

Shi Yan got out of the barrier and walked to the palace. Hearing her call, he hesitated for a while before flinging the Thunderbolt Ball.

Hundreds of azure lightning strikes moved like the electric eels toward Han Di's God Domain.

His GOD Domain felt each of blue lightning strike, and it burned many ghosts in there. Immense azure mist fumed.

Han Di's God Domain was shattered under the coverage of the blue lightning. It couldn't perform at its best.

"Kid, you wish for death!" Han Di was enraged. As he hadn't prepared to counterattack, his God Domain was disrupted. Feng Rao's maledictions had shot him badly. His God Body now had many bleeding holes. He was outraged, looking at Shi Yan with a flame of anger in his eyes.

His God Domain was damaged, making Feng Rao's power fiercer. Ganji and Pang Jia were completely subdued. They had no solution to wiggle.

Feng Rao was excited. While dealing with the other two, she distracted them for a while and went quickly towards an area inside the palace. A rainbow-like bunch of light like a ribbon shot out from her soft palm that flew directly to that area.

A fragment that looked like a turtle shell was shielded by a magical formation placed in that area. Feng Rao's rainbow was shot there, smashing the formation. The fragment that looked like a turtle shell was about to fall into her hand.

Shortly, a tremor was sent from the five palaces. From the other formations in the other four palaces, pieces of turtle shell flew out and gathered as if they were about to join and create something complete and extraordinary.

# Chapter 796: Hiding Incompetence By Keeping Quiet

---

The five pieces of turtle shell used to be split up, but now they were reunited, becoming one intact piece under some force.

By the time the five pieces of turtle shell combined, a magical energy fluctuation bloomed fiercely from that shell.

Feng Rao discolored as if she could feel something terrible. She didn't say anything but flew away in just a blink.

Her figure swayed and she had gone very far away from that turtle shell.

Right at that moment, tens of thousands of seven-colored lights shot out from the shell, each of which was sharp enough to pierce through anything.

The rays of light were denser near the turtle shell. They shot out everywhere and became more scattering.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Tens of thousands of rays shot out altogether.

Han Di wasn't so cautious. More than ten beams of light pierced him. His God Body revealed some spatial holes. Shortly after, Han Di's God Body was finished. Even his soul altar was pierced and exploded shortly.

Ganji and Pang Jia could notice the danger. They flew away after Feng Rao.

However, they couldn't dodge all the rays. Some lights had managed to prick their arms and waist that looked like the wounds caused by invisible swords.

They were lucky that those lights didn't hit their weak points. Unlike poor Han Di, they were still alive. They hastened to use

pellets to stop the wounds from bleeding and grow flesh to seal the holes. Their intestines stayed in their tummy.

The unharmed were Feng Rao, who fled first, and Shi Yan, who was standing the furthest from the source of attacks.

Shi Yan was frightened since there was a scattering beam shot right next to him. Too close! If he hadn't listened to Feng Rao and went inside, he would have possibly gotten hit. The closer it was to the turtle shell, the thicker the beams of light were. They condensed and then expanded. The gaps between the beams enlarged when they shot out.

Shi Yan and Feng Rao had swayed between those gaps to dodge the fatal attacks.

Tens of thousands of light beams bombarded thickly from the turtle shell before ceasing. In just a blink, condensed light covered the turtle shell while it was spinning in the area of the clear energy formation.

Ganji and Pang Jia simply cured their wounds and gazed at Feng Rao with rage and hatred. "Bitch! Well-done!"

These two had moved to stay in the gaps between the light beams. They didn't get hurt but they were pale. Apparently, they got hurt severely.

"You and I are the same. If you haven't hastened to attack me, we wouldn't have caused the reunion of the five pieces of the turtle shell. Everything wouldn't have turned this way. I can only say that you deserve it!" Feng Rao beamed a faint smile, not showing that she was weaker.

"Well, if we haven't hindered you, would you have taken all the good things? Wouldn't that be ideal for you, eh? If you were a nice person, why wouldn't you spare some good things for us?" Ganji was outraged. His eyes were cold and sinister as he was angry.

Pang Jia sneered looking at Feng Rao before glaring at Shi Yan.

"Bitch, you're good at calculating. You decided to cooperate with that kid and made him hold back Han Di, which made his God Domain ineffective. You're so cunning and malignant."

"Well, the three of you have soon planned to fake your first fight and wait until I got into your trap. You wanted to kill me, the strongest first. Did you think that I wouldn't know your scheme?" Feng Rao arched her brows and snorted. "You can plan to attack me but I'm not allowed to counterattack?"

Shi Yan was surprised listening to their conversation. He felt grim. None of them were nice. All had bad intentions.

Ganji, Pang Jia, and Han Di all knew that Feng Rao was the toughest to deal with. They had a perfect plan that they would pretend to fight against each other to entice Feng Rao. The three of them would join hands and kill Feng Rao first. Then, they would check out the treasures of this place.

Anyway, Feng Rao had predicted their scheme. She wasn't fooled so she decided to join hands with Shi Yan to hold back Han Di, preventing him from utilizing his energy to the utmost. She was afraid of Han Di's power the most.

Thus, the cunning plan of Ganji, Pang Jia, and Han Di was ineffective. Feng Rao, in an opposite situation, had gained the upper hand and suppressed Ganji and Pang Jia. She almost got the piece of turtle shell first.

Unfortunately, man proposes but God disposes. Even Feng Rao had a wrong calculation. The five pieces had reunited fast, leaving her no time to dodge the danger. Her plan failed.

They're all old cunning foxes, indeed.

Shi Yan became more cautious. While they were talking, he silently swayed between the gaps of the light beams to the position nearest to Han Di's shattered body to absorb his thick Essence Qi. No one noticed this move of his.

Han Di was at the Third Sky of King God Realm. Even though he was dead, the energy he had accumulated for so many years wouldn't vanish so quickly. When Shi Yan came, the unowned Essence Qi beams seemed to find a new host. They discreetly congregated in his body.

The whole life Essence Qi of a King God Realm warrior was massive. Shi Yan hated that Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia couldn't quarrel longer so that he would have time to harvest this marvelous energy.

"The five pieces of turtle shell have united. You know what to do now?" Ganji gritted his teeth, looking at Feng Rao indignantly. "It was a good business but you guys have messed everything up. And now no one will get anything from this."

"You blame me?" Feng Rao made a cold expression. "Why do you blame me? Didn't you want to kill me and steal the treasures? All of you are no good. No one has the right to blame the other!"

After that, Ganji and Pang Jia quieted down.

"I have no idea what to do since the five pieces have united. Alright, if you have any good solutions to get through those fatal beams to be close to the turtle shell, you can try. You can be sure that I won't attack you at this moment." Feng Rao pondered for a while. She was a little bit upset, though. She looked at the turtle shell while she wiped a flock of her long hair.

Shi Yan was standing fifty meters away from Han Di's body, frowning and looking at that area.

The five pieces of turtle shell were adjoined perfectly with each other. Halos supported the shell, lifted it up and spun it. Immense magical energy shot out unceasingly from it. No one wished to come close and touch it.

Ganji and Pang Jia looked at the turtle shell greedily. Their eyes couldn't conceal their dark desire. However, although Feng Rao

had said that, they didn't have any solution besides to stare and think.

Feng Rao didn't answer. She hesitated for a while before moving towards Shi Yan.

Feeling Feng Rao coming close to him, Shi Yan slightly knitted his brows. He accumulated his energy and put up his guard cautiously.

"Give it back to me. Han Di's dead. You don't need it anymore." As she could feel Shi Yan's vigilance, Feng Rao stopped walking, looking at him from a far distance. She beamed a faint smile and extended her jade-like arm. The exquisite azure tattoos seemed to be moving on her arm.

Ganji and Pang Jia suddenly looked at Shi Yan.

Being astounded for a while, Ganji laughed evilly. "Shi Yan, the Thunderbolt Ball is a rank 2 Divine Grade treasure. The lightning and thunder power of this ball is very dense and dangerous. It feels very good to use it and is very effective. You're experienced, I suppose? Do you really want to give it back to her?"

"If I were you when I receive something, I would never return it, honestly." Pang Jia also laughed bizarrely. "It's a rank 2 Divine Grade treasure. Very useful to enhance your power. You have the lowest realm among us. With that treasure, you will have more support. If you give it back to her, will you be any different from a fool? She used you. She should pay you, right?"

Ganji and Pang Jia took turns to give advice to Shi Yan as they wanted to separate him and the woman.

Feng Rao didn't say anything. She just beamed a faint smile and looked at him as if she was waiting for his decision.

Shi Yan also smiled, enjoying the Thunderbolt Ball in his hand. His smile became brighter. He had done something with that Thunderbolt Ball. He looked at Feng Rao and said nothing.

"You like it?" Feng Rao parted her lips and smiled. Her eyebrows like the new moon arched slightly. "If you like it, I can give it to you. However, I need it to do something. After that, I will give it to you. Okay?"

"A gentleman won't take what the other likes. Keep your Thunderbolt Ball." Shi Yan chuckled and flicked his fingers. The Thunderbolt Ball flew out, turning into a blue lightning strike that fell into Feng Rao's hand.

"Fool!"

"Stupid!"

Ganji and Pang Jia snorted, their faces malevolent.

"He's smart," Feng Rao retrieved her Thunderbolt Ball. A bright smile appeared on her face. She glared at Ganji and Pang Jia then said, "You are the stupid ones. You think your plan is good. Look what you've done now."

Ganji and Pang Jia grimaced even more.

Shi Yan looked at Feng Rao seriously. When he saw that the woman didn't check the ball and instead put it into her Fantasy Sky Ring right away, he beamed a sinister smile.

Shi Yan understood well that Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia were the same. She didn't care about him either.

Otherwise, Feng Rao wouldn't have given him the Thunderbolt Ball to aid him in dealing with Han Di. She thought that Shi Yan's real abilities couldn't harm Han Di without the ball.

And it was also the reason why Feng Rao had never thought that he could do something to her Thunderbolt Ball, which made her not check it.

It was an instinctive disdain.

A warrior at the Third Sky of King God Realm would naturally not put a warrior two skies lower than him in his eyes. It wasn't



that they weren't careful; they just didn't know how morbidly formidable Shi Yan was.

The other three considered each other the strongest enemies. And Shi Yan, in their eyes, was just a foolish kid who knew nothing and couldn't influence this battle.

To their disdain, Shi Yan wasn't angry. Quite the contrary, he felt happy. If someone doesn't know your real strength, he will ignore you, which troubles him much later in the battle with you.

Shi Yan accumulated his energy quietly, his visage relaxed. He calmly prepared everything carefully. He wanted to see what these three could do after all.

# Chapter 797: Undying Wood

---

Rainbow light shot out everywhere from the center of the combined five forbidden areas. Gaps between those beams were visible.

Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia stayed hidden in the gaps, looking at the turtle shell with a grim countenance. They started to use their energy to pull it.

However, Feng Rao's sound power and Ganji's Pang Jia's special powers were all useless.

Pang Jia shrank his body ten times. He became just one-tenth of the size of a normal adult. He swayed between the beams to go closer to the shell. Then, he extended his index finger, resizing it to be as small as a needle to inch towards and touch the turtle shell.

Unfortunately, when his needle-like index finger approached the hard shell, a strange energy wave shot out. The ceasing light started to change.

A rainbow light shot out like a ribbon, piercing through his index finger.

Pang Jia retreated rapidly. His body was now even smaller than a dwarf. He couldn't help but shiver. When his index finger resumed its normal size, it was broken and bleeding.

Pang Jia was frightened. He didn't dare try anymore, retreating to a place far away and using medicine to apply to his wound. His eyes had a look of distress.

His power was considered to have many advantages among the three of them. However, no matter how careful he was, he still got injured. This frightened him a lot. He didn't dare act rashly anymore.

Ganji and Feng Rao thought of no solutions. Their eyes glued to that strange shell, unable to conceal the desires in their heart.

Anyway, they had no solution for this headache-given matter.

Shi Yan was still musing. He looked like he wasn't planning to take any action besides simply glaring at that shell.

He didn't know what it was but he knew for sure that the halo twirling around that hard shell could pierce through any kind of matter. Even if he got his God Body at its greatest peak, he didn't dare try.

After a while, they had made no progress. Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia frowned, raked through their Fantasy Sky Rings, and criticizing each other. Their words became more malignant and sinister. They seemed like they would burst out fighting each other any time soon.

The exquisite azure drawings on Feng Rao's smooth, white skin started to move when she was enraged, giving her a bizarre beauty.

Although Shi Yan was busy, he looked nonchalant. He eyed the woman, Ganji, and Pang Jia without haste.

Compared to the other three, he looked more like an onlooker, someone who didn't care about what the results would be.

"I wonder if the jade token works," Feng Rao pondered for a while. She seemed to have something in her mind. She rose her hand then grabbed something.

The cube stone on Han Di's body flew up immediately, falling precisely into her jade palm, combining with the one she had.

Ganji and Pang Jia got it. They frowned and threw her their square stones with a dark face.

Shi Yan watched and found that their four square stones were exactly the same as Jiang Ge's stone. They seemed to make a key. The four stones combined to reveal the shape of a key.

Feng Rao's group had their eyes brighten up as if they had finally found a solution they had never thought possible. They became

excited looking at Shi Yan and shouting in unison. "Where's yours?"

"Argh. . ." Shi Yan couldn't help but beam a forced smile. He shook his head under their intense looks, showed them his hands and shrugged. "I'm sorry. I don't have it."

"Jiang Ge didn't give you the stone?" Feng Rao's beautiful eyes sparkled brutally. She was enraged. She thought that they could solve it finally but now the problem was Shi Yan.

Ganji and Pang Jia darkened their faces. The murderous intent in their eyes was obvious.

Three different auras slithered like invisible toxic snakes surrounding Shi Yan. If he made a wrong move, they would kill him instantly.

Shi Yan was stern inwardly. He couldn't hold his snort. He was staying the furthest from the source of the rainbow light. Shi Yan moved quickly to the gap nearest to him. He gathered his energy to prepare for a battle with the rage of the other three.

Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia had laid all of their hopes on the cube stones. Now they had four stones connected to each other and formed the shape of a key. It just needed one more piece to complete this key, which seemed to be able to open the way to that hard shell.

The only exit was erased by Shi Yan's words. Of course, they were enraged.

Their looks with the brutal intentions as thick as black ink were aimed at Shi Yan coldly.

Shi Yan's God Soul suddenly got extremely agitated. He continually urged space power in his Sea of Consciousness. Flows of Soul Consciousness with space energy twirled around his Sea of Consciousness and covered his soul altar.

The surging agitation gradually vanished. The soul confinement

that the other three planted on his soul was ineffective.

A strange light sparkled in Feng Rao's exquisite and eccentric face. Her eyes blinked as she stooped and sighed. "Not bad. You can dodge our soul confinement. No wonder why you aren't afraid at all. Seems like we've underestimated you."

"I don't have it, really. Even if you kill me, it's no use." Shi Yan smiled miserably. "What about getting out there and bringing Jiang Ge back here?"

"F\*ck it! Do you think we have so much time? Do you think you can get out of the Extreme Purgatory Field that easy?" Pang Jia couldn't help but scold loudly.

"Shi Yan, that is the Undying Wood. It is not the turtle shell like you thought." Shortly, a soul popped up in his Sea of Consciousness. The Vermilion Bird True Flame was talking to him. "I have the Vermilion Bird's knowledge. The Undying Wood's really marvelous. It's the top treasure of the Wood Class in the Five Elements. It's tougher than the toughest metal. There's no sharp weapon that could cut it."

"Undying Wood?" Shi Yan was cautious discreetly. He was moved. "Besides its hardness, what are its other characteristics?"

"Strange treasure Undying Wood of the Wood Class has the magical but natural wooden texture. With this magical texture, the blacksmith with supernatural power could portray the formations according to that wood texture to create the most unimaginable and subtle abilities."

"Can I approach it?"

"Didn't you take in a large amount of Wood Essence Qi in the last barrier you've just broken? Use that Essence Qi to cover your entire body and try," the Vermilion Bird True Flame told him. "My information comes from the Vermilion Bird before he left the Grace Mainland. We don't have deeper knowledge about the

Undying Wood yet so it is not clear enough I heard that the Undying Wood comes from a divine tree after it became rotten. But this piece isn't rotten so it's called Undying Wood. Extremely strange, right?"

The Undying Wood comes from a rotten divine tree. The tree was rotten but its wood wasn't rotten. What kind of logic was that?

Shi Yan was surprised. He listened to the heaven flame attentively. He suddenly had a strange feeling that the creation of the Undying Wood contained some truth of Nature.

"The wood texture barrier you've broken simulates the natural texture of the Undying Wood. Since you've got it magically, can you condense it and use it to cover your body entirely? At least, you can cover one arm of yours to touch it?" continued the Vermilion Bird True Flame.

Shi Yan was astounded for a while. He instinctively tried as he was told. He urged and drew the Wood Essence Qi from his flesh and bone, trying to pour it into one arm.

His arm became brown and gray just like a dried tree trunk. It looked a bit strange to him.

At this moment, the sinister looks of Feng Rao, Pang Jia, and Ganji still gazed at Shi Yan tightly. The murderous intent was so heavy that it could burst in any minute.

"Don't act rashly you guys," Shi Yan suddenly shouted, his face solemn. "Wait a minute and give me time to try. I'm a blacksmith. I have knowledge of formations and barriers. This is why I was able to break the barriers faster than you guys. Yeah, it's the barrier that creates those fatal light beams. Let me try."

Feng Rao's group halted, their faces astounded.

They knew something was happening in that central area so they knew it wasn't the barrier like Shi Yan had said. They doubted his words.

However, they were shaken upon hearing that Shi Yan wanted to try. They thought that in the worst case, Shi Yan would be crushed into pieces in that source of light. In that case, they didn't need to do anything to erase him and they could even have a chance to observe the bursting energy of that fatal source.

The three agreed tacitly. They stopped gathering energy and just gave a snort while watching Shi Yan move.

"Keep your eye on the three for me!" A thought was sent and the heaven flames started to fly around his soul altar. They accumulated energy and waited for a chance.

More Wood Essence Qi was urged out of his body and created a layer covering him entirely. Shortly, he became a shriveled tree log, his entire body brown and gray like a rotten tree.

In this special form, he carefully touched the light beams next to him.

Sizzle Sizzle Sizzle!

Contact between the light and his finger created strange sounds. The sharp light seemed to be softened magically. The tremendous piercing power vanished!

Shi Yan was excited. A bright smile hung on the corner of his mouth.

Ganji, Feng Rao, and Pang Jia noticed his moves. Divine light sparkled gloriously in their eyes as they gawked disbelievingly.

Shi Yan laughed contentedly while shooting like a brown light towards the Undying Wood. He didn't bother with the scorching looks of the other three burning his back.

Beams of light shining on his body were all softened. When the steam arose on all over his body, Shi Yan descended right over the Undying Wood. He didn't say anything but grabbed it fiercely.

Tens of thousands of rainbow beams disappeared into the

Undying Wood at the moment his fingers touched the piece of wood.

The Undying Wood became simple and natural but it was as heavy as a mountain. The subtle, exquisite wood texture of this piece looked like a strange but magical star map.

Pang Jia, Ganji, and Feng Rao's eyes reddened instantly. They didn't say anything but released their God Domains, dashing toward Shi Yan at their max speed.

Three waves of formidable energy swept over like three meteors shooting across the sky with an imposing momentum.

Rumble Rumble Rumble Rumble!

Shattering and collapsing sounds echoed from the five palaces. The Earth cracked. The mountain shook and collapsed.

The barrier covering this area was torn apart. Immense gray mist flooded into the place furiously. The strange magnetic field of the Extreme Purgatory Field vanished into thin air.



# Chapter 798: Star Map

---

The five pieces of Undying Wood had joined and created a strange star map. Shi Yan skimmed through it and found a small dot that looked like the mark of the treasure on a treasure map.

As he had been with Zi Yao for a while in the Glorious Amethyst Star, Shi Yan had a general knowledge of the Raging Flame Star Area's layout.

At first glance, he knew that the marked spot was near the border of the Land of God Punishment and the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce. It was the most magical area of the land where people could hide from the Soul Consciousness searching.

Besides the Lonesome Dead Territory, the Land of God Punishment had some more special areas similar to the Lonesome Dead Territory. The location on the map was such a similar spot. However, he hadn't had enough time to study carefully because Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia stormed towards him, trying to snatch the star map in his hand.

While snorting, Shi Yan immediately put the star map into his Fantasy Sky Ring. Seeing the palace collapsing and the barriers disappearing, he made up his mind quickly to use the Star power. His Soul Consciousness cooperated with space power, urging all of his energy. Just like a flow of shooting light, Shi Yan rocketed into the sky of the Extreme Purgatory Field.

The barrier shattered. All the energy sealing the Extreme Purgatory Field disappeared. There was nothing constraining them now.

A flow of light shot directly up into the sky. Shortly, it disappeared from the gray cloud layer of the Purgatory Star, heading towards the immense star area.

Beneath him were Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia chasing close

after. A flame burned angrily in their eyes. They all escaped the Extreme Purgatory Field entering the dead, quiet outer space.

Those three people had dreamed of the star map for a long time. They had invested a lot of time and effort. At the very last moment, Shi Yan had interfered and taken what should have been theirs. They could hardly accept this.

Although they all had the Third Sky of King God Realm cultivation base, Shi Yan's star power was magical. He was moving forward in the trajectories of the stars, making curve after curve in outer space. At the same time, he urged space energy to cross spaces in a short time. Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia couldn't get to him immediately. They could only stare as his figure disappeared further and further. Rage surged in their hearts.

While the four silhouettes flew away from the Extreme Purgatory Field, the guard of this special prison staying on the other side of the star spotted them and the commotion they were stirring.

Shortly, the Jailor spread his order. War chariots flew out one by one, entering dark outer space.

The Extreme Purgatory Field was a magical area of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation. It was the training place for the new generation of experts. And now it suddenly had a commotion that made the Jailor freak out. He hastened to report Du Tian Le on the event.

The war chariots of the Extreme Purgatory Field turned in the sky before moving into outer space. Experts guarding the planet came to the Extreme Purgatory Field. Seeing the earth shaking and mountain collapsing in that area, their faces darkened. They knew something really troublesome had just happened and it was out of their ability to control it.

When Du Tian Le got the news, he was frightened and indignant at the same time. He came there at his max speed and reported what happened to the owner of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation

– Du Tian Ji.

Unfortunately, Du Tian Ji seemed to seclude and cultivate. Du Tian Le's report sank like a rock into the sea. He received no response. This made Du Tian Le more anxious. He constantly ordered the Jailor to pursue and capture the escapees.

It was very dark and cold in outer space. Shi Yan squinted while his soul altar was spinning, urging the Star power Upanishad and Space power Upanishad to continue its powers at the same time.

Waves of space energy were rippling through his body. They seemed to be the doors that connected space to space shortly. His figure pierced through waves like a meteor. He was moving so fast that Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia could only sense him vaguely. It was going to be very difficult to catch him.

"F\*ck it! We were all wrong! We've been watching that area for a long time and finally, we let that kid take it all!" Ganji cursed, his face dark and grimaced.

"If I catch that brat, I will skin him alive and draw his bones out!" Pang Jia looked ferocious, talking through his gritted teeth.

Feng Rao stayed quiet. She was gloomy as resentment filled her heart. She had thought that she had used Shi Yan well. However, everything went the opposite of what she planned and it was now out of her reach. She couldn't imagine why Shi Yan at his First Sky of King God Realm could escape with such speed in the star sea. He was so fast that they could only keep up in sensing him. They could never come closer.

"He has only the First Sky of King God Realm cultivation base. His energy should be limited. Since he is running madly like that, he will drain his energy fast," Ganji said after contemplating for a while with a malicious look. "Just let him be content flying for a while. I don't think he can drop us in the end. Wait until his energy is drained considerably. Then, we will be able to catch him."

"True. The First Sky of King God Realm has a limited endurance. He can't keep using his energy for a long time," Pang Jia nodded. "As long as we know the direction he is going, I think we can capture him!"

"Be careful. When we flew out of the Purgatory Star, I saw the war chariots flying out. Seems like the Jailor of the Extreme Purgatory Field reported the situation and sent someone up here." Feng Rao wasn't as confident as they were. "Those who belong to the Dark Firmament Divine Nation aren't easy to deal with. We shouldn't let them spot us."

Afterward, Ganji and Pang Jia held solemn faces. They all knew how intimidating the experts of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation were.

The three of them immediately concealed their auras and retrieved part of their living energy fluctuations. They squeezed their jade tokens to stimulate the magical energy in it.

Those jade tokens weren't only effective in the Extreme Purgatory Field. After they left the place, they could still prevent the sensing ability of the warriors. After they had released the energy in their jade tokens, their auras and life energy faded away. They became invisible in the galaxy.

Warriors standing in the Purgatory Star's war chariots couldn't sense anything using their Soul Consciousness.

Begrudgingly, the war chariots scattered and started to search on a larger scale. Thus, their formation was stretched. Although the war chariots used the energy of divine crystals they couldn't be faster than the Third Sky of King God Realm experts when they used the surging energy in their bodies.

Gradually, those war chariots were left far behind Pang Jia, Ganji, and Feng Rao.

Shi Yan, of course, understood that Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia

weren't easy to mess with. He didn't dare pause using the powers of his Star and Space Upanishad created in his soul altar. His flying was now like a light arrow.

As he flew at max speed, he couldn't check his location on the map. He just knew vaguely that he was heading toward the Land of God Punishment and the Nine Star Chamber of Commerce.

This star map should have been created by the former Imperial Master of the Dark Firmament Divine Nation a long time ago. The marked location should contain an earth-shattering secret. Otherwise, Feng Rao's group wouldn't have spent several hundred years hiding just to take this map. They sure wanted to get the secret of this map.

He didn't know what the secret was or its significance, but if this thing had fallen into his hands, he wouldn't hand it out easily.

This was especially true for Ganji, Pang Jia, and Feng Rao. None of them had good intentions towards him. Feng Rao had used him to deal with Han Di so she could have a free hand to grab the star map.

Shi Yan wasn't a nice man. Since he was used and now he knew he had a big secret in that star map. Why would he not take it anyway?

Shi Yan didn't really bother with the dead pursuit by the three experts at the Third Sky of King God Realm. He didn't think that they could take his life easily.

Staying in that forbidden land and breaking layer after layer of barriers, the understanding of natural powers and his powers Upanishad was carved deeper into his mind.

Shi Yan believed that if he was given time to comprehend those principles and had abundant energy, breaking to the new level, the Second Sky of King God Realm, wouldn't be such a tough task.

He had this confidence. He was confident that when he reached

the Second Sky of King God Realm, even if Ganji, Feng Rao, and Pang Jia joined hands to fight him, they wouldn't be able to catch him.

Since he was confident, he wasn't afraid of them anymore. He sneered and accelerated.

The Essence Qi from Han Di's corpse was collected and refined in his acupuncture points. Gradually, energy started to gush out.

Shi Yan cracked a smile, guiding those beams of mysterious energy in his body. He was moving even faster.

If it was in the past, when the mysterious martial spirit was refining the Essence Qi from the dead, Shi Yan couldn't be distracted because he would risk negative feelings backfiring on him.

However, after the period of breaking barriers, his soul became steady. Thus, the negative feelings didn't affect him much. His mind was still calm and sound.

With the supplemental energy, his Essence Qi was refilled the second time. His moving speed wasn't reduced by energy shortage.

Feng Rao, Ganji, and Pang Jia were trying their best to find him in the galaxy. Half a month had passed quietly.

Although they were full of confidence, the three were now exhausted. They thought that since Shi Yan had only the First Sky of King God Realm cultivation base, he would slow down early from loss of endurance.

They were all wrong.

After half a month, they had consumed half of their energy. They had to slow down.

Shi Yan's speed didn't change. It actually increased significantly. The other three were exhausted. Their face grimaced even more.

"Does that motherf\*cker have only the First Sky of King God

Realm cultivation base? Were we all wrong?" Ganji panted, talking foul-mouthed. This was the sign that they used energy excessively.

Pang Jia gritted his teeth, his eyes like that of an angry ghost. He breathed heavily. "If I can catch him, I will torture him to death! This brat is tough enough!"

"Seems we got tricked. We thought he couldn't be a threat and turns out he the one who got it all." Feng Rao regretted it too much she wanted to kill herself.

At this moment, the three of them didn't dare to look down on Shi Yan anymore. Being able to move in outer space fifteen days continually at fast speed and his energy wasn't running out yet, who has ever met such a First Sky of King God Realm warrior?

They cursed as their hearts sank. They now didn't consider Shi Yan a small character anymore. They were vigilant discreetly. They thought that when they saw Shi Yan, they had to pull themselves altogether, and they shouldn't be careless leading to capsize their boats.

"Ah!" Feng Rao suddenly shouted in awe. "That brat isn't good now. His speed has slowed down two times. Fast! Faster! We must get him!"

Ganji and Pang Jia put on the excited visage.

# Chapter 799: Bare The Fangs

---

On a massive floating meteorite, gray-brown clusters of rock scattered. This place was bleak, lonesome, and cold. No living energy fluctuation could be found.

Shi Yan paled, revealing that he was exhausted as he consumed too much energy. A gleam of insignificant desperation crossed his eyes.

Ganji and Pang Jia had their faces brightened up. They couldn't hold in their sinister laughter while walking towards Shi Yan.

Feng Rao was careful. First, she frowned and surveyed the surroundings. Seeing no barrier or formation, she exhaled in relief but still put up guard. She sneered, "So, no more running?"

Shi Yan forced a smile. "Can't run any longer."

"Kid, you do have guts. You dare pluck out the tiger's tooth. You dare be greedy and steal what is ours. You don't even know how to treasure your life." Pang Jia grinned fiendishly, taking action first.

Ganji slowly approached, launching his God Domain. As soon as the hundred-time Gravitational Field appeared, it pressed the rocks which cracked and exploded.

"This is for you." Shi Yan acted as if he was really frightened and that he couldn't dodge his fate. He threw the star map made of the Undying Wood without any hesitation. The thing shot across the area, flying toward the middle area between the other three.

Ganji, Pang Jia, and Feng Rao showed their greed. They jolted immediately to grab the thing.

Feng Rao was still vigilant. Her plump lips curled a cold curve as she threw the Thunderbolt Ball out.

Immediately, several thousand azure lightning strikes slithered towards Shi Yan like a pit of snakes.



Shi Yan seemed to know the power of the Thunderbolt Ball. He paled and retreated.

However, since those several thousand beams of lighting were connected directly to Feng Rao and her pure energy in her body, it was hard to dodge them all.

Although Shi Yan was fast, he still received ten or more strikes. He screamed painfully. His God Body was charred with thick burns. It seemed his God Body had been exhausted and now it received even more wounds. Shi Yan was put to the point where he couldn't hold it anymore. The lightning struck him out of the place into the cold, starry space.

As Ganji and Pang Jia saw Feng Rao attacking Shi Yan and how he got hurt by the lightning and fell off the meteorite, they didn't focus on killing him. They hurled themselves towards the star map.

Before they had come here, they had a plan. Right when they saw Shi Yan, they would kill him first. However, when they saw Shi Yan throwing the star map out, they forgot their initial plan. Greed had dominated their minds. They wanted to take the star map at any cost.

Uncontrollably, Ganji and Pang Jia immediately attacked each other without showing mercy or politeness.

When Feng Rao saw Shi Yan get hit by the Thunderbolt Ball, she didn't dare waste time. She understood that Shi Yan could dodge his death for now but it didn't mean that he could avoid their ears and eyes everywhere. Thus, she decided to join the battle to compete for the star map.

As they were all at the Third Sky of King God Realm, when any of them grabbed the star map, he or she just needed to flee away at their max speed, and the others couldn't catch up with him or her.

Thus, whoever touched the star map first would gain a

significant advantage.

At this moment, the three brutal villains at the Third Sky of King God Realm burst out the deadly battle for a star map that hid a tremendous secret. They attacked each other furiously and mercilessly. Their powers were urged to the acme as they hated the fact that they couldn't kill whoever went at the fastest speed to grab the star map first.

Staying on another meteorite in the dark sky, Shi Yan's eyes were cold and sinister. His stiff mouth showed his cold and harsh intentions. He gritted his teeth and brushed off the azure lightning strikes on his body.

Each of these azure lightning strikes was sharp and powerful. They cut his body fiercely and left fine cuts on his skin.

Since Feng Rao had the Third Sky of King God Realm and her Thunderbolt Ball was a Divine Grade treasure, Shi Yan hardly bore its attacks.

Fortunately, his power was refined and his God Body had been quenched many times. Now it had the toughness that normal people couldn't even imagine. Shi Yan didn't get hurt badly. He just needed to urge his Dead power Upanishad to brush them off.

Shortly after, he destroyed all the lightning strikes that had managed to get in his body.

He had spent ten drops of Immortal Demon Blood to heal his bleeding cuts. His wounds healed quickly.

Rumble Rumble Rumble!

Furious energy waves swarmed over from the massive meteorite in front of him. Shi Yan understood that the three experts were trying to kill each other. For that star map, they demonstrated their mightiest powers.

The vicious intent in his eyes became darker. He stooped and sneered, but didn't hasten to show himself yet.

The three of them were the experts with a greater realm than his. Also, their powers were strange and supernatural. If he decided to be stubborn and played with them one-on-three, he would die a pathetic death.

After half a month of running madly, the other three had consumed a lot of their energy. As they were attacking each other crazily, no matter what the result was, their powers would be weakened badly. When their battle ended, Shi Yan could save a lot of efforts.

Thus, he had to bear Feng Rao's attack to erase the others' doubts. He had given them the thought that he was hurt badly and that he wouldn't be able to create any trouble later.

Indeed, as soon as Feng Rao saw him get hit by the lightning strikes bloodily, her tense nerves had been relaxed. When she saw Ganji and Pang Jia fighting with each other, she didn't bother eradicating him. Instead, she joined the battle immediately.

If Feng Rao had been more careful, she would have flown out there to check Shi Yan's real condition. She wouldn't have been so incautious.

Too bad she got another wrong guess of Shi Yan's abilities.

Shi Yan swallowed the broad bean-like pellets and medicines. Shi Yan hid quietly by the meteorite, trying his best to recover quickly.

Ear-splitting explosions reverberated. Energy pressed the rock which exploded, shooting out of the massive meteorite near him. Seeing such scenes, Shi Yan felt excited. He laughed continually as he waited for a chance to take action.

The medicinal efficacy melted in his body, turning into the immense vitality that nurtured his internal organs. Half a month of running crazily couldn't really wear him out. With the Essence Qi from Han Di's dead body, his condition was much better than what the other three saw.

Pretending to be weak to lure the enemies and giving them chances to hurt him were all part of his plans.

Everything was playing according to his script. Shi Yan waited patiently and just sneered while waiting for the battle on the meteorite to end. He would wait until the sounds of the fierce battle stopped.

Those explosions were terrible. They had shattered the entire meteorite. From his location, he could see massive holes there. The meteorite near him crumpled. Rocks shot out everywhere. The battle taking place over there must have been formidable.

Shi Yan urged his energy to cover his entire body, hiding and moving toward the battle area.

Crack Crack Crack!

Giant rocks under Ganji's manipulation were bombarding aimlessly. Each of those rocks was around a mu of land. When they curved in the air, the energy they contained was so intimidating.

Pang Jia shrank his body to one-tenth of an adult size. He seemed to be cooperating with Ganji to fight Feng Rao.

The star map lay still where Shi Yan had thrown it. It seemed like no one had touched it yet.

"AHHHHHHH!"

Feng Rao cried, the entire power of her body fusing with her sound, turning into an invisible spear that smashed Ganji's rocks into crumbles.

The three of them were entangling each other and draining their energy rapidly. After spending half a month running like crazy without a short break to recover, 70%-80% of their power had been consumed. At this moment, their God Domains weren't as strong as they used to be. Their fighting competencies had been decreased one level.

From what Shi Yan could see, Feng Rao was closest to him. He could see that her exquisite face was pale, which was the sign of consuming a lot of energy.

Ganji and Pang Jia were also worn out. However, they all clenched their jaws and resisted as they thought that if they could kill the others, they would be the ultimate winner.

"Gravity Lock!

Ganji suddenly shouted. The Gravitational Field covering his body shrank before bursting out much stronger.

Feng Rao's body floating in the air sank down as if she got a whole mountain put on her shoulders. She felt helter-skelter.

Pang Jia shrank his body, ambushing an area. His arms were exposed like two slithering, boneless snakes. A flow of cold and malicious energy immediately attacked Feng Rao's tender body. Feng Rao shuddered, her figure became more unstable.

Several hundred rocks, each of them as big as a mu of land, fell directly on Feng Rao and buried her.

Ganji and Pang Jia cheered. They didn't care if Feng Rao was still alive or not and hurriedly flew to that star map. A minute ago, they had joined hands to deal with the woman, and now they started to attack each other. Different energies impacted in the void. Light shot out dazzlingly above the star map.

Pang Jia was weaker. He spat out a mouthful of blood. His shrunk God Body shattered under the impact. His eyes became empty.

Ganji laughed crazily. "You're still an amateur compared to me!"

While talking, he extended his hand to grab the star map. He was so contented thinking that his two-hundred-year of effort had been rewarded marvelously.

However, the buzzing hissing echoed right at this moment.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The three blinding lights flashed then disappeared. They then stabbed Ganji's hand, piercing through and pinned it on a rock next to the star map.

At the same moment, an imposing punch created by starlight descended grumblingly like a mallet of the Archangel, covering Pang Jia's flying body.

Crack! Crack!

Sounds of breaking bones echoed from Pang Jia's body. His God Body exploded. His bones jutted out from the mess of his bloody flesh while his face was covered in blood. He was dying under this stealthy attack.

The massive starlight punch was condensed by countless star dots. After it finished its stealthy attack, it didn't stop but continued to pound on Feng Rao, who was still buried under so many rocks.

Crack Crack Crack!

Massive rocks burst off in the furious screams of Feng Rao. The starlight punch had made a formidable hole on this meteorolite.

Feng Rao's beautiful body was exposed in the middle of the deep pit. She was wounded. Blood and the delicate tattoos on her body created a red, eccentric and inspiring drawing.

Shi Yan's cold and harsh body appeared like a ghost next to Pang Jia. He didn't hesitate at all as he gathered space power covering Pang Jia who didn't have a bit of energy to move a finger now. He then cut Pang Jia's limbs cut and his soul altar exploded shortly after.

As Pang Jia had just died, Shi Yan dashed through the place, approaching Ganji. He laughed fiendishly, baring his bloodthirsty fangs.

# Chapter 800: Cut Dead

---

Shi Yan's ambush on Pang Jia and Feng Rao were deadly, particularly to Feng Rao who was pressed deeper into her pit so that she wouldn't be able to wiggle out of there. These serial actions actually happened faster than a slow talk.

Ganji was pinned in the hard rock by the three Bone Thorns that pierced through his hand. Seeing Shi Yan gliding through the air to approach him, Ganji felt an extreme rage and pain. At the same time, he wanted to vomit blood.

No matter how hard he had imagined, he couldn't predict Shi Yan's dark and vicious mind. Shi Yan had condensed a chain from starlight to bind him tightly. Ganji discolored.

Crack Crack! He tried to urge his energy without caring about his bleeding hand. The Gravitational Field was rising one more time.

Two hundred times heavier gravity!

Shi Yan sank under the Gravitational Field effects while dashing forward. He fell toward Ganji.

"Kid, you court death!"

Ganji roared indignantly. A massive rock under his feet flew out instantly like a cannonball, shelling Shi Yan grumblingly.

Boom Boom Boom!

The starlight chains thrust through that massive rock. Chipped rocks shot out massively.

Shi Yan stood like a mighty storm inside the shower of rock, his face cold and grating. His God Domain changed all of a sudden.

Space Confinement!

The rocks that curved and exploded in the air were suddenly suspended in the air. They stayed still strangely in the void.

Even Ganji with his Third Sky of King God Realm cultivation base and his magical power was affected. He could only stare at Shi Yan who came closer as the energy in his body stopped circulating.

"Break!"

Ganji faced the sky and screamed. His face reddened as he furiously urged his power to break the Space Confinement. Ganji's Essence Qi condensed into the light blades that shot up into the sky from his body, aimed at Shi Yan. Shi Yan's face remained unchanged. While he was hovering in the sky, his powers Upanishad changed again. A slit was torn near the horizon, engulfing countless light blades that shot out from Ganji's body. With an imposing momentum, Shi Yan changed his God Domain a second time.

Shining massive hand seals as big as the doors pressed down, bombarding Ganji.

Boom Boom Boom!

The Dead Seals pounding on Ganji's body were like giant hammers. His God Body had many concave spots. He became extremely exhausted.

As the hand seals contained the mysteries of Death, as soon as they hit Ganji's God Body, they immediately started wreaking havoc on his bodily functions, preventing him from gathering his Essence Qi. The old man could only attempt to dodge with futile attempts.

Ganji, Pang Jia, and Feng Rao spent half a month strenuously chasing after him without any pause to refill their energy. Right when they arrived at this meteorite, the three had engaged in a battle, which was also the second time they had to use massive amounts of energy.

After being ambushed, one of Ganji's hands was useless now. Shi Yan's Dead Seals had shelled him badly. Eventually, Ganji was hurt



severely.

The vitality in his body was running out under the Dead energy invasion. Ganji's face and God Body paled like a paper sheet. Blood trickled from the corners of his mouth. He was distressed.

Shi Yan hadn't shown even a hint of his mercy. His thought flickered and the wheezing sound of the three Bone Thorns arose again.

Shi Yan was gathering and condensing the Dead energy unceasingly together with the negative energy. Massive Dead Seals appeared in the air one more time. They looked more like the evil eyes gazing at Ganji. They pressed down with a loud crash.

Swoosh Swoosh Swoosh!

The whistle of the three Bone Thorns was so ear-piercingly loud that it felt like it could even stir up people's souls. It made Ganji's heart crack.

Crack Crack Crack! As the Dead Seals were pressing down, the area where Ganji was lying looked like a block of tofu under a harsh impact. Chipped rocks became powder, scattering with the wind. The light cage Ganji was trying to maintain remained deformed, revealing his pale God Body.

The Bone Thorns thrust into Ganji's chest, smashing his internal organs. His broken bones and pieces of intestines splashed out from his body. Ganji was completely damaged under this strike. His God Domain disappeared, and the hundred times heavier gravity Gravitational Field vanished.

"We can talk!" Ganji screamed. He finally expressed true fear. He faced the sky and cried. "Give me time to talk. We can negotiate!"

Boom!

The massive starlight mallet pounded from the sky like a meteor falling into the Earth. It hit Ganji right at his chest. Right when he finished, his God Body couldn't hold it anymore. It exploded

shortly. Cut limbs shot out as his body fell.

"I'm sorry. You have the Third Sky of King God Realm cultivation base. I can't afford to be reckless." Shi Yan finally said something as he landed by Ganji. The three Bone Thorns spun around him like three lightning strikes.

Although Ganji's God Body was destroyed, his soul altar wasn't shattered. In this given circumstance, he knew that he couldn't resist Shi Yan anymore. Ganji didn't hesitate, making his soul altar fly out in an attempt to escape into outer space to preserve his God Soul.

As long as his Soul Seal hadn't been damaged, when his God Body was destroyed, he had two options, of which he could choose to find a host and cultivate to restore, or he could use a pregnant woman's baby to resurrect.

As long as his God Soul wasn't eradicated, he still had hope. With the right period of time, it wasn't impossible to regain his current realm.

The soul altar was a magical thing that nothing could compare to. Secret treasures that could break the soul altar were really rare in this world. Ganji's three-tiered soul altar floated like a ghost. He threw a glare at Shi Yan with resentment before running away.

"Get out!"

Shi Yan's face was icy cold. He touched his glabella and his soul altar flew out. The dark section of the second tier in his soul altar instantly released an eccentric and evil suction force.

Ganji's three-tiered soul altar struggled. His God Soul felt the deepest fear ever. However, no matter how hard he had shaken, the soul altar couldn't escape Shi Yan's black hole-like soul altar. Ganji's soul altar disappeared little by little. Shi Yan's eccentric power Upanishad had swallowed the three-tiered soul altar, leaving nothing.

Crack!

At this moment, a strange sound arose. The echoing and energy condensed, shooting towards Shi Yan's chest. As his soul altar had flown out of his body, his God Body became weaker. After the impact of that energy, blood in the shape of a flower bloomed on his chest. A hole was broken open right there.

Crack Crack Crack!

Feng Rao, who used to have no bit of energy remaining, floated up from her pit, wiping away the blood trickles from her mouth and her body. She was stunned, looking at the soul altar floating outside Shi Yan's body.

Feng Rao had never heard or seen any supernatural powers Upanishad that could engulf the soul altar. This bizarre and malignant power had never appeared in the Raging Flame Star Area before. None of the people there had ever heard about it. Such evil existence made Feng Rao shiver in fright.

"Kid, what kind of evil powers Upanishad are you cultivating?" Feng Rao paled, holding the Thunderbolt Ball. She looked quite unnatural. While she was talking, each of her words was fused with her power Upanishad. For the time being, the extremely loud sound reverberated creating a tremendous sound wave swarming toward Shi Yan.

Feng Rao had startled Shi Yan. He didn't think much, immediately calling his soul altar back to his God Body. Shi Yan didn't bother with the hole in his chest, using the space power as the foundation to create the God Domain.

Space Blockade!

Each syllable falling in his God Domain was frozen for a while. Shi Yan didn't reply to her. Starlight shot out from his ten fingers, breaking her words with a cold face. Shi Yan conveniently grabbed the star map and put it away. He turned and gazed at Feng Rao, his

visage somber. "It seems that it is not only me who calculates a lot."

Feng Rao's conditions were much better than what Shi Yan had thought. Ganji and Pang Jia had joined hands to attack her, putting her under the mass of rocks; Shi Yan had pounded her using the massive starlight punch.

Although Feng Rao had been hurt continually, at this moment, she looked robust. The energy was circulating vigorously in her body which proved that her Essence Qi was still abundant. This woman's competence was beyond Shi Yan's imagination and it was indeed intimidating.

"I've still calculated wrong," Feng Rao's face was dark and cold. "I've calculated that Ganji and Pang Jia would use tens of thousands of rock to attack me. I would wait under the pile of rocks they had put on me until they finished their battle. Then, I planned on coming out and cleaning it up. I didn't calculate that you could interfere and hurt me the second time."

She looked at Shi Yan angrily. "The cunning one should be you. Ganji, Pang Jia, and I had underestimated you. And today, they are dead from your hands, the hands of the one that no one thought was strong enough. You've gained the upper hand. I think Ganji and Pang Jia couldn't close their eyes even after their death now."

Shi Yan shook his head mockingly. "I have the lowest realm here. If I haven't used tricks, I would have been killed quickly."

He didn't hasten to take action. The bleeding hole in his chest had several broken vessels. Once he was engaged in a battle, they would affect his energy circulating. While he was talking, the Immortal Demon Blood was urged to heal the wounds.

It seemed that Feng Rao was also thinking the same thing. She understood that Shi Yan was tough. At the same time, Feng Rao was also wounded. Before she talked to him, she had swallowed pellets and medicines. She was recovering her energy quietly.

She had the Third Sky of King God Realm cultivation base and the pellets she used were all Divine Grade ones. She believed her recovery speed was faster than Shi Yan's. Ganji and Pang Jia were all dead. This area was bleak and isolated. No one would pass by. In other words, she had only one enemy, which was Shi Yan, of course. As long as she could kill Shi Yan, she could finally achieve her goal.

"I have never heard about any wicked powers Upanishad that can swallow the soul altar. I'm curious. Who are you after all?" Feng Rao still maintained a distance from Shi Yan as she was afraid that he would take action when she wasn't vigilant. She was talking while also staying on guard.

"I'm also curious about what's hidden in that star map. Why is it worth several hundred years of your time and even your life?" Shi Yan smiled. The star map emerged on his palm. He cocked his head to look at it before looking back at Feng Rao. "Will you explain it to me?"

"If you tell me the method and the power that you used to swallow the soul altar, I will tell you what the star map hides. How does that sound?" Feng Rao gently wiped the blood on her body.

Her clothes were short, not enough to conceal the marvelous features of her body. Today, they were even more ragged, exposing her mesmerizing glamour. While she moved her jade-like hand, blue tattoo glistened strangely and beautifully, which were able to sway people's souls.

"Come, come forward. We should talk." Feng Rao walked forward honestly. While her long legs were moving, her beauty flashed from time to time. Dreamy words came out from her mouth that made people drunk and listen to it.

Shi Yan's soul trembled. He couldn't help but think that she was starting to look hotter. The lustful flame of desire was ignited in the deep place of his heart. He started to gasp. He understood that

this woman was attacking him. This was a seducing sound!

# Table of Contents

## [God Of Slaughter](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 701: Heaven flames' fierce battle](#)

[Chapter 702: God Body?](#)

[Chapter 703: Devouring Original Essence](#)

[Chapter 704: The road of the vanguard](#)

[Chapter 705: Mining area in the foreign land](#)

[Chapter 706: Forced to exploit the ores](#)

[Chapter 707: The three major God Realms](#)

[Chapter 708: Separate](#)

[Chapter 709: The Sixth Herbal Star](#)

[Chapter 710: Human body medicinal cauldron](#)

[Chapter 711: Quenching the body to the acme](#)

[Chapter 712: Miss Bi Rou](#)

[Chapter 713: Shake and roam](#)

[Chapter 714: Breaking through in adversity!](#)

[Chapter 715: Raging Flame Star Area](#)

[Chapter 716: Big business deal](#)

[Chapter 717: The God Domain](#)

[Chapter 718: Princess Zi Yao](#)

[Chapter 719: Break the chest!](#)

[Chapter 720: The value of Shi Yan](#)

[Chapter 721: The Moving Temporary Imperial Abode](#)

[Chapter 722: A battle appointment](#)

[Chapter 723: Feudal Vassal of a region](#)

[Chapter 724: A quota](#)

[Chapter 725: Exposed!](#)

[Chapter 726: Upanishad advancement](#)

[Chapter 727: Soul Burial Ground Deadly Upanishad!](#)

[Chapter 728: The feudal vassal admits his defeat](#)

[Chapter 729: Fabricate a new identity](#)

[Chapter 730: The Solar Star Exploding Fragment Field](#)

[Chapter 731: Space Pirates](#)

[Chapter 732: Zi Yao's Promise](#)

[Chapter 733: Share the hardship](#)

[Chapter 734: Bloody Slaughterer Ka Tuo](#)

[Chapter 735: Lost](#)

[Chapter 736: Do you have... mental problems?](#)

[Chapter 737: Outer Space God Light](#)

[Chapter 738: Sun Brilliance!](#)

[Chapter 739: Volcano crystal nucleus](#)

[Chapter 740: Can't choose the right way because of the flurry](#)

[Chapter 741: New comprehension!](#)

[Chapter 742: Compensate](#)

[Chapter 743: Vermilion Bird - the Sacred Beast](#)

[Chapter 744: Original Magnetic Field](#)

[Chapter 745: Sun Original Essence!](#)

[Chapter 746: Power Upanishad Sublimated!](#)

[Chapter 747: The Third Sky of True God Realm](#)

[Chapter 748: Soul Nirvana](#)

[Chapter 749: Chaos Upanishad](#)

[Chapter 750: Call me senior!](#)

[Chapter 751: Repel the enemy!](#)

[Chapter 752: Dirck](#)

[Chapter 753: Resolutely reject](#)

[Chapter 754: Glorious Amethyst Star](#)

[Chapter 755: Source of Upanishad inheritance](#)

[Chapter 756: The best quality bone material](#)

[Chapter 757: Refine divine weapon!](#)

[Chapter 758: Heaven flame's ascension](#)

[Chapter 759: The Purgatory Token](#)

[Chapter 760: Convergence of the Moon's brilliance!](#)

[Chapter 761: Dark Magnetic Deadly Explosion](#)

[Chapter 762: Scarlet Mark!](#)

[Chapter 763: Demon Blood molds the body!](#)

[Chapter 764: The dawn of blood changing](#)

[Chapter 765: Purgatory Star](#)

[Chapter 766: Undercurrent](#)

[Chapter 767: Kill a chicken with a butcher's knife](#)

[Chapter 768: Hiding weaknesses by keeping quiet](#)

[Chapter 769: Mutually losing face](#)

[Chapter 770: Within one hundred years, I will take the head on your neck!](#)

[Chapter 771: Leaving alone](#)

[Chapter 772: Seek battle!](#)



[Chapter 773: A much valuable battle](#)  
[Chapter 774: Rip the sky!](#)  
[Chapter 775: Dead Sky!](#)  
[Chapter 776: Pick the Tough Target to Start!](#)  
[Chapter 777: Getting Stronger!](#)  
[Chapter 778: True Colors](#)  
[Chapter 779: A Frightening Change](#)  
[Chapter 780: The King's Heart](#)  
[Chapter 781: Create a Miracle!](#)  
[Chapter 782: King God Realm!](#)  
[Chapter 783: Wear The Domains!](#)  
[Chapter 784: The Cunning Old Fellow](#)  
[Chapter 785: Thousand Fantasy Fields Domain](#)  
[Chapter 786: Break The Illusions!](#)  
[Chapter 787: Counter-attack](#)  
[Chapter 788: Break Into The Prohibited Area](#)  
[Chapter 789: Deterrent Force!](#)  
[Chapter 790: Forbidden Area's Wonder](#)  
[Chapter 791: Disappear Quietly](#)  
[Chapter 792: Calm Down And Break The Barriers](#)  
[Chapter 793: Meet Up In Precincts](#)  
[Chapter 794: A Dark Enchainment](#)  
[Chapter 795: Small Character, Big Effect!](#)  
[Chapter 796: Hiding Incompetence By Keeping Quiet](#)  
[Chapter 797: Undying Wood](#)  
[Chapter 798: Star Map](#)  
[Chapter 799: Bare The Fangs](#)  
[Chapter 800: Cut Dead](#)